



Gc  
973.74  
N81c  
v.3,pt.1  
1769909

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 00824 2213



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center

494

# HISTORIES

OF THE

## SEVERAL REGIMENTS AND BATTALIONS

FROM

### NORTH CAROLINA

IN THE

GREAT WAR 1861-'65

WRITTEN BY MEMBERS OF THE RESPECTIVE COMMANDS

EDITED BY

WALTER CLARK,

(LIEUT.-COLONEL SEVENTIETH REGIMENT N. C. T.)

Vol. 3 pt. 1

VOL. III.

PUBLISHED BY THE STATE

NASH BROTHERS,  
BOOK AND JOB PRINTERS,  
GOLDSBORO, N. C  
1901

494  
=



1769909



ZEBULON B. VANCE, GOVERNOR, 1862-1865.

coocavé

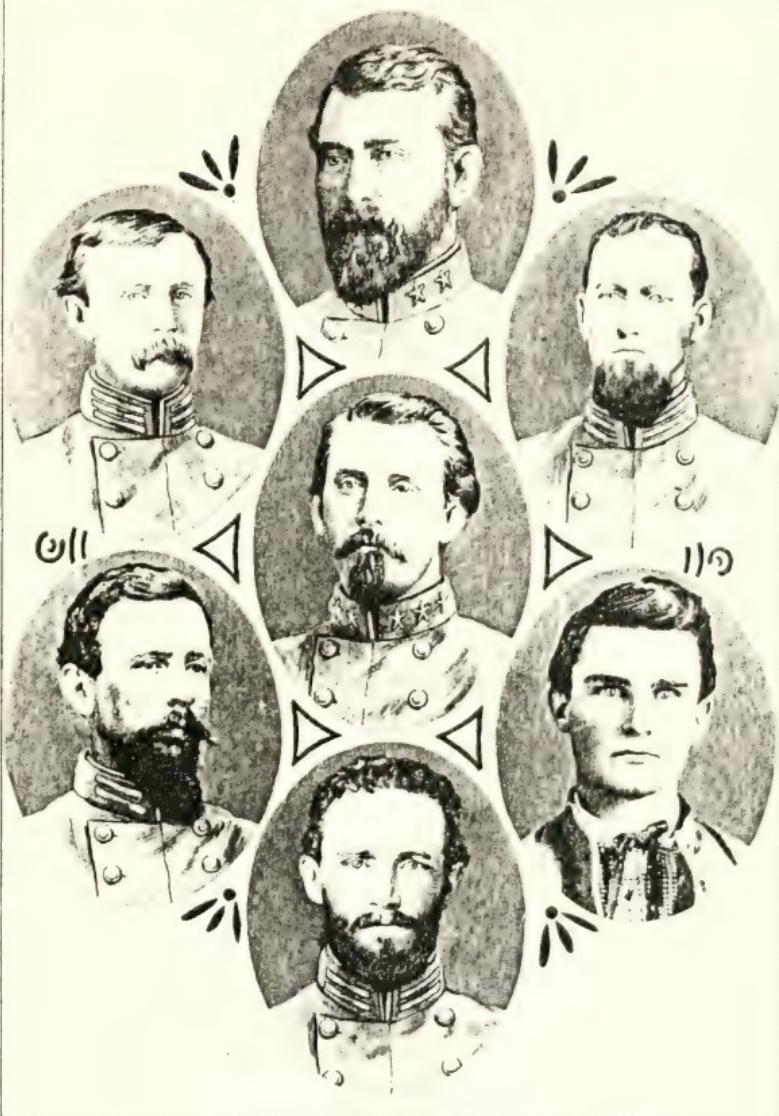


coocavé, a traditional mayan garment, made from dried palm leaves.

## CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT, by Colonel Thomas S. Kenan,.....	1
FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (COMPANY A.) by Colonel Thomas S. Kenan	19
FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, by Major Charles M. Stedman.....	21
FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT, by Sergeant Cyrus B. Watson . .....	35
FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant J. M. Waddill . . . .	63
FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, by Captain John H. Thorp.....	83
FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant J. Rowan Rogers . . .	103
FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, by Captain W. H. H. Lawhon.....	113
FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant Thomas R. Roulhac.....	125
FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT, by Captain B. F. Dixon.....	151
FIFTIETH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant J. C. Ellington .....	161
FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT, by Lieutenant A. A. McKethan .. . .	205
FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT, by Adjutant John H. Robinson.....	223
FIFTY THIRD REGIMENT, by Colonel James T. Morehead.....	255
FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant J. Marshall Williams.....	267
FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT, by Adjutant Charles M. Cooke.....	287
FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, by Captain Robert D. Graham . . . .	313
FIFTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, by Colonel Hamilton C. Jones.....	405
FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, by Major G. W. F. Harper. .... .	431
FIFTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, by Captain Isaac H. Bailey.....	447
FIFTY-NINTH REGIMENT, (FOURTH CAV.,) by Lieutenant W. P. Shaw..	455
SIXTIETH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant-Colonel James M. Ray.....	473
SIXTIETH REGIMENT, by Captain Thomas W. Patton.. . . . .	499
SIXTY FIRST REGIMENT, by Captain N. A. Ramsey. . . . .	503
SIXTY SECOND REGIMENT, by Lieutenant-Colonel B. G. McDowell ..	515
SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (FIFTH CAV.), by Major John M. Galloway..	529
SIXTY-THIRD REGIMENT, (FIFTH CAV.), by Private Paul B. Means....	545
SIXTY-FOURTH REGIMENT, by Captain B. T. Morris .. . . .	659
SIXTY-FIFTH REGIMENT, (SIXTH CAV.), by Captain M. V. Moore...	673
SIXTY-SIXTH REGIMENT, by Adjutant George M. Rose .. . .	685
SIXTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant-Colonel Rufus W. Wharton	703
SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, by Corporal J. W. Evans .. . . .	713
SIXTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT, by Sergeant W. T. Cahoon .. . . .	725
SIXTY-NINTH REGIMENT, by Lieutenant-Colonel W. W. Stringfield.....	729





#### FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. Thos. S. Kenan, Colonel.
2. W. Gaston Lewis, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. James G. Kenan, Captain, Co. A.
4. Ruffin Barnes, Captain, Co. C.
5. Drury Laey, Adjutant.
6. Wm. R. Kenan, 2d Lieut. and Adjutant.
7. R. H. Battle, 1st Lieut., Co. I.



# FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

BY COLONEL THOMAS S. KENAN.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, about three miles west of Raleigh, in March, 1862, by electing Junius Daniel, Colonel; Thomas S. Kenan (Captain Company A, formerly Captain Company C, Second North Carolina Volunteers), Lieutenant-Colonel; and Walter J. Boggan (Captain Company II), Major, commissions bearing date 25 March, 1862. Daniel was at the time Colonel of the Fourteenth Regiment, and soon thereafter was also chosen Colonel of the Forty-fifth, and accepted. Upon his reporting for duty he was placed in command of a brigade, of which the Forty-third afterwards formed a part. Daniel was subsequently promoted to Brigadier General. About 20 April, Kenan was notified that he had been chosen Colonel of the Thirty-eighth upon its reorganization at Goldsboro, the information being officially conveyed by the hands of Lieutenant D. M. Pearsall, of the Thirty-eighth; but he remained with the Forty-third and was elected its Colonel a few days thereafter, and William Gaston Lewis (Major of the Thirty-third) was elected Lieutenant-Colonel, commissions bearing date 24 April, 1862.

The staff and company officers, and their successors by promotion from time to time in the order named, as appears from the "Roster of North Carolina Troops," pp. 196-225, and gathered from memoranda of participants in the operations of the regiment, were:

ADJUTANTS—Drury Lacy, W. R. Kenan.

SURGEONS—Bedford Brown, Jr., William T. Brewer, Joel B. Lewis.

QUARTERMASTERS—John W. Hinson, Joseph B. Stafford.

COMMISSARY—W. B. Williams.

CHAPLAINS—Joseph W. Murphy, Eugene W. Thompson.



SERGEANT-MAJORS—W. T. Smith, Hezekiah Brown, Thos. H. Williams, Robert T. Burwell, W. R. Kenan.

CAPTAINS.

COMPANY A—*From Duplin*—James G. Kenan (succeeded T. S. Kenan); number of enlisted men, 117. The company entered the service in April, 1861, and was Company C, Second North Carolina Volunteers (Colonel Sol. Williams), stationed near Norfolk. Upon the expiration of its six-months term of service it was reorganized and assigned to the Forty-third. Captain Kenan, of this company, was wounded and captured at Gettysburg, and was a prisoner when the war ended, and many of the officers, hereinafter named, met a similar fate, or were killed or disabled there or in subsequent engagements, but a correct list of casualties cannot now be had—and they were so numerous that during the latter part of the war the regiment was commanded by Captains, and companies by Lieutenants, Sergeants and Corporals.

COMPANY B—*From Mecklenburg*—Robert P. Waring, William E. Stitt. Enlisted men, 73.

COMPANY C—*From Wilson*—James S. Woodard, Ruffin Barnes. Enlisted men, 102.

COMPANY D—*From Halifax*—Cary Whitaker. Enlisted men, 93.

COMPANY E—*From Edgecombe*—John A. Vines, Jas. R. Thigpen, Wiley J. Cobb. Enlisted men, 96.

COMPANY F—*From Halifax*—William R. Williams, Wm. C. Ousby, Henry A. Macon. Enlisted men, 101.

COMPANY G—*From Warren*—Wm. A. Dowtin, Levi P. Coleman, Alfred W. Bridgers. Enlisted men, 110.

COMPANY H—*From Anson*—John H. Coppedge (succeeded W. J. Boggan), Hampton Beverly. Enlisted men, 112.

COMPANY I—*From Anson*—Robert T. Hall, John Ballard. Enlisted men, 139.

COMPANY K—*From Anson*—James Boggan, Caswell H. Sturdivant. Enlisted men, 120.



## FIRST LIEUTENANTS.

- COMPANY A, James G. Kenan, Robert B. Carr.  
COMPANY B, Henry Ringstaff, William E. Stitt.  
COMPANY C, Henry King, Ruffin Barnes, L. D. Killett.  
COMPANY D, Thomas W. Baker, John S. Whitaker.  
COMPANY E, James R. Thigpen, Wiley J. Cobb, Charles Vines.  
COMPANY F, William C. Ousby, Henry A. Macon, J. H. Morris.  
COMPANY G, Levi P. Coleman, Alfred W. Bridgers.  
COMPANY H, John H. Coppedge, Hampton Beverly, Benjamin F. Moore.  
COMPANY I, Richard H. Battle, Jr., John H. Threadgill.  
COMPANY K, Caswell H. Sturdivant, Henry E. Shepherd.

## SECOND LIEUTENANTS.

- COMPANY A, Robert B. Carr, John W. Hinson, Thomas J. Bostic, Stephen D. Farrior.  
COMPANY B, William E. Stitt, Julius Alexander, Robert T. Burwell.  
COMPANY C, William T. Brewer, Ruffin Barnes, L. D. Killett, Bennett Barnes, Hezekiah Brown.  
COMPANY D, John S. Whitaker, William Beavans, George W. Wills.  
COMPANY E, Wiley J. Cobb, Van B. Sharpe, John H. Leigh, Charles Vines, Willis R. Dupree, Thomas H. Williams.  
COMPANY F, Henry A. Macon, William R. Bond, J. H. Morris, W. L. M. Perkins, Jesse A. Macon.  
COMPANY G, William B. Williams, Alexander L. Steed, John B. Powell, Luther R. Crocker.  
COMPANY H, Hampton Beverly, Benjamin F. Moore, W. W. Boggan, Henry C. Beaman, Peter B. Lilly.  
COMPANY I, John H. Threadgill, John Ballard, Stephen W. Ellerbee, Leonidas L. Polk.  
COMPANY K, John A. Boggan, Stephen Huntley, Francis E. Flake.



The regiment was ordered to Wilmington and Fort Johnson at Smithville, on the Cape Fear river, where it remained about a month in General French's command, and thence to Virginia. Daniel's Brigade, composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth, Fiftieth and Fifty-third Regiments, was placed in the command of Major-General Holmes, and on the last of the seven days' operations around Richmond was ordered to occupy the road near the James river, where it was subjected to a fierce shelling from the gunboats on the right and the batteries on Malvern Hill in front, but was not in the regular engagement; was afterwards ordered to Drewry's Bluff, and constituted part of the forces under Major-General G. W. Smith for the protection of Richmond and vicinity during the advance of the army under General Lee into Maryland in September, 1862; and about the same time a demonstration was made against Suffolk, Va., by troops under General French (this regiment being a portion of them), probably for the purpose of preventing the Federals from sending reinforcements from that territory to oppose the movement of the Confederates in Maryland. They returned in about ten days, and the regiment resumed its position at Drewry's Bluff, where it was engaged in drilling and putting up breastworks under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis, who, being a civil engineer by profession, was ordered by the brigade commander to supervise their construction. Shortly after quarters were prepared for the winter, the brigade was ordered to Goldsboro, in December, 1862, to reinforce the Confederates in opposing the advance of the Union troops from New Bern under General Foster; but on the day before its arrival they succeeded in burning the railroad bridge over the Neuse river, and, after a sharp engagement with the Confederates on the south side of the river, retreated to their base of operations at New Bern. The bridge was immediately rebuilt on trestles by a detail of men from the brigade, Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis superintending the work.

During the spring of 1863 it was stationed at Kinston and detachments sent out to prevent the approach of the enemy into the interior. Major-General D. H. Hill having assumed



command of the department, directed demonstrations to be made in aid of military operations at other points and to compel the enemy to abandon their outposts. In the affair at Deep Gully, a small creek, upon the eastern bank of which the enemy were entrenched, the Forty-third was ordered to attack, and after a few rounds the enemy abandoned the works and retreated. The brigade was then ordered to Washington, N. C., and was there subjected to the artillery fire of the Union forces occupying that place, but, with the exception of some skirmishing, no engagement was brought on. It then returned to its former quarters at Kinston, and, later on, went to Fredericksburg, Va., and was assigned to Rodes' Division of the Second Corps (Ewell's), the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fifty-third Regiments and the Second North Carolina Battalion then constituting the brigade—the Fiftieth Regiment having been assigned to another brigade. The Army of Northern Virginia was there reviewed by General Lee and ordered to commence the memorable Pennsylvania campaign in June, 1863.

#### ON THE MARCH.

Upon arriving at Brandy Station the brigade was placed in line of battle to meet any attempted advance of Union infantry to support its cavalry, but was not engaged—the main fighting in that terrific battle (9 June) being between the cavalry of the opposing armies. At Berryville the enemy were driven by the cavalry, supported by this brigade, and camp equipage, etc., captured. It then marched by way of Martinsburg, Williamsport, Hagerstown and Chambersburg to Carlisle, Pa., and occupied the barracks at that place, from which it was ordered to Gettysburg.

#### IN THE THREE DAYS' FIGHT.

Upon arriving at Gettysburg, on Wednesday, 1 July, 1863, about 1 o'clock p. m., a line of battle was formed near Foyen's house, northwest of the town and to the left of Pender's Division of Hill's Corps, which had repulsed the enemy in the forenoon, and the troops advanced to the attack. The



fight was continued till late in the afternoon and the enemy driven back, the brigade being handled with consummate skill by the brave General Daniel. Seminary Ridge was gained and occupied—the right of the Forty-third resting on the railroad cut. The fight was terrific and the loss heavy on both sides. On Thursday morning, 2 July, the regiments were assigned to various positions upon the line. The Forty-third supported a battery, during the artillery duel which continued nearly the whole day, at a point on the Ridge just north of the Seminary building, and the shot and shell from the guns of the enemy on Cemetery Heights caused serious loss. It was during this cannonade that General Lee and staff passed to the front along the road near by, and the troops saluted him by raising their hats in silence, and were encouraged by his presence. From this point a movement was commenced at night in line of battle, in the direction of the enemy's works, the skirmishers firing upon the Confederates and retreating, but inflicting no loss. The moon was shining brightly, and it seemed that a night attack upon Cemetery Heights was contemplated; but when the brigade crossed the valley in front, orders were given to march by the left flank near the southern and eastern limits of the town, and about daybreak on Friday, 3 July, it reported to Major-General Johnson, who commanded the Division of Ewell's Corps on the extreme left of the Confederate line. Daniel's Brigade, with other troops, had been ordered to reinforce Johnson's position on Culp's Hill. It marched nearly all night, and formed a line of battle near Benner's House, crossed Rock Creek, and, through the undergrowth, among large boulders and up the heavily timbered hill, the attack upon the enemy was made, the line of works (formed by felled trees) taken, but the charge upon the main line was repulsed. Colonel Kenan, of the Forty-third, was wounded in leading this charge, and taken from the field (captured on the retreat and imprisoned until the close of the war), and the command devolved on Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis.

The forces under Johnson held their positions until night, when they were withdrawn—the Forty-third occupying its first position on Seminary Ridge until the army moved to



Hagerstown. On the retreat it was assigned the rear position, and in consequence was repeatedly engaged with the Union advance. After remaining at Hagerstown a few days the Confederates crossed the swollen Potowmack (carrying their guns and their ammunition on their heads, the water being up to their armpits), and fell back to the village of Darksville. Later, they were in front of the Federal army, on the south bank of the Rapidan river, guarding the fords, and engaged the enemy at Mine Run when an advance towards Richmond was made. After the retreat of the Federals to the north of the Rapidan, and active operations having comparatively ceased, winter quarters were built, but they were not long occupied by this regiment, for it was detached for duty with General Hoke's Brigade in the winter campaign in 1863-'64 in Eastern North Carolina, Major-General Pickett being in command of all the forces.

In this campaign Hoke's Brigade consisted of the Sixth, Twenty-first, Fifty-fourth and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments and the First North Carolina Battalion, and attached to it were the Forty-third North Carolina and Twenty-first Georgia. In approaching New Bern this regiment arrived at Bachelor's creek, about seven miles from the city, and made a night attack upon the enemy's works, but, discovering that the flooring of a bridge across the creek, about seventy-five feet long, had been removed Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis informed General Hoke that if he would send him plank from the pontoon train he would renew the attack as soon as practicable. Hoke complied, and the attack was made at daylight the next day—one of the companies laying the plank, under fire, and the others crossing over, also under fire, driving the enemy and causing a retreat to New Bern.

There were also some Union troops at Clark's brickyard, on the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad, nine miles above the city, and information was received that a train of cars had been sent from New Bern to bring them in. The regiment was ordered to capture this train, without wrecking it, if possible, and accordingly a three-mile march at quick and double-quick time was made to intercept it. When the regiment got within about twenty or thirty yards of the track



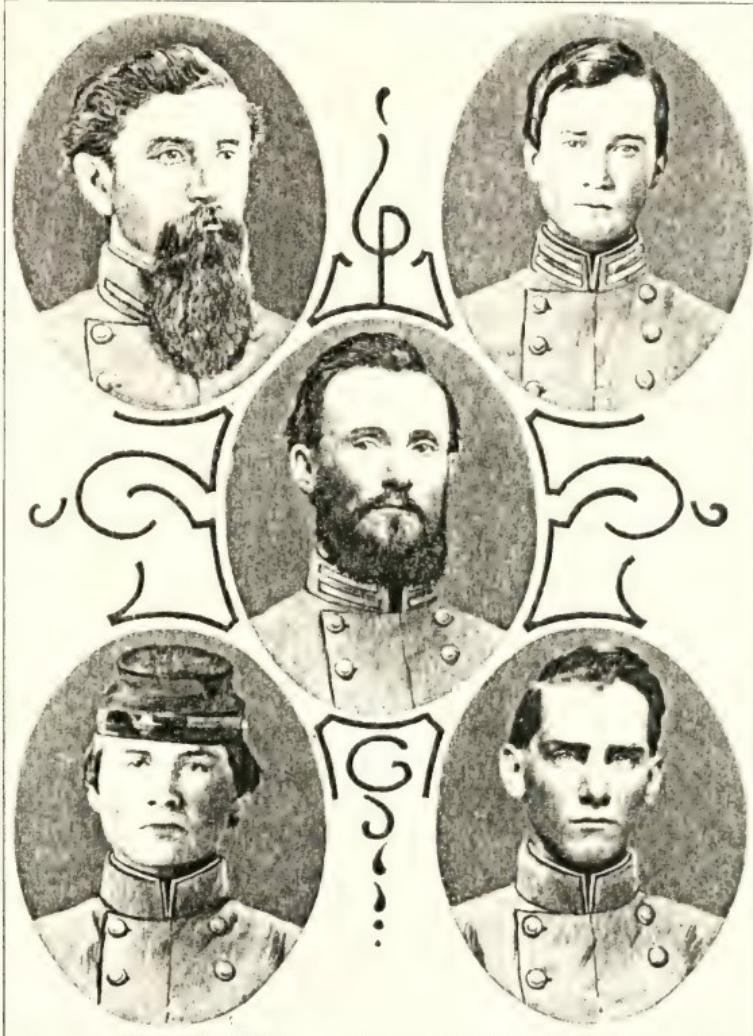
the train was passing at its highest speed, and shots were exchanged between the opposing parties. If success had attended this movement, the purpose of General Hoke was to place his troops on the train, run into the town and surprise the garrison. Pickett's expedition, however, was not successful, and the troops fell back to Kinston, remaining there a few weeks, and then marched on Plymouth.

#### THE BATTLE OF PLYMOUTH.

April 18, 19 and 20, 1864: General Hoke, who succeeded to the command of all the forces in this department, directed the campaign, and was also authorized by the Navy Department to secure the co-operation of the Confederate ram, *Albemarle*, then near Hamilton on the Roanoke river, in an unfinished state and in charge of Commander Cooke. Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia, commanded Hoke's Brigade. He was killed in a charge at night upon a fort about half a mile in advance of the enemy's line of works at Plymouth, and Lewis, of the Forty-third, assumed command and was subsequently promoted to Brigadier-General. The fort was taken and the *Albemarle* simultaneously steamed down the river and engaged the enemy, sinking one of their gunboats and driving their flotilla a considerable distance below Plymouth, thus relieving the land forces in future movements of the apprehended attack from them. During the night the different commands were placed in position for the general assault upon the works around the town, and this necessitated the moving of the troops by circuitous routes to avoid being discovered by the enemy, and consumed all of the 19th. Accordingly, on the morning of the 20th General Matt. Ransom attacked on the east side of the town, Lewis on the west and Hoke, with the other brigades, moved upon the enemy's center. The town was taken in a short while, the garrison and an immense amount of supplies being captured. The brilliancy and dash of this movement, which was planned and faithfully executed according to the directions of the commanding officer, received recognition in the following:

*Resolved by the Congress of the Confederate States of*





FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

- |                                                  |                                            |
|--------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| 1. R. B. Carr, 1st Lieut., Co. A.                | 3. L. L. Polk, 2d Lieut., Co. I.           |
| 2. Robt. Turnbull Burwell, 1st Lieut.,<br>Co. B. | 4. B. F. Hall, Sergeant, Co. A.            |
|                                                  | 5. Robert J. Southerland, Sergeant, Co. A. |



*America.* That the thanks of Congress and the country are due and are tendered to Major-General Robert F. Hoke and Commander James W. Cooke, and the officers and men under their command, for the brilliant victory over the enemy at Plymouth, N. C.

Joint resolution, approved 17 May, 1864. *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies*, Vol. 60, page, 305.

Washington, N. C., was next threatened, and after an artillery duel during the day the enemy evacuated it. The forces then moved upon New Bern again. The Forty-third engaged the enemy about nine miles from the city during the afternoon of 2 May, and again on the morning of the next day. The enemy were forced back in a running fight within sight of the town. At this juncture, when the capture of the town seemed probable, orders were received to march immediately back to Kinston and thence to Petersburg, which point General Butler, of the Union army, was threatening with a large force. The distance covered by the regiment on this day's march, including the running fight towards New Bern and the return to Kinston, was thirty-seven miles in about twelve hours. Of the reinforcements ordered to Petersburg the Forty-third was the first regiment to arrive, and, there being but few other troops on the ground, orders were given to occupy the entrenchments in front of the city by deploying at twenty paces, and, in order to impress the enemy with the belief that they were confronted by a large force, instructions were given to make as much noise as possible and fire off guns at frequent intervals. From this time till 15 May the regiment was moved to different portions of the line, from the south of Petersburg to the north of Richmond, a distance of about thirty miles, seldom remaining more than one day at any point. These frequent movements were deemed necessary on account of the small force available to meet real or supposed movements of the Union army. In the meantime reinforcements were brought in, and General Beauregard commanded the Confederate forces in the engagement which took place the next day.



## THE BATTLE OF DREWRY'S BLUFF, 16 MAY, 1864.

The attack was made by the Confederates about daylight under cover of a dense fog. When within about forty paces of the enemy's main line the Forty-third encountered (as did also the other troops of the division) a line of telegraph wires fastened to stumps about twelve inches above the ground, which caused most of the men to trip and fall. This checked the forward movement, but from this position a heavy fire was poured into the enemy until they were dislodged. Finding their ammunition nearly exhausted, as the enemy commenced retreating the regiment repaired to the rear to replenish it. This being done, it returned to the line near the right of General Robert Ransom's Division, to which it was then temporarily attached, and occupied the right of the brigade in a charge upon the works, when a battery of artillery was captured, the enemy driven across the turnpike and a position in rear of the Union forces secured. The position of the regiment was now near the turnpike, which constituted the dividing line of the divisions of Ransom and Hoke during most of the engagement. Hoke, being appointed Major-General after the battle of Plymouth, was assigned to the command of another division after his arrival at Drewry's Bluff. About this time a council of war was held on the turnpike, which was participated in by a distinguished group, consisting of President Davis, Generals Beauregard, Ransom and Hoke, with their respective staff officers. Very soon after this incident, the enemy having given way at all points of the line, were driven into Bermuda Hundreds, the angle between the James and Appomattox rivers, under cover of their gunboats, this regiment taking part in the pursuit.

After remaining in line of battle in front of General Butler's troops for about two days, orders were issued for the regiment to rejoin its old brigade in the Army of Northern Virginia. In obedience thereto it marched to Drewry's Bluff and was transported by boat to Richmond, thence by rail to Milford Station on the Richmond and Fredericksburg Railroad, reaching there about noon on 21 May, 1864.



The march was at once resumed, and the regiment bivouacked that night near Spottsylvania Court House. The army having been withdrawn from its position in front on the night of the 21st to meet a movement of the enemy, who had retired towards the North Anna, the regiment was ordered to follow on the morning of the 22d. Late in the afternoon, information was received from General Ewell that the regiment was then in the rear and in danger of being captured. To avoid this risk an all-night march was made, the old brigade joined and the enemy again confronted near Hanover Junction on the morning of the 23d. It was then commanded by General Bryan Grimes, Daniel having been killed at Spottsylvania on 12 May, and General Lewis remained in charge of Hoke's old Brigade. In this march more than 60 miles were traversed, and the troops were hungry and nearly exhausted. But not long after arriving upon the ground a line of battle was formed northwest of the Junction and earthworks thrown up. After dark this line was abandoned and the regiment withdrawn about a mile to the rear, and occupied the bank of a railroad cut, leaving the brigade sharpshooters in possession of the first line. Next day (24 May), about noon, the enemy in force attacked the sharpshooters and drove them from their position. Companies A and F, numbering about seventy men, under command of Lieutenants Bostie, Farrior and Morris, were detailed and sent to the front with instructions to retake the works. On reaching the works they found that both sides of them were occupied by a regiment of Union troops, supported by a brigade at a short distance to the rear. On the sudden appearance of this small force from the thick woods which covered their approach, they were ordered by the enemy to surrender. To this they responded with a quick and destructive fire at close range, and, after a hand-to-hand fight of several minutes, forced them to the opposite side of the breastworks, and the assault was fiercely continued about two hours. Encouraged by the forward movement of the brigade and the firing of a field battery constituting their support, the Union forces attempted several times to retake the position, but were as often repulsed. A heavy rain having set in, the firing ceased and the enemy



withdrew under cover of the rain and approaching darkness. After the rain ceased a survey of the field was made, showing a larger number of dead and wounded of the enemy than the aggregate number of the two companies engaged in the fight. On receiving a detailed report of the affair and its results, General Grimes was heard to express himself to the effect that all things considered, he believed this to be one of the great fights of the war. These two companies rejoined the regiment after dark, and in a few hours the entire army retired towards Richmond to confront the Union army, then moving in the same direction.

Nothing of special note occurred, except frequent skirmishing, till the battle of Bethesda Church, which was fought on the afternoon of 30 May. Further skirmishing took place on 31 May and 1 June, and the battle of Gaines' Mill was fought 2 June, and Cold Harbor 3 June, in all of which this regiment bore its part.

After the battle of Cold Harbor, the Second Corps, then commanded by General Early, was ordered into camp near Gaines' Mill and held in reserve till 13 June. The sharpshooters of Rodes' Division had been previously organized into a separate corps under command of Captain W. E. Stitt (Company B), and numbered about one thousand men, made up of details from the different regiments, the Forty-third contributing about thirty-five from the right wing under command of Lieutenant Perkins (Company F), and thirty-five from the left wing under command of Sergeant-Major Kenan, who had been appointed by the brigade commander, 10 June, a Junior-Second Lieutenant. On 13 June the Second Corps was ordered to Lynchburg, Va., arriving there on the 18th, and in the afternoon the sharpshooters engaged those of the Union forces. The withdrawal of the enemy during the night was promptly discovered, and the sharpshooters marching at the head of the division in pursuit overtook their rear guard at Liberty, when another skirmish ensued, and again at Buford's Gap on the afternoon of the 20th. The pursuit was continued on the 21st through Salem, Va., where another skirmish took place. On the 22d the troops rested at Salem, and resumed the march on the 23d in



the direction of the Potomac river, reaching Staunton early on the morning of the 27th; remained there till the next morning, and then marched to Harper's Ferry, which was reached on the morning of 4 July. Here the Corps of Division sharpshooters captured Bolivar Heights about 10 a. m., and about 8 p. m. drove the enemy from Harper's Ferry across the river to Maryland Heights. On the 5th the Forty-third occupied Harper's Ferry, relieving the sharpshooters. Skirmishing continued most of the day. On the 6th the corps crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown and engaged the enemy in the rear of Maryland Heights, the battle continuing nearly all day. On the 7th they moved through Crampton's Gap towards Frederick, and after frequent skirmishing reached Frederick on the morning of the 9th, where General Lew Wallace's Division of Union troops was strongly posted on the eastern bank of the Monocacy river. After a stubborn fight they were driven from the field, with the loss of a large number of killed, wounded and prisoners. On the 10th the Confederates moved in the direction of Washington City, and, after a hard march in extremely hot weather and over a dusty road, arrived in front of Fort Stevens about noon of the 11th, within sight of the dome of the Federal Capitol. The sharpshooters advanced within 200 yards of the fort, but retired to a position about 300 yards to the rear, where they halted and dug rifle-pits. In the afternoon the enemy threw forward a heavy line of skirmishers, who attacked vigorously, but were repulsed with some loss. Here, our sharpshooters remained, subjected to a severe shelling from the forts till the afternoon of the 12th, when the enemy, reinforced by two corps from the Army of the Potomac, advanced and drove them from their improvised works. Rodes' Division then moved forward and retook the lost ground. The casualties on both sides were considerable. On account of the arrival of the above-mentioned reinforcements, a further advance of Early's troops was not made, and they were withdrawn on the night of the 12th, and recrossed the Potomac on the 14th near Leesburg, Va. The movement into Maryland was probably made to create a diversion in favor of operations around Richmond.



Thus, within thirty days the army of which the Forty-third composed a part had marched about five hundred miles and taken part in not less than twelve battles and skirmishes, in most of which the enemy were defeated with severe losses.

The troops then moved towards the Valley of Virginia, and crossed the Blue Ridge at Snicker's Gap on 17 July, the Union troops slowly following and an additional force threatening the flank of the Confederate right. On the afternoon of that day Rodes' Division attacked the enemy at Snicker's Ford, driving them into the Shenandoah river, where the loss in killed and drowned was heavy. On the 19th the division moved towards Strasburg, and on the afternoon of the 20th went to the support of General Ramseur, who was resisting an attack near Winchester. But the engagement having ceased before the arrival of the division, it retired to Fisher's Hill and there remained till the morning of the 24th, when an attack was made upon the enemy at Kernstown and they were driven across the Potomac and followed into Maryland. And then Rodes' Division, sometimes in detachments and at others in a body, marched and countermarched between the Potomac river and Fisher's Hill until September 22d. During this time the Forty-third Regiment was engaged in almost daily skirmishing, and took part in the battles of Winchester, 17 August; Charlestown, 21 August; Smithfield, 29 August; Bunker's Hill, 3 September; Winchester (No. 2), 19 September, and Fisher's Hill, 22 September.

Having been defeated in the last engagement at Fisher's Hill, the Confederates retreated up the valley, followed by the enemy to Waynesboro, where reinforcements were received, and then, on 1 October, returned down the valley, reaching Fisher's Hill on 13 October. The Forty-third composed part of the body of troops which marched around the left and rear of the enemy's camp at Cedar Creek on the night of 18 October, preparatory to the general attack made on the morning of the 19th, resulting in their defeat in the early part of the day. Reinforcements having been received by the enemy in the afternoon, the tide of battle was turned and the Confederates were driven up the valley to New Mar-



ket, where they remained in camp without further incident till about 22 November, when a considerable body of Union cavalry under the command of General Sheridan was attacked and routed by Rodes' Division between New Market and Mount Jackson. This ended the noted Valley campaign of 1864.

About a week before Christmas, the Forty-third, with the other troops composing the old Second Corps of the Army of Northern Virginia, returned to Petersburg and went into winter quarters on Swift creek, three miles north of the city. The next movement was to Southerland's Depot, on the right wing of the army, south of Petersburg, on 15 February, 1865. Here the regiment remained with the other troops of the division till about the middle of March, when they were ordered into the trenches in front of Petersburg to relieve General Bushrod Johnson's Division, which was to occupy another position.

The increasing disproportion in the numbers of the opposing armies made it necessary for Rodes' Division, now composed of only about 2,200 men, to cover a distance of about three and a half miles in the trenches, and to do this it required one-third of the men on picket duty in front of the trenches and one-third on duty in the trenches, where the mud was frequently more than shoe-deep and sometimes knee-deep, while the remaining third caught a broken rest on their arms. No general engagement took place till 25 March, but at night there was almost constant firing between the pickets. At most points the main lines of the two armies were within easy rifle-range, and at some points less than one hundred yards apart. The monotony of the constant crackling of small arms was frequently relieved by the firing of mortars and the dropping of shells in the trenches, calling for constant watchfulness on the part of those who were in the trenches, and disturbing the broken rest of the small remnant who were off duty. On the night of 24 March, General Gordon's Corps was massed opposite Hare's Hill with a view to making an attack at that point, where the lines were within one hundred yards of each other. Entrance into the enemy's works was effected just before daylight on the morning of the



25th by the Division Corps of sharpshooters, who, with unloaded muskets, surprised and captured the enemy's pickets and entered their main lines. The Forty-third Regiment, with the other troops of the division immediately following, occupied the enemy's works for some distance on either side of Hare's Hill, and stubbornly held them, against great odds, for about five hours. During most of this time the enemy poured a deadly fire into the Confederates from several batteries on elevated positions, and, having massed large bodies of infantry at this point, forced the withdrawal of the Confederates with considerable loss in killed, wounded and prisoners. After this fruitless effort to dislodge the enemy the Forty-third resumed its position in the trenches and remained until Saturday, 1 April. About 11 o'clock on the night of this date the enemy opened a furious cannonading all along the line. Under cover of this firing they attacked the Confederates in heavy force at several points, effecting an entrance beyond the limits of the division on the right. At daylight on Sunday morning, the 2d, they made a breach in the line held by a brigade to the left center of the division, and occupied the Confederate works for some distance on either side of Fort Mahone, which stood on an elevation about fifty yards in front of the main line. The division, massing in this direction, attacked the enemy at close quarters, driving them from traverse to traverse, sometimes in a hand-to-hand fight, till the lost works were retaken up to a point opposite Fort Mahone, which was still occupied by the enemy. Its commanding position making its recapture of importance in the further movements of the Confederates, two details of about twelve men each, in charge of a Sergeant—one from the Forty-third (now commanded by Captain Cobb, Captain Whitaker having been mortally wounded just previously), and the other from the Forty-fifth Regiment of the brigade—were ordered, about noon, to enter the fort by the covered way (a large ditch) leading from the main line into the fort. This was promptly done, and the enemy occupying the fort—more than one hundred in number—perhaps in ignorance of the small force of Confederates, and surprised at the boldness of the movement, surrendered



and were sent to the rear as prisoners. From this position the little squad of about twenty-five men poured a deadly fire into the left flank and rear of the enemy occupying the Confederate line beyond Fort Mahone, while the main body of the division pressed them in front till they were dislodged and retreated to their own lines, thus giving up the entire works taken from the division early in the morning. In this affair Sergeant B. F. Hall commanded the squad from the Forty-third. A brigade of Zouaves, however, promptly moved forward, meeting the retreating force, and recaptured both the Confederate line and Fort Mahone, leaving Rodes' Division still in possession of that portion of the line retaken from the enemy in the early part of the day, and which was held until after dark, when the lines in front of Richmond and Petersburg were abandoned. The army then commenced its retreat. Marching day and night, with only short intervals of rest, Amelia Court House was reached about 4 April, where the well-nigh exhausted troops were permitted to rest several hours. The march was resumed that night, and, being closely pursued by the enemy, General Grimes (then Major-General commanding the division to which the Forty-third belonged) was assigned to the position of rear guard, Colonel D. G. Coward, of the Thirty-second, being in command of Daniel's Brigade. The enemy's cavalry, emboldened by success, frequently rode recklessly into the Confederate lines, making it necessary to deploy alternately as a line of battle across the road one brigade after another, while the others continued the march. This running fight culminated in a general engagement on the afternoon of the 6th at Sailor's creek, near Farmville, Va., where the Confederates, overwhelmed by superior numbers, retreated beyond the long bridge at Farmville.

On the morning of the 7th, beyond Farmville, the division charged the enemy and recaptured a battery of artillery which had previously fallen into their hands. Continuing the march from this point, there was no further fighting on this or the following day, the Union army having taken par-



allel roads for the purpose of intercepting the Confederates in their march towards Lynchburg.

The vicinity of Appomattox Court House was reached on the evening of Saturday, the 8th, and the exhausted troops bivouacked until midnight, when the division was ordered from the position of rear guard to the front, with a view of opening the road towards Lynchburg, now occupied by Union troops in large force. About sunrise on Sunday morning, the 9th of April, 1865, the division engaged a large body of the enemy's cavalry, supported by infantry, and drove them more than a mile, capturing a battery of artillery and several prisoners. While engaged in this pursuit they were ordered back to a valley in which the larger part of the Confederates was now massed, and on arriving there received the sad intelligence that the Army of Northern Virginia had surrendered.

Manifesting under defeat the same spirit of fidelity and endurance which had characterized them in success, the remnant of about 120 men and officers composing this regiment accepted the fate of war and awaited the final arrangements for capitulation; and on the morning of 12 April, after laying down their arms, dispersed on foot, many in tattered garments and without shoes, and thus made their way to their distant and, in many instances, desolated homes.

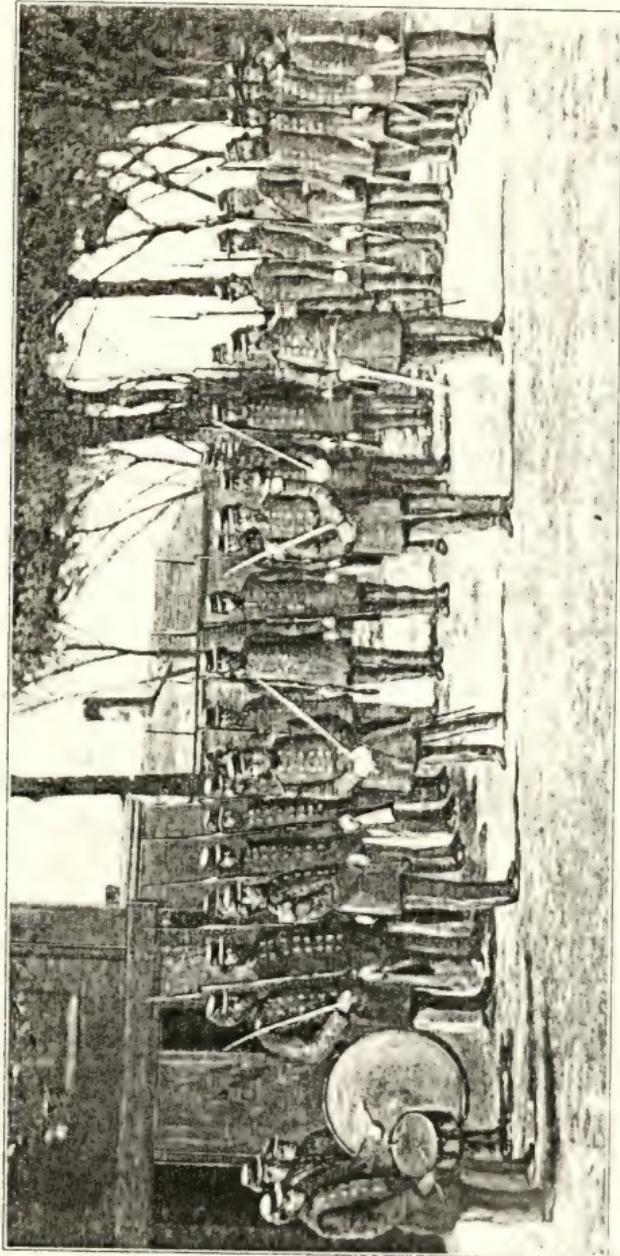
And "the picture of the private soldier as he stood in the iron hail, loading and firing his rifle, the bright eye glistening with excitement, and with powder-stained face, rent jacket, torn slouch hat and trousers, blanket in shreds, and the prints of his shoeless feet in the dust of the battle, should be framed in the hearts of all who love true courage wherever found."

The preparation of this sketch, giving the organization and outlining the movements of the Forty-third Regiment, is largely due to the assistance rendered to me by W. G. Lewis, B. F. Hall, W. R. Kenan, John B. Powell, W. E. Stitt, W. R. Burwell, Thomas P. Devereux, John J. Dabbs and S. H. Threadgill, members of the regiment, and participants in its movements. The material employed was gathered from memoranda and such official documents as were accessible.

THOS. S. KENAN.

RALEIGH, N. C.,  
9 April, 1895.





DUPLIN RIFLES.

Organized in Kenosha, N. C., 1850



## ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

### COMPANY A.

BY COLONEL THOMAS S. KENAN.

The "Duplin Rifles" (organized at Kenansville in 1859) entered the army in April, 1861, as volunteers, under Thomas S. Kenan, Captain; Thomas S. Watson, First Lieutenant; William A. Allen and John W. Hinson, Second Lieutenants; and was immediately ordered into the Camp of Instruction at Raleigh. It was mustered in for six months with the First Regiment of Volunteers, and assigned to it under Colonel D. H. Hill, but as this regiment had more companies than the number allowed by army regulations, the "Duplin Rifles" and "Lumberton Guards" were taken out, and with eight other companies, formed the Second Volunteers and elected Sol. Williams, Colonel; Edward Cantwell, Lieutenant-Colonel, and Augustus W. Burton, Major; the "Duplin Rifles" being Company C.

The regiment was ordered to Virginia in May, 1861, (a few days after the First Regiment) and served in and around Norfolk, without special incident, except at Sewell's Point, where a detachment consisting of this and three other companies was subjected to repeated shellings from the long-range guns of the Union troops stationed at the "Rip-Raps." At the expiration of the term of service of the "Duplin Rifles" and "Lumberton Guards" they were mustered out, and the regiment supplied with other companies in their stead, and numbered the Twelfth Regiment of State Troops, after the re-organization.

Upon the return of the company to Duplin county, it was reorganized under a notice dated 23 December, 1861, for the war, by electing Thomas S. Kenan, Captain; James G. Kenan, First Lieutenant; Robert B. Carr and John W. Hinson, Second Lieutenants; ordered to Raleigh in March, 1862,



and assigned to the Forty-third Regiment as Company A. It therefore belonged to three different regiments.

Some of the officers and men of the company, "C," organized other companies in Duplin county and likewise enlisted for the war.

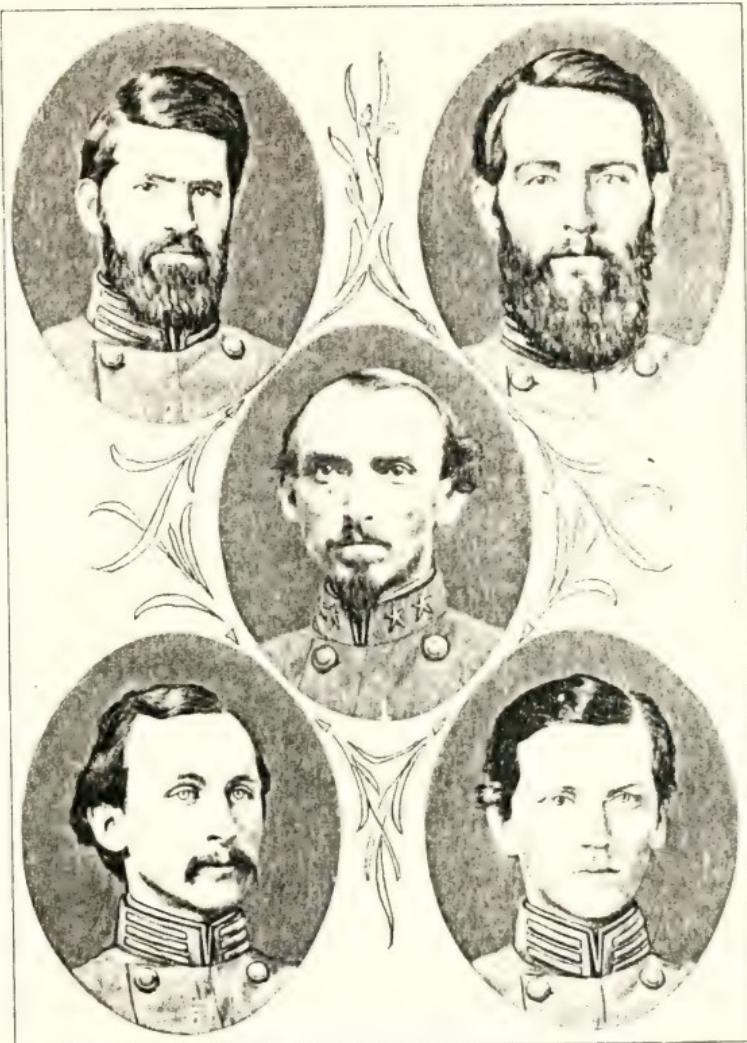
From a roster kept by Sergeant B. F. Hall, it appears that there were fifty-six on the roll at the close of the war, thirty-five of whom were either in prison, on parole or detail, and no deserter from the company during the entire war. Twenty-one surrendered with the Army of Northern Virginia at Appomattox on 9 April, 1865, to-wit: Thomas J. Bostic, William R. Kenan, Benjamin F. Hall, William B. Blalock, William N. Brinson, James D. Brown, LaFayette W. Brown, Alex. Chambers, Thomas E. Davis, Lewis J. Grady, R. M. S. Grady, Alex. Guy, James G. Halso, Jesse Horne, Hargett Kornegay, Jere J. Pearsall, Lewis J. Rich, Calvin L. Rogers, John E. Smith, Jere Strickland, Frank A. Simmons.

The roster also shows that the number killed was 25, died of disease, 22; disabled by wounds, 10; discharged for disability, 12; transferred to other regiments, or companies, 5.

THOS. S. KENAN.

RALEIGH, N. C.,  
9 APRIL, 1901.





FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

1. Tazewell E. Hargrove, Lieutenant Colonel.
2. Elkanah E. Lyon, Captain, Co. A.
3. R. C. Brown, Captain, Co. B.
4. Robert Bingham, Captain, Co. G.
5. Thos. Hill Norwood, Captain, Co. H.



## FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

---

BY MAJOR CHARLES M. STEDMAN.

This brief record of the organization, movements and achievements of the Forty-fourth Regiment, North Carolina Troops, could not have been written except for the assistance of Captains W. P. Oldham, Robert Bingham, Abram Cox, and Lieutenants Thomas B. Long and Richard G. Sneed, officers of the regiment, who participated in its career, and especially am I under obligations to Captain John H. Robinson, of the Fifty-second North Carolina Regiments, who was detailed during the latter part of the campaign of 1864, at the request of General William MacRae, to serve on his staff as A. A. G., in place of Captain Louis G. Young, who had been severely wounded. The facts stated in a memorial address delivered by the writer in Wilmington, N. C., on 10 May, 1890, on the life and character of General William MacRae, in so far as they are connected with the operations of the regiment, and its participation in the various engagements described have been used without reserve, as they are known to be correct, nor has there been any hesitancy in quoting from the language of that address, when appropriate to a description of events constituting alike a part of the history of the regiment, as well as of the brigade.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, N. C., on 28 March, 1862, with George B. Singletary as its Colonel, Richard C. Cotten, Captain Company E, its Lieutenant-Colonel, and Elisha Cromwell, Captain Company B, as its Major. Colonel Singletary was killed in a skirmish with Federal troops at Tranter's Creek, in Eastern North Carolina, on 5 June, 1862. He was an officer of extraordinary merit, and would have unquestionably attained high distinction but for his premature death. On 28 June, 1862, Thomas C. Singletary, his brother, was elected Colonel



in his stead. Lieutenant-Colonel Cotten resigned, on account of advanced age, on 10 June, 1862, and Major Elisha Cromwell was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel to fill the vacancy caused by his resignation. The vacancy caused by the promotion of Major Elisha Cromwell was filled by the election of Tazewell L. Hargrove, Captain of Company A, on 10 June, 1862. On 24 July, 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel Cromwell resigned and Major Tazewell L. Hargrove was elected in his place, and on 28 July, 1862, Charles M. Stedman, Captain Company E, was promoted and elected Major. The Staff and Company officers are named as they appear in the following list, and in the order of their promotion:

ADJUTANTS, Stark Armistead Sutton, John A. Jackson, R. W. Dupree.

ENSIGN, W. S. Long.

SERGEANT-MAJORS, John H. Johnston, Alexander S. Webb, E. D. Covington.

QUARTERMASTER SERGEANT, Isham G. Cheatham.

ORDNANCE SERGEANT, Robert J. Powell.

COMMISSARY SERGEANT, D. F. Whitehead.

CHAPLAINS, John H. Tillinghast, Richard G. Webb.

SURGEONS, William T. Sutton, J. A. Bynum.

ASSISTANT SURGEONS, J. A. Bynum, William J. Green.

QUARTERMASTERS, William R. Beasley, William L. Cherry.

COMMISSARY, Abram Cox.

COMPANY A—Captains, Tazewell L. Hargrove, Elkanah E. Lyon, Robert L. Rice; First Lieutenants, Elkanah E. Lyon, Robert L. Rice, Richard G. Sneed, A. J. Ellis; Second Lieutenants, Robert L. Rice, William R. Beasley, John B. Tucker, Richard G. Sneed, Robert Winship Stedman. Enlisted men, 148.

COMPANY B—Captains, Elisha Cromwell, Baker W. Mabry, Robert C. Brown; First Lieutenants, Baker W. Mabry, Robert C. Brown, Thomas M. Carter; Second Lieutenants, Thomas M. Carter, Robert C. Brown, Charles D. Mabry, Elisha C. Knight. Enlisted men, 135.



COMPANY C—Captains, William L. Cherry, Macon G. Cherry; First Lieutenants, Abram Cox, Andrew M. Thigpen, Samuel V. Williams; Second Lieutenants, Andrew M. Thigpen, Macon G. Cherry, Samuel V. Williams, Reuben E. Mayo, Samuel Tapping. Enlisted men, 131.

COMPANY D—Captain, L. R. Anderson; First Lieutenants, Cornelius Stevens, John S. Easton; Second Lieutenants, John S. Easton, James M. Perkins, George W. Parker, Thomas King. Enlisted men, 116.

COMPANY E—Captains, R. C. Cotten, Charles M. Stedman, James T. Phillips, John J. Crump; First Lieutenants, Charles M. Stedman, James T. Phillips, John J. Crump, N. B. Hilliard; Second Lieutenants, R. C. Cotten, Jr., James T. Phillips, John J. Crump, Thomas B. Long, N. B. Hilliard, C. C. Goldston, S. J. Tally. Enlisted men, 183.

By reason of his health, Lieutenant Thomas B. Long resigned in July, 1862. He was a most accomplished officer; brave, competent and true—he was respected by all.

COMPANY F—Captains, David D. DeBerry, John C. Gaines; First Lieutenants, John C. Gaines, John C. Montgomery; Second Lieutenants, John C. Montgomery, Alexander M. Russell, George W. Montgomery. Enlisted men, 127.

COMPANY G—Captain, Robert Bingham; First Lieutenant, S. H. Workman; Second Lieutenants, George S. Cobb, James W. Compton, Fred. N. Dick, Thomas H. Norwood. Enlisted men, 129.

COMPANY H—Captains, William D. Moffitt, James T. Townsend, R. W. Singletary; First Lieutenants, James T. Townsend, William H. Carter, Thomas H. Norwood; Second Lieutenants, Daniel L. McMillan, R. W. Singletary, Moses Haywood, E. A. Moffitt, R. W. Dupree. Enlisted men, 141.

COMPANY I—Captains, Downing H. Smith, John R. Roach; First Lieutenants, J. J. Bland, John R. Roach; Second Lieutenants, John R. Roach, John A. Jackson, J. M. Lancaster. Enlisted men, 120.

COMPANY K—Captains, Rhet. R. L. Lawrence, W. P. Oldham; First Lieutenants, Joseph W. Howard, W. P. Oldham; Second Lieutenants, David Yarborough, Bedford



Brown, J. H. Johnson, A. S. Webb, Joseph J. Leonard, Rufus Starke. Enlisted men, 144.

On 19 May, 1862, the regiment was ordered to Tarboro, N. C., thence it proceeded to Greenville, N. C., and for a few weeks was engaged in outpost and picket duty in that section of the State during which time it participated in no affair of consequence, save the skirmish at Tranter's Creek which, though otherwise unimportant, was to the regiment most unfortunate in that its accomplished commander lost his life.

From Eastern North Carolina the regiment was ordered to Virginia and there assigned to the Brigade of General J. Johnston Pettigrew, one of the very ablest commanders of the Army of Northern Virginia. Not only the Forty-fourth Regiment, but the entire Brigade, which consisted of five regiments—the Eleventh North Carolina, the Twenty-sixth North Carolina, the Forty-fourth North Carolina, the Forty-seventh North Carolina, and the Fifty-second North Carolina, felt the impress of his soldierly qualities. It was ever a matter of regret to the officers and men of the regiment that no opportunity was offered them of manifesting their appreciation of his great qualities by their conduct on the battle-field under his immediate command. The other regiments of his brigade were with him at Gettysburg and contributed to his imperishable renown by their steadfast valor, but the Forty-fourth North Carolina, whilst *en route*, was halted at Hanover Junction, Va., to guard the railroad connections there centering, and thus protect General Lee's communications with Richmond. Colonel T. C. Singletary with two companies, remained at the junction. Major Charles M. Stedman, with four companies, commanded north of the junction and the bridges of the Fredericksburg and of the Central (now the C. & O.) Railroad across the South Anna and the Little Rivers, four in number, were entrusted to Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove, who posted one company at each bridge, remaining personally with Company A at Central's bridge across the South Anna, the post of greatest danger. On the morning of 26 June, 1865, the Federal troops, consisting of the Eleventh Pennsylvania Cavalry, two compa-



nies of a California cavalry regiment, and two pieces of artillery, about fifteen hundred, all included, commanded by Colonel, afterwards General Spear, appeared before Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove, and his small force of forty men, stationed in a breastwork on the south side of the river, built to be manned by not less than four hundred men. Before Colonel Spear made his first attack, Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove abandoning the breastwork as being entirely untenable by so small a force, fell back to the north side of the river, posted his men under cover along the river bank and for two hours successfully resisted repeated efforts to capture the bridge by direct assault, although assailed by a force outnumbering his own at least thirty-five to one. Failing in a direct attack, Colonel Spear sent four hundred men across the river by an old ford under cover of a violent assault in front from the south and was about to assail Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove in his rear, which was entirely unprotected, when Company G, consisting of 40 men, having been ordered from Central's bridge, over the river at Taylorsville, more than three miles distant, arrived and occupied the breastwork north of the river at its intersection with the railroad, and about two hundred yards from the bridge, thus protecting the rear of Company A. Company G had scarcely got into position when the charge of four hundred cavalry, intended for the unprotected rear of Company A, was delivered against Company G, protected by the breastwork, and was repulsed, as were two other charges made at intervals of about fifteen minutes, while attacks were made simultaneously on Company A from across the river with like results. During a lull in the fighting the Federal force on the north side was reinforced by four hundred men, and an assault on both Companies A and G was (at the same time) ordered. Colonel Spear crossed the river and ordered the attack made up the river bank against Company G's unprotected right, and Company A's unprotected left flank at the abutment of the bridge. The enormous odds prevailed, but only after a most desperate and hand-to-hand conflict with pistol, sabre and bayonet, in which Confederates and Federals were commingled. In the final assault Company A lost half of its men. The loss of



Company G was not heavy. The Federal loss exceeded the entire number of Confederate troops engaged. Colonel Spear retreated after burning one bridge instead of four. He stated in the presence of his own command and that of Colonel Hargrove that: "The resistance made by the Confederates was the most stubborn he had known during the war; that he supposed that he was fighting four hundred infantry instead of eighty, and that his expedition had entirely failed of its object, which was to cut General Lee's communications with Richmond." No more gallant fight was made during the entire Civil War, than by Lieutenant-Colonel Hargrove's command. He won the admiration of both friend and foe by his personal gallantry, and only surrendered when overpowered and taken by sheer physical force.

General Pettigrew having been mortally wounded on the retreat from Gettysburg, Colonel William Kirkland, of the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, was promoted to Brigadier-General and assigned to the command of Pettigrew's Brigade about 10 August, 1863.

#### ON THE MARCH.

The brigade left camp at Rapidan Station, where it had been in cantonment, on 8 October, 1863, and marched rapidly with a view of engaging General Meade at Culpepper Court House. General Meade fell back and avoided a conflict at Culpepper Court House, but was overtaken at Bristoe Station. Here on 14 October, 1863, a bloody and disastrous engagement was precipitated between Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades, and the bulk of Warren's Corps, supported by a powerful artillery with a railroad embankment as a fortification. In this fight, so inopportune and ill-advised and not at all in accordance with the views of General Lee, the Forty-fourth Regiment greatly distinguished itself. Advancing through an open field directly upon the line of fire of the Federal artillery, it sustained a heavy loss without flinching. Three different couriers rode up to the regiment and delivered a message to fall back. The order was disregarded and the regiment moved steadily on under heavy fire of both artillery and infantry, and when close upon the works, with the



shout of victory in the air, only retreated under peremptory orders from Lieutenant-General A. P. Hill. The loss of the regiment in this engagement in killed and wounded was large. This was the first time the conduct of the regiment fell under the observation of Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, and afterwards its brigade commander. He was struck with admiration at the splendid conduct of the men, and often afterwards referred to their steady valor upon that field. It endeared the regiment to him, for he loved brave men, and it became his habit to frequently place himself with the colors of the regiment for, said he: "If I am with the Forty-fourth Regiment and am lost, I shall always be found to the fore-front of the fighting."

#### WILDERNESS.

General Lee having received information that General Grant had commenced the passage of the Rapidan on the night of 3 May, 1864, broke up his cantonments on the 4th and prepared to meet him. The Forty-fourth North Carolina, with Kirkland's Brigade, left camp near Orange Court House on the 4th and bivouacked the same night at Verdiersville, about nine miles from the battlefield of the "Wilderness." Two roads led in parallel lines through the dense thickets which gave its name to the territory upon which the battle was fought. One was known as the Orange Plank Road, and the other as the Turnpike. The Forty-fourth marched by way of the Plank Road and became heavily engaged about 2 o'clock of the afternoon of the 5th. The right rested immediately upon the Plank Road, and next in line to it, with its left on the road, was the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment. This immediate locality was the storm-center of the fight, and it is doubtful if any more violent and sanguinary contest occurred during the entire Civil War than just here. The road was swept by an incessant hurricane of fire, and to attempt to cross it meant almost certain death. At this point of the line three pieces of Confederate artillery were seriously menaced with capture, the horses belonging to the guns having all been



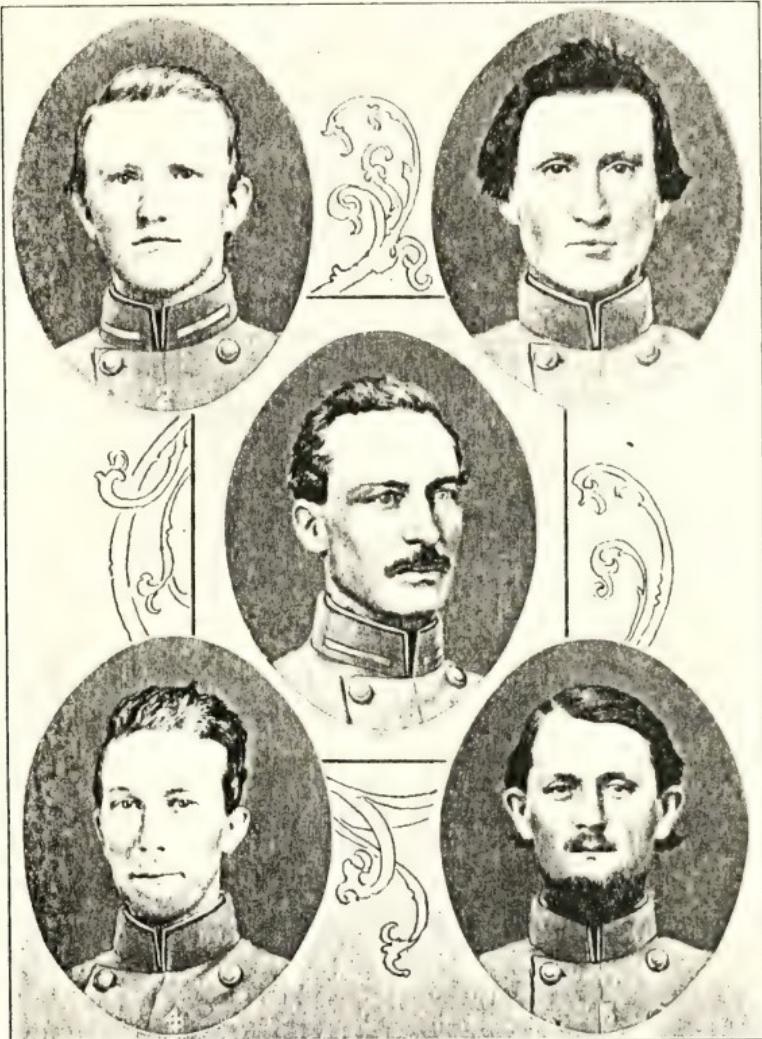
killed or disabled, whilst the gunners were subjected to an incessant and murderous fire. At this juncture Lieutenant R. W. Stedman, of Company A, volunteered to drag the guns down the road out of danger if a detail of forty men was furnished. Forty men immediately stepped to his side and said they would follow him, although they all knew the effort was full of peril. The work was done successfully, but only three of the volunteers escaped unhurt. Lieutenant Stedman was severely wounded by a grape shot. For his personal gallantry in this action he was honorably mentioned in high terms of praise, in an official order from division headquarters. The loss of the regiment in the engagements of the 5th and 6th was exceedingly heavy; a large proportion of its officers were killed and wounded; amongst the latter the Major of the regiment. Both officers and men won the special commendation of brigade and division commanders. On the 8th the regiment moved with the brigade towards Spottsylvania Court House. On the 10th Heth's and Anderson's Divisions, commanded by Early, had a serious conflict with a portion of General Grant's army, which was attempting to flank General Lee by what was called the Po River Road. In this engagement the Forty-fourth suffered severely, and fought with its accustomed valor.

Captain J. J. Crump, of Company E, elicited by his conduct, warm commendation from the general commanding.

#### SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE.

On the 12th the regiment was assigned its position directly in front of Spottsylvania Court House, and was in support of a strong force of Confederate artillery. Repeatedly during the day it was charged by the Federal columns, their advance always being heralded and covered by a heavy artillery fire. Every assault was repulsed with great loss to the assailants, whose advance was greeted by loud cheers from the Forty-fourth Regiment, many of the men leaping on the earthworks and fighting without cover. The loss during this engagement was comparatively slight. The Major commanding the regiment was again wounded and sent to a hos-





FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

- |                                     |                                                           |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. R. W. Stedman, 2d Lieut., Co. A. | 3. John Rufin Buchanan, Sergeant, Co. A.<br>Famous Scout. |
| 2. E. A. Moffitt, 2d Lieut., Co. H. | 4. Joseph M. Satterwhite, Private, Co. A.                 |
|                                     | 5. James Andrew Wilson, Private, Co. A.                   |



pital in Richmond, and was not able to rejoin his regiment until a few days before the battle at Reams Station.

The regiment participated in all the engagements in which its brigade took part from Spottsylvania Court House to Petersburg, constantly skirmishing and fighting as Grant continued his march on Lee's flank. On 3 June, 1864, it was heavily engaged with the enemy near Gaines' Mill. In this fight General W. W. Kirkland, commanding the brigade, was wounded. Pursuing its march, and almost daily skirmishing, the regiment reached Petersburg on 24 June, 1864, and commenced the desultory and dreary work of duty in the trenches. During the latter part of July, 1864, the regiment left Petersburg for Stoney Creek, and whilst on the march Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, joined the brigade and assumed command under orders. This gallant officer was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General in November, 1864, and from that time never left the brigade, of which the Forty-fourth was a part, until the last day at Appomattox. From Stoney Creek the regiment returned to Petersburg.

#### REAMS STATION.

The regiment bore its part with conspicuous good conduct in the brilliant engagement at Reams Station on 25 August, 1864.

Upon the investment of Petersburg the possession of the Weldon road became of manifest importance, as it was Lee's main line of communication with the South, whence he drew his men and supplies. On 18 August, 1864, General G. K. Warren, with the Fifth Corps of Grant's army, and Kautz's Division of cavalry, occupied the line of the Weldon road at a point six miles from Petersburg. An attempt was made to dislodge them from this position on the 21st, but the effort failed. Emboldened by Warren's success, Hancock was ordered from Deep Bottom to Reams Station, ten miles from Petersburg. He arrived there on the 22d and promptly commenced the destruction of the railroad track. His infantry force consisted of Gibbons' and Miles' Divisions, and in the afternoon of the 25th, he was reinforced by the divis-



ion of Orlando B. Wilcox, which, however, arrived too late to be of any substantial service to him. Gregg's division of cavalry, with an additional brigade commanded by Spear, was with him. He had abundant artillery, consisting in part of the Tenth Massachusetts battery, Battery B First Rhode Island, McNight's Twelfth New York Battery, and Woerner's Third New Jersey Battery. On the 22d Gregg was assailed by Wade Hampton with one of his cavalry divisions, and a sharp contest ensued. General Hampton, from the battlefield of the 22d, sent a note to General R. E. Lee, suggesting an immediate attack with infantry. That great commander, realizing that a favorable opportunity was offered to strike Hancock a heavy blow, directed Lieutenant-General A. P. Hill to advance against him as promptly as possible. General Hill left his camp near Petersburg on the night of the 24th, and marching south, halted near Armstrong's Mill, about eight miles from Petersburg. On the morning of the 25th he advanced to Monk's Neck Bridge, three miles from Reams Station, and awaited advices from Hampton. The Confederate force actually present at Reams Station, consisted of Cooke's and MacRae's Brigades of Heth's Division, Lane's, Scales' and McGowan's Brigades of Wilcox's Division, Anderson's brigade of Longstreet's Corps, two brigades of Mahone's Division, Butler's and W. H. F. Lee's Divisions of cavalry, and a portion of Pegram's Battalion of artillery.

Being the central regiment of the brigade, MacRae's line of battle was formed on it as was customary. Just previous to the assault upon General Hancock's command, the regiment was posted in the edge of a pine thicket, about three hundred yards from the breastworks held by the Federal troops. When the order was given to advance, the men threw themselves forward at a double-quick in a line as straight and unbroken as they presented when on parade, and without firing a gun, mounted the entrenchments and precipitated themselves amongst the Federal infantry on the other side, who seemed to be dazed by the vehemence of the attack, and made a very feeble resistance after their ranks were reached.

A battery of artillery, captured by the regiment, was



turned upon the retreating columns of the enemy. It was manned by sharpshooters of the Forty-fourth, who had been trained in artillery practice. Captain Oldham, of Company K, sighted one of the guns repeatedly, and when he saw the effect of his accurate aim upon the disarmed masses in front, was so jubilant that General MacRae with his usual quiet humor remarked: "Oldham thinks he is at a ball in Petersburg."

The Federal loss in this battle was between six and seven hundred killed and wounded, and 2,150 prisoners, 3,100 stand of small arms, twelve stand of colors, nine guns and caissons. The Confederate loss was small, and fell principally upon Lane's Brigade; it did not exceed five hundred in killed and wounded. The casualties in the Forty-fourth Regiment were trifling, as well as in other regiments of the brigade, for Hancock's men in our front fired wildly and above the mark, being badly demoralized by the fire of the Confederate artillery, under cover of which MacRae's men advanced to the assault.

James Forrest, who carried the colors of the regiment, became famous for his chivalrous devotion to the flag, and his gallantry on every field.

On the night of 25 August, 1864, the regiment returned with MacRae's Brigade to its position on the line of entrenchments at Petersburg, held by General Lee's right, and continued to perform the routine of duties incident to such a life until 27 October, 1864.

#### BURGESS' MILL.

The enemy having forced back our cavalry, and penetrated to a point on our right known as Burgess' Mill, on 27 October, 1864, General MacRae was ordered to attack with the understanding that he should be promptly reinforced by one or more brigades. Reconnoitering the enemy's position, he pointed out at once the weak part of their line to several officers who were with him, and ordered his brigade to the assault. It bore down everything in its front, capturing a battery of artillery, and dividing the corps which it had assailed. The Federal commander, seeing that MacRae was



not supported, closed in upon his flanks and attacked with great vigor. Undismayed by the large force which surrounded him, and unwilling to surrender the prize of victory already within his grasp, MacRae formed a portion of his command obliquely to his main line of battle, driving back the foe at every point, whilst the deafening shouts and obstinate fighting of his brigade showed their entire confidence in their commander, although every man of them knew their situation to be critical, and their loss had already been great. Awaiting reinforcements, which long since ought to have been with him, he held his vantage ground at all hazards, and against enormous odds. No help came whilst his men toiled, bled and died. Approaching night told him that the safety of his brigade demanded that he return to his original position. Facing his men about, they cut their way through a new line of battle which had partially formed in their rear. In this encounter the Forty-fourth North Carolina bore a brilliant part; it drove the Federal line, everywhere in its front, steadily to the rear. Lieutenant R. W. Stedman, of Company A, with less than fifty men, charged and captured a battery of artillery which was supported by a considerable force of infantry. This battery was disabled and left, as it was impossible to bring it off the field when the regiment was ordered to return to the position it occupied at the commencement of the fight. The affair at Burgess' Mill was marred by the misunderstanding of his orders by an officer of high rank, by which he failed to reinforce General MacRae, as instructed, causing a heavy loss to his brigade.

From Burgess' Mill the regiment again returned to its old position in the entrenchments at Petersburg. On 2 April, 1865, the Confederate lines having been pierced and broken through, the regiment, under orders, commenced its retreat towards Amelia Court House, which place it reached on 4 April. Its line of march was marked by constant and bloody engagements with the Federal troops, who followed in close pursuit, but who were entirely unable to produce the slightest demoralization or panic. At Southerland's Station the fight was severe. On the night of the 5th it left Amelia Court House and reached Appomattox on the morning of the



9th, where, together with the bleeding remnants of the army of Northern Virginia, it staked its arms and its career was ended.

The *esprit de corps* of the regiment was of the very highest order. Neither disease, famine, nor scenes of horror well calculated to freeze the hearts of the bravest, ever conquered its iron spirit. The small remnant who survived the trials of the retreat from Petersburg, and who left a trail of blood along their weary march from its abandoned trenches to Appomattox Court House, were as eager and ready for the fray on that last memorable day, as when, with full ranks and abundant support, they drove the Federal troops before them in headlong flight on other fields. This spirit especially manifested itself in the love of the regiment for its flag, which was guarded by all its members with chivalrous devotion, and which was never lost or captured on any field. The first flag was carried from the commencement of its campaign until about 1 January, 1865, when a new one was presented in its stead, for the reason that so much of the old flag had been shot away that it could not be distinctly seen by other regiments during brigade drills, and as the Forty-fourth was always made the central regiment, upon which the others of the brigade dressed in line of battle, as well as on parade, a new flag had become a necessity.

The new battle flag was carried by Color-Sergeant George Barbee, of Company G, until the night of 1 April, 1865, when crossing the Appomattox, he wrapped a stone in it and dropped it in the river, saying to his comrades about him: "No enemy can ever have a flag of the Forty-fourth North Carolina Regiment." The wonderful power which the high order of *esprit de corps* exerted for good amongst the officers and men, is illustrated by an incident which is worthy to be recorded amidst the feats of heroes.

A private by the name of Tilman, in the regiment, had on several occasions attracted General MacRae's favorable attention and, at his request, was attached to the color-guard. Tilman's name was also honorably mentioned in the orders of the day from brigade headquarters.



Soon thereafter, in front of Petersburg, the regiment became severely engaged with the enemy and suffered heavy loss. The flag several times fell, as its bearers were shot down in quick succession. Tilman seized it and again carried it to the front. It was but an instant and he, too, fell. As one of his comrades stooped to raise the flag again, the dying soldier touched him, and in tones made weak by the approach of death, said: "Tell the General I died with the flag." The tender memories and happy associations connected with his boyhood's home faded from his vision as he rejoiced in the consciousness that he had proved himself worthy of the trust which had been confided to him.

The old battle flag of the regiment tattered and torn by ball and shell, its staff riddled, and its folds in shreds, was presented to Mrs. Della Worth Bingham, wife of Captain Robert Bingham, Company G, by the Major commanding, as a mark of respect and esteem in behalf of officers and men to a woman who had won their affectionate regard, and whose husband had ever followed it with fidelity and fortitude upon every field where it waved. Captain Bingham, whose home is in Asheville, N. C., still has it in his possession.

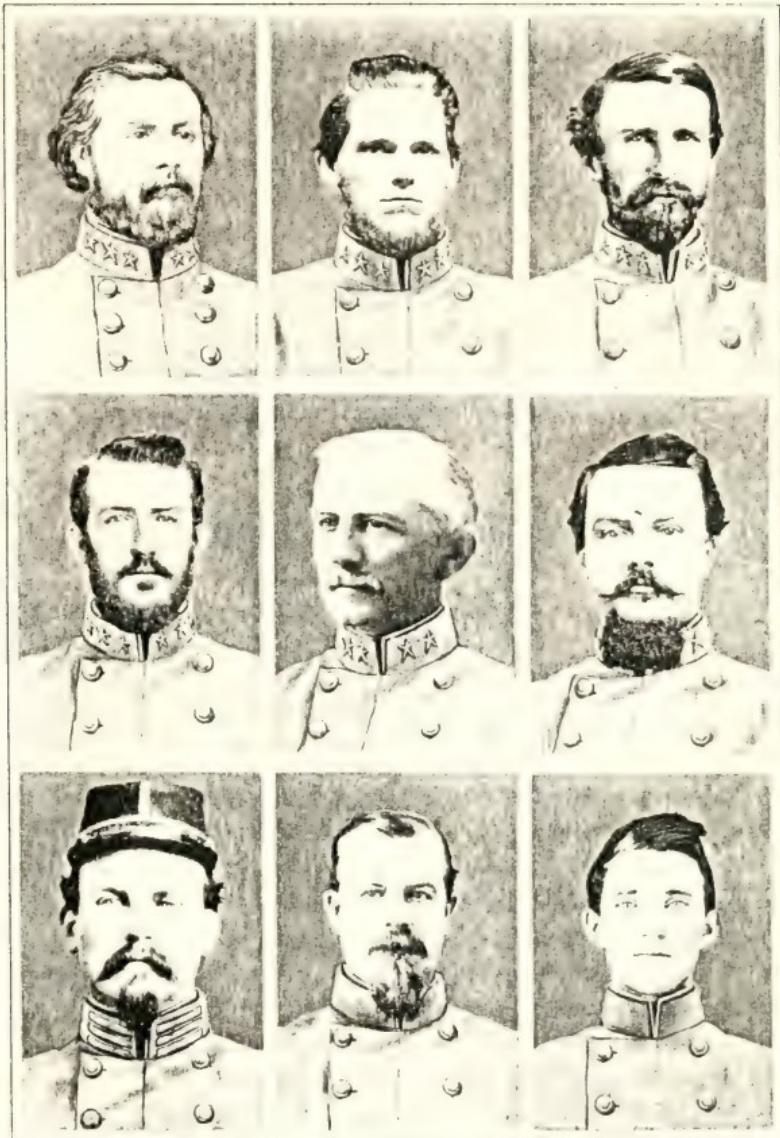
Its folds shall become mouldy with the lapse of years. The time will come when the Civil War shall only be remembered as a shadow of days long passed, but the memories of the great deeds of the sons of Carolina who followed that flag, and who sleep in unknown graves upon the fields of Northern Virginia, shall survive unshaken amidst the ruins of time.

CHAS. M. STEDMAN.

GREENSBORO, N. C.,

APRIL 9, 1901.





FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

- |                                   |                                      |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Junius Daniel, Colonel.        | 5. Andrew J. Boyd, Lieut. Colonel.   |
| 2. John R. Winston, Colonel.      | 6. Thomas M. Smith, Major.           |
| 3. J. Henry Morehead, Colonel.    | 7. Samuel C. Rankin, Captain, Co. B. |
| 4. Samuel Hill Boyd, Colonel.     | 8. J. A. Roach, Sergeant, Co. E.     |
| 9. C. B. Watson, Sergeant, Co. K. |                                      |

1769909



# FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

---

BY CYRUS B. WATSON, SECOND SERGEANT, COMPANY K.

---

## ITS ORGANIZATION.

The Forty-fifth Regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, Raleigh, N. C., in the early spring of 1862, with:

JUNIUS DANIEL, Colonel, of Halifax County.

JNO. HENRY MOREHEAD, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Greensboro, N. C.

ANDREW J. BOYD, Major, of Rockingham.

W. M. HAMMOND, Adjutant, of Anson.

PRYOR REYNOLDS, A. Q. M., Rockingham.

DR. WM. J. COURTS, Surgeon, of Rockingham.

JNO. R. RAINES, Assistant Surgeon, of Rockingham.

REV. E. H. HARDING, Chaplain, of Caswell County.

The regiment contained ten companies, six of which were organized in Rockingham County, one in Caswell, two in Guilford and one in Forsyth. These companies were enlisted and organized for three years' service. At the time of their organization, the war was on in dead earnest. The first battle of Manassas had been fought and won; the battles of Forts Henry and Donelson had been fought and lost, and the capital of one of the States of the Confederacy was in the hands of the enemy. The State of North Carolina had been invaded; Fort Macon had been captured, and the city of New Bern was occupied by the Federal forces. The authorities at Washington were putting forth tremendous energies in organizing and equipping great armies for the subjugation of the seceding States. The Confederate Government at Richmond, to meet these mighty preparations, had called upon the States of the South for more troops.

These ten companies were raised and commanded by such



men as Dr. Jno. W. May, of Rockingham County, then nearly 50 years of age, Captain of Company A.

Chas. E. Shoer, of Greensboro, Captain of Company B, himself fit to command a regiment.

Jas. T. Morehead, Jr., of Greensboro, Captain of Company C, afterwards the splendid commander of the Fifty-third Regiment.

Jno. L. Seales, of Rockingham, Captain of Company D, a man of sterling worth and splendid ability.

Samuel H. Boyd, of Rockingham, Captain of Company E, afterwards Colonel of the regiment and a most gallant man.

Jno. R. Winston, of Rockingham, Captain of Company F, a man who afterwards won great distinction as commander of the regiment.

Jno. H. Dillard, of Rockingham, Captain of Company G, who afterwards filled with distinction a position upon the Supreme Court bench of the State, and whose qualities of head and heart fitted him for any position he might be called upon to fill.

Dr. Wm. J. Courts, of Rockingham, Captain of Company H., afterwards Surgeon of the Regiment.

Thomas McGehee Smith, of Caswell, Captain of Company I, a most lovable man, afterwards promoted to Major and killed while commanding the regiment.

Dr. J. M. Hines, of Forsyth, Captain of Company K, whose manly qualities and uniform kindness to the boy soldier, the writer of this sketch, who served under him, will always be held in the fondest remembrance.

Junius Daniel, the first Colonel of the Regiment, was an officer in the old army and a graduate of West Point. He was transferred from the command of the Fourteenth Regiment to the Forty-fifth Regiment, of which he was elected Colonel upon its organization. He was promoted to Brigadier-General in September, 1862, and commanded Daniel's Brigade with conspicuous ability from its organization in the spring of 1862, until killed at Spottsylvania Court House on 12 May, 1864. On his promotion, Lieutenant-Colonel J. Henry Morehead, of Greensboro, was made Colonel of the regiment. He was a fine disciplinarian and did much before



his untimely death in 1863 in qualifying the regiment for the ordeals through which it had to pass along its subsequent march to imperishable renown. After the death of Colonel Morehead, Samuel H. Boyd became Colonel of the regiment. He was wounded at Gettysburg and left on the field a prisoner, and remained a prisoner of war until exchanged in May, 1864. He then returned to the army and took command of the regiment on 17 May, at Spottsylvania; was killed two days thereafter while gallantly leading his regiment in a charge upon the enemy's line. A few moments before the charge, in which he lost his life, he received a gunshot wound in the arm. He had his arm bandaged with his handkerchief to stop the flow of blood, refused to leave the field, and was killed as above stated.

He wore a bright, new uniform in this battle, was about six feet four inches tall, which made him a shining mark for the enemy's riflemen. After his death John R. Winston became Colonel of the regiment. Nature had fashioned him for a soldier. He was a man of deep piety, of stern integrity and the coolest courage in battle. He was often wounded, but rarely left the field because of wounds. Was wounded and captured at Gettysburg in July, 1863, carried to Johnson's Island as a prisoner of war, escaped from the island on a cold night in January, 1864, walked across the lake on the ice to the Canadian shore, went from Canada to Nassau, from there he reached a Confederate port by running the blockade, and returned to the regiment in time for the campaign of 1864. He led the regiment through all the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania and Cold Harbor; was then transferred to General Early's command in the Valley, advanced with that command upon Washington, carried his regiment in sight of the Capitol, fought his regiment at the battle of Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek, and in the last two engagements held the regiment in line until most of Early's command had left the field. After the Valley campaign was over, he joined the army of General Lee at Petersburg, where he remained during the winter of 1864 and 1865, marched and fought to Appomattox Court House where he surrendered with the army of his great Chieftain.



Thomas McGehee Smith, Major of the regiment, was a splendid officer, beloved by the men of the regiment, and was killed in one of the battles near Richmond which followed the Spottsylvania campaign of 1864.

I have given this sketch of the field officers of the regiment who served for any length of time with the regiment. Major Andrew J. Boyd, a brother of Colonel Samuel H. Boyd, was promoted from Captain of Company L, of the Twenty-first Regiment, but did not long remain with the regiment. Chas. E. Shober was promoted from Captain of Company B, but remained Major of the regiment only a short time until he became Lieutenant-Colonel of the Second North Carolina Battalion.

In approaching the difficult task assigned me of writing a true historical sketch of the Forty-fifth Regiment in this, the year 1900, thirty-five years after the regiment laid down its arms at Appomattox Court House, I find myself involved in great difficulties. Very few of the officers of the regiment are living. In looking over the Roster of the non-commissioned officers of the various companies, I find that they, too, have nearly all passed away. Among the surviving private soldiers of the various companies, there are very few, whose whereabouts I can ascertain. I have little left but personal recollection.

It will be seen that the men who composed this regiment were drawn from four contiguous counties, Forsyth, Guilford, Rockingham and Caswell. The officers who organized, disciplined and prepared them for war were such as would have made a good regiment out of almost any material. But the men themselves, in the main, would have made good soldiers under almost any circumstances. The rank and file of the regiment was composed of men from the farm, from the shop, from the school room, from the office, from mercantile pursuits, in fact from all the walks of life. Many of them were without property, some of them the sons of the wealthy, but most of them from the middle classes. I knew one young private who was the owner of many slaves in his own right.

From the organization of the regiment in the early spring of 1862 until the beginning of the seven days' fight below



Richmond, the men were drilled almost incessantly. They were upon the drill ground upon an average from six to eight hours each day. When the first battle opened at Mechanicsville, Daniel's Brigade was in camp near Petersburg. We immediately struck tents and started for the field; crossed the James on a pontoon bridge above Drewry's Bluff, and became a part of the division of General Holmes. The brigade did not encounter the enemy until late in the evening of 30 June. We marched down the river in almost blinding dust until we reached a point between McClellan's army, then engaged in the battle of Frazier's Farm, and the river.

The brigade was halted and the command was given for the first time to load with cartridges. A few stray balls of the enemy were falling around the regiment. While the regiment was loading its guns, a field battery opened fire directly enfilading the line. At the same time a squadron of Confederate cavalry stampeded up the road, threatening to trample us under the feet of their horses. Just at this moment, two gunboats, the Galena and another on the river directly behind the line, opened fire with 160 pounders. This was, what has always seemed to me, a poor way to break in a raw regiment. The regiment thought so, and eight companies immediately broke to the woods and "Stood not upon the order of their going." Two companies, commanded by Captain May and Captain Jno. H. Dillard, rapidly disappeared up the lane. Just as these eight companies climbed out of the road, which was lower than the land on the sides, Private Harrison Green, of Company K, was killed by a shell from one of the gunboats and fell by the writer's side. Private Jesse Sapp, of Company K, was run over and permanently disabled by the horse of a frightened cavalryman. The eight companies did not go far until they recovered from their fright, formed on the flag and quietly marched back to a position near the point where they had left the road, each man with his mouth full of excuses for having lost his head. Just at this time the two companies, commanded by Captains May and Dillard, came marching down the lane with their two captains in front and marched up to Colonel Daniel. Captain May saluted the Colonel and said that Companies A and G had



misunderstood the order and had marched up the lane. Colonel Daniel replied, with a smile on his face: "Yes, Captain, I saw the companies march up the lane at a very rapid gait, and, if I am not mistaken, their two Captains were making good time, and in front," which created a laugh all through the regiment, the two Captains joining in the fun. By a mistake of some one, our division that evening was not permitted to engage in the battle of Frazier's Farm, although it reached a point immediately upon the enemy's flank in time to have done effective service. The next day the sanguinary conflict of Malvern Hill raged until after dark, with our division again on the enemy's flank and under the enemy's fire without taking any active part in that engagement, except to endure the shelling from the enemy's guns. It was not the fault of "the men behind the guns." Daniel's Brigade, after the battle of Malvern Hill, returned to its camp near Petersburg. It remained near Petersburg until the army started on its march to Maryland. We were ordered to Richmond and remained in the city one day, awaiting transportation to Culpepper. The enemy made a demonstration on Drewry's Bluff and we were hurried back to that point. We went into camp immediately in the rear of Fort Darling, where we remained until ordered to North Carolina in the late fall of 1862. The brigade went to Kinston; was engaged through the spring of 1862 in marching and counter-marching in the country between Kinston and New Bern and around Washington on the Tar river, under General D. H. Hill; some little fighting, but none worth describing here. We returned to Kinston in time to have reached Fredericksburg before the battle of Chancellorsville, but were delayed for want of transportation facilities, and arrived at Fredericksburg just after the battle had closed and were immediately attached to General Rodes' Division of Ewell's Corps.

Early in June the army broke up camp and started on the memorable Gettysburg campaign. The first excitement occurred over the great cavalry battle of Brandy Station. The brigade double-quicked from Culpepper Court House most of the way to Brandy Station one hot evening, going to the relief of General Stuart, but arrived on the field only



in time to receive a few parting shots from the retreating enemy. The next morning found us on our way across the mountains marching rapidly toward Winchester. Rodes' Division was sent to Berryville, where it had a slight engagement, and cut off the retreat of Milroy, whose entire command fell into the hands of General Ewell as prisoners of war at Winchester. Ewell's Corps immediately took up its line of march into Pennsylvania, and Rodes' Division went as far North as Carlisle, Pa. From this point the Brigade turned back in the direction of Gettysburg and arrived on that field in the afternoon of 1 July.

#### BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

I was not present with my regiment at the battle of Gettysburg. I was left at Front Royal, on the march to Gettysburg, with a severe attack of acute pneumonia, contracted from lying on the damp ground at Brandy Station, after the rapid march from Culpepper, before alluded to. I met the regiment on its return between Hagerstown, Md., and Gettysburg, in command of a Captain. This much I know, when I met the regiment it was but a mere skeleton of what it was when it left me at Front Royal.

My own company lost seven men dead on the field, and lost between twenty-five and thirty wounded, including all of its officers save one. The Gettysburg Federal Memorial Association in 1897 published "A History of the Gettysburg Memorial Association with an Account of the Battle," from which I quote as follows:

"Another of Rodes' Brigades, Daniel's North Carolina, moved past the front of Robinson's Division, and while the Fifty-third Regiment of the brigade, with the Third Alabama of O'Neal's, which had been detached from its brigade, and the Twelfth North Carolina, of Iverson's, attacked the Seventy-sixth New York, Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania and One Hundred and Forty-seventh New York, of Cutler's Brigade, on left of Robinson, Daniel's other regiment - the Thirty-second, Forty-fifth, Second Battalion and the Forty-third - moved further to the right around to the railroad cut, and attacked the One Hundred and Forty-third and One Hun-



dred and Forty-ninth Pennsylvania, of Stone's Brigade, which regiments had been withdrawn from their first position and placed along the Chambersburg Pike to meet this attack. These regiments were from the lumber region of Pennsylvania and were expert riflemen, and the volleys with which they greeted Daniel's men were said by the Confederate officers to have been the most destructive they ever witnessed."

The same account of the battle, in giving a table of losses, shows that these two Pennsylvania Regiments lost 589 men out of a total of 915. While the Forty-fifth Regiment and the Second North Carolina Battalion (six companies), lost that day nearly 400 men. After recrossing the Potomac, I remember that General Daniel inspected the regiment, passing down the line inquiring after the condition of cartridges, we having waded the Potomac the night before. I remember hearing him ask Captain Hopkins, who commanded the regiment, "How many Rockingham companies are there in the regiment?" He answered, "Six." The General replied, "Rockingham county has reason to be proud of the record made by the regiment at Gettysburg."

After the Gettysburg campaign, we returned to the south side of the Rapidan, after many days of hot and toilsome marching, and went into camp near Orange Court House, and finally moved down the river to Morton's Ford. In the fall we left camp, marched to Madison Court House, turned the flank of General Meade, and started on, what appeared to be, a foot race after Meade's army retreating toward Washington. We overtook Meade at Bristoe Station just at sunset, after having been engaged in a running fight which lasted all day. The battle of Bristoe Station ended disastrously to us but Gen. Meade continued his retreat toward Washington. After a day or two's rest, we slowly returned to the south bank of the Rappahannock river and went into camp, as we thought, for the winter. Shortly afterwards, after some sharp skirmishing with the enemy, we retired across the Rapidan and again took up our old quarters near Morton's Ford. Winter being now upon us, we thought all fighting was over for the year 1863, but shortly afterwards, General Meade, not satisfied with the result of the recent campaign,



threw his army across the Rapidan. We hastened down to confront him, and for several days skirmished and fought by day and built breastworks by night in severe winter, until the enemy, finding that it was impossible to fight us to advantage, fell back across the river, and both armies returned to their quarters to remain during the winter. Each commander immediately engaged in filling up the ranks of the depleted regiments, preparing for the dreadful conflict that was to open up in the spring of 1864.

#### THE WILDERNESS AND SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE.

In the afternoon of 4 May, the regiment abandoned its winter quarters and started on the march to meet General Grant, the new commander of the Army of the Potomac. At nightfall we went into camp in "The Wilderness." On the morning of the 5th, after a hurried breakfast, we took up the line of march, and within a very short time, were halted and drawn up in line of battle. It was a beautiful May morning. We began to advance in line, having been informed that we had some of our troops in front of us. We could hear the scattering picket fire to the left and right. Suddenly we heard, what appeared to be a heavy volley of musketry a few hundred yards in front of us. Soon the woods were filled with demoralized men and we ascertained that the lines of Jones' Brigade had been broken, and that the regiments composing the brigade were quitting the field in the utmost confusion. We halted and let the men pass through our ranks. We were presently informed by the Colonel of one of the regiments that the brigade had broken at the first fire of the enemy, and that its commander, the brave General Jones, had refused to retreat with the men and had remained on the line until shot down. As soon as the way in front had been cleared, we heard the voice of our brigade commander, General Junius Daniel, give the command, "Attention, Battalions! Battalions forward, the center the battalion of direction, march!" The brigade moved forward at a quick step through the underbrush, just budding into spring life. We had not advanced far until, without notice, a white volume of smoke burst through the thick bushes, rendered



thicker by the interlacing bamboo briers that had grown up in a little depression of the earth, parallel with our line, followed with an almost deafening crash of musketry. We had not, up to this moment, seen an enemy. The aim was too high and hardly a man in the regiment was touched. Without waiting for a command, every gun was leveled, and into the line of smoke we poured a terrible volley, and, with a shout, went at them. On reaching a little narrow thicket, which, with clubbed muskets, was instantly leveled, we discovered a thin line of the enemy in full retreat, with the dead and wounded lying before our eyes, indicating that something like half of the line of battle had fallen at our first fire. On went the brigade in a full run. Presently we approached a small opening containing only a few acres of cleared land.

In this was placed a battery of guns which opened upon us as soon as the fleeing enemy had passed beyond. They had time to fire but once. Down the little slope the brigade rushed past the guns. At this point we received, at short range, the fire of a new line of the enemy, concealed in the pines beyond. The brigade halted, the men dropped on their knees and engaged in a conflict, the length of which I have no means of knowing. This fight continued until both lines had suffered severely, and, as if by common consent, our line withdrew to the edge of the woods from which it had emerged, while the enemy went in the opposite direction. Shortly afterwards the position we held was given to another brigade and our brigade was permitted to retire a few hundred yards and rest. We had lost heavily. The battle was then raging all along the line of Ewell's Corps and continued until after nightfall. In the darkness we arranged our lines and worked most of the night throwing up earth works. Early the next morning the firing between the picket lines began. From time to time during the day we sent forward men to strengthen the picket line. This picket fire continued all day with a light fire of artillery at intervals. During this day, the 6th of May, the dreadful fight was raging on our right between the Corps of Hill and Longstreet and the greater part of Grant's army. We remained in our position



during the night of the 6th and all day of the 7th with continued heavy picket and artillery firing. Early in the night of the 7th we moved out by the right flank, having been cautioned to make as little noise as possible, and commenced what turned out to be, a hurried flank movement to Spottsylvania Court House. We marched all night, and the whole of the next day, and in the afternoon heard heavy firing in the direction of Spottsylvania Court House. We hurried on. Now and then we passed through sections where the woods were on fire and would become enveloped in choking smoke, but nothing delayed us. Late in the afternoon, as we were approaching the field where Longstreet's Corps, now commanded by General Anderson, was engaged in an unequal fight with the assaulting columns of the enemy, the march became more hurried, frequently breaking into a double-quick. The afternoon was hot. The men, worn out by the long march and from loss of sleep, were dropping exhausted along the way. A little before sunset, and as we reached a point almost in range of the enemy's rifles, but in the rear of Longstreet's right, we were halted, the regiment closed up and ordered to a front. General Daniel dashed along on horseback in front of the brigade, halting in the center of each regiment, and announced that Longstreet's Corps had for hours been successfully resisting the repeated attacks of the enemy that had been thrown against him in almost overwhelming numbers; that we were now in half mile of his extreme right; that the enemy would, within a few minutes, turn his flank and get possession of a most favorable position unless we arrived in time to prevent it; that the only question was whether we should arrive in time to save the position or retake it after it had been secured by the enemy. This only occupied a few minutes, but it gave the tired men these few minutes to recover breath.

The announcement of General Daniel was greeted by each regiment with a shout. The brigade was ordered into column, and, in a rapid run, we passed the last regiment on Longstreet's right and discovered that the splendid brigade of General Ramseur, the front brigade in our corps, had passed Longstreet's last regiment, had turned by the left flank, and



was moving forward in a beautiful line to meet the enemy that had just arrived and was advancing to turn Longstreet's right. Our brigade pressed on until its last regiment had passed General Ramseur's right, when it, in turn, halted and closed up its ranks, fronted, and under the immediate eye of General Rodes, our commander, who had by this time arrived on the spot, raised a yell and dashed at the enemy. In rapid succession the brigades of Generals Doles and Battle passed in our rear, and with a similar movement turned the enemy's flank, whose whole advancing line was driven back. The fight continued in the woods until after nightfall, the two respective lines firing at the flash of the adversary's guns. Slowly the firing ceased, the litter-bearers came in along the line and bore away the wounded. The dead, for the time, and in many instances perhaps for all time, were left undisturbed where they fell.

#### THE HORSE SHOE.

Soon after the firing ceased, our lines were drawn back for a short distance and preparations for the next day's fight were begun. A sergeant from each regiment of our brigade was called for and assembled at brigade headquarters. I was detailed as one. We were placed in charge of Captain W. L. London, now of Pittsboro, N. C., (and I could write many pages about the courage and faithfulness of this staff officer). Captain London carried us forward in the dark, and selected, what appeared to be, the highest point of a low ridge between the lines. He posted us, one at a place, along the crest of this low ridge, until he had posted each guide about the length of a regiment apart, giving each instructions to remain in the pine thicket where we were placed, "until we heard the signal come down the line from our right," and then to take it up and repeat it as often as it came, until the regiment formed upon us. In leaving the place where I stood, Captain London cautioned me not to sit down, for fear I might go to sleep, but to stand and rest upon my gun. I must have stood there for more than an hour listening to the strange cries of the wounded, doubtless of both armies, some begging for water, and one poor fellow, as I remember, who



had perhaps been wounded in the head, was delirious, and now and then would change his cries and groans into a sound like the bark of a dog. After what seemed to me a long time, I heard away on my right coming down the line, a low "Halloo." This passed down the line and continued until we heard the tramp of the regiments as they came up and formed upon us. This was doubtless done all along most of the lines of Ewell's Corps, and done in many places in the darkness of a pine thicket. I have never been able to account for the forming of this salient, which was soon to become what is known as the historic "Bloody Angle," except in this way; we threw up breastworks all night, and, when daylight came, we found that a part of our division, and perhaps all of Johnson's Division and a part of Hill's men, were occupying breastworks formed in the shape of a horse shoe, with the toe upon elevated ground and the sides running back to the caulks, which were not, as I now see the ground, more than 500 yards apart.

All day of the 9th we encountered a deadly fire from the sharpshooters and a heavy fire of artillery from the enemy, to which we replied in kind. This died away after nightfall and was renewed in more aggravated form on the morning of the 10th, and continued until late in the afternoon. Suddenly, at about an hour by sun, the enemy broke from cover to our right, and poured in overwhelming numbers upon the line occupied by General Doles' Georgians. These gallant men were overpowered by sheer force of numbers and driven from the works. The enemy poured through the breach, captured quite a number of men on the extreme right of our brigade; forced the brigade to retire to avoid the enfilading fire, and caused us the temporary loss of sixteen pieces of artillery. Our brigade slowly fell back firing as it retreated, the enemy advancing and taking possession of our abandoned guns. In a short time we were in line at right angles to the works; the enemy massing in great numbers in our front. It seemed even to the eye of a private soldier that a dangerous crisis was upon us. Suddenly a single horseman came dashing up to the rear of our regiment. He was instantly recognized by the men who saw him, as General Ewell, our corps



commander. He had outstripped his staff officers who were following him, but not then in sight. He halted in the rear of the Forty-fifth Regiment, and called out, "Don't run boys; I will have enough men here in five minutes to eat up every d---d one of them." His eyes were almost green. The line steadied and poured volley after volley into the enemy. Presently we heard a yell up the line in our rear as we stood, and Battle's Brigade of Alabamians were seen coming to our support. They ran down the line by us. We raised a yell and dashed forward. Now, what became of Battle's men, whether they passed around us forming a line parallel with the works and then charged with us, I cannot tell. I did not then know. I only know that we went forward in a full run; found the enemy standing where we had left our batteries; the guns all withdrawn from their embrasures, turned upon us, but not firing, while the infantry fired into our faces. They stood their ground until there were but a few paces between the lines. A fine-looking Federal officer stood in the front of their line with drawn saber, encouraging his men. He fell dead, within a few paces of the writer, shot through the neck. I ascertained the next morning that his name was Colonel Huling, of the Sixth or Seventh Maine Regiment, temporarily commanding the front brigade in this assault. He was a brave fellow and deserved a better fate. When he fell, his men breaking in confusion leaped over the breastworks, and we went in near the same place we had left them. My recollection is that these lines were restored by our brigade, Battle's Alabama Brigade, one or two regiments from Ramseur's Brigade and a part of the brigade of General R. D. Johnston. But I remember well that a few days thereafter, we had in the company a Richmond paper, giving an account of the battle as communicated by an army correspondent, as having been won and the lost line recovered by certain Virginia brigades; this, indeed, was quite a common thing with the Richmond papers. As we recaptured the line the brave artillermen, one company of which was the Richmond Howitzers, as fine a body of men as ever wore a uniform, rushed up with rammers in hand; wheeled the guns to their places and commenced pouring canister into the ranks of the re-



treating foe. We then saw why it was that we had not been fired upon by our own guns. The artillerymen had carried away the rammers. Thus ended the bloody engagement of 10 May. The ground was covered with the dead and wounded from both armies. The gallant Colonel Brabble, of the Thirty second North Carolina, of our brigade, was among the former.

If space permitted, I would be glad here to give instances of individual acts of heroism witnessed by me in this and subsequent engagements in this bloody angle. The morning after this fight, I was asked by a wounded Sergeant belonging to the Sixth Maine Regiment, to help him down under the hill where he would not be exposed to the artillery fire from his own batteries. I did so, and made him as comfortable as I could. I filled his canteen with water, and learned from him the name and rank of the officer killed the evening before. I observed among the enemy's dead inside our lines, what I thought was an unusual proportion of non commissioned officers. I asked this Sergeant how this happened. He answered that the evening before, just before his brigade led the assaulting column upon our works, that this same Colonel Huling addressed the regiments of the brigade; reminded them that during the preceding battles many company officers had been killed or permanently disabled, and that he expected to keep an eye on the non commissioned officers of the brigade and see to it that commissions should be given the deserving ones. He said: "We came in front looking for promotion, and you see the result." He himself had a badly shattered leg below the knee. The 11th of May passed with nothing more than heavy skirmishing and severe artillery firing at intervals. Early in the morning of the 11th, General Rodes placed our brigade at the right of the division and in the space previously occupied by General Doles. The brigade took this as a compliment, and General Daniel, soon after the brigade was so placed, passed down the line behind the men and said to us: "I want you boys to remember that if the enemy come over these breastworks today, you are to receive them on your bayonets."



The night of the 11th was dark and drizzly. We sat with guns in hand the entire night, with a man to each company whose business it was to see that the men kept awake. We were so near the enemy's lines that I heard them knocking open cracker boxes and heard them call to the men to come and get their rations (giving "a" the long sound). We could hear, during the night, the sound of axes. They were evidently engaged in clearing away the pine bushes near the toe of the horse shoe to unmask their batteries. Just as the light was beginning to show on the morning of the 12th, we heard a sharp rattle of musketry away to the right, and suddenly the enemy came rushing over the line of works occupied by Edward Johnson's Division. They did not come in front of our brigade. The Forty-fifth Regiment occupied the position at the extreme right of the brigade next to Johnson's Division. It seemed to me then, as I remember now, that they captured almost the entire division down to the extreme left, and up to our right. I saw very few men go to the rear. We instantly sprang to our guns at the first firing. Our brave brigade commander came running up the line from near the center of the brigade to our regiment and observed that the enemy on our immediate right was confused in gathering up prisoners. He called the regiment to attention; gave the command, "About face," and, as I remember, moved the regiment at a right wheel, thus turning the regiment upon a pivot on the left company, and in this movement threw our backs to the enemy. While we were executing this movement, we were ordered to fire to the rear, which we did as rapidly as we could. When we had reached a point at almost right angles with the works, we were halted, ordered to about face, where we stood for a minute or two firing into the enemy's lines enfilading them. We were shortly commanded to right face and double-quick, the brigade following us. This threw us partly across the lines between the two caulks of the horse shoe, perhaps half the brigade occupying that position. In the meantime the battalion of artillery, down the line to our left, drew their guns from the breastworks and threw them into line about fifty yards to our rear, in a position several feet higher than the position we



occupied. We dropped upon our knees and opened fire upon the enemy, every man loading and firing as rapidly as possible. Immediately the artillery in our rear opened fire over our heads. For a little while the rush of canister and shrapnel above us seemed dangerous, but the conflict was on and in a short time we became accustomed to it. By the time the prisoners of Johnson's Division had been disposed of, the enemy in unbroken lines reaching back as far as we could see, came sweeping on in our front, but this combined fire of infantry and artillery was more than human flesh could stand and it was impossible for them to reach our line. The first men that came to our assistance was that brigade of North Carolinians commanded by the peerless Ramseur. This brigade always seemed to be in the right place at the right time. It came up and formed on our right, as I remember, in an open field, lay down for a moment, but soon, at the command of its leader, sprang up and dashed forward into the horse shoe. For a moment it seemed to me our brigade ceased firing and held its breath as these men went forward, apparently into the very jaws of death. They were soon enveloped in smoke, which the heavy atmosphere of a misty morning caused to linger over the field. Now, from this time until dark I know nothing of what took place, except that which occurred in my immediate neighborhood. Without moving at times for hours, we fired into the advancing columns of the enemy who were trying to carry our position, while Ramseur's Brigade, and doubtless many other brigades, were fighting on our right. We made during the day during the little intervals between the enemy's assaults, a little temporary protection composed of fence rails, poles and earth, behind which we sat on our knees and fired. We went in with sixty rounds of cartridges each. This supply of ammunition was replenished from time to time during the day. How many rounds were fired no man knew.

The pine saplings standing at intervals in the field in front of us and along on the sides of the old breastworks of Johnson's Division, were torn and shattered by minie balls. The enemy would take shelter sometimes behind the captured works, which formed an acute angle with the line we occupied



and several times during the day I saw pine saplings perhaps six or eight inches in diameter, finally bend, break and fall, from the fire of musketry aimed at the top of the breastworks. From some point along this line, the stump of a white oak, perhaps ten inches or more in diameter, that was cut down in this way, during the day, was taken up by the Federal forces after the battle and carried to Washington, and is there now preserved to show the effect of the musketry fire. There was not a moment, as I now remember, from daylight in the morning until long after dark that the battle did not rage in this horse shoe. The fire of the enemy's artillery from the higher ground near the toe of the horse shoe, and also from the right where Hill's men fought, was terrific the entire day. Just after a severe cannonading, I heard General Daniel, who was sitting at the root of a little tree in the rear of my company with watch in hand, say to Captain London: "London, how does this artillery fire compare with the second day at Gettysburg." I do not remember Captain London's reply, but General Daniel continuing, said: "I have been holding my watch and counting the shells as they came into these lines, and part of the time they have averaged more than one hundred to the minute." I do not think I am mistaken in my figures. When night came on, the tired regiments fell asleep upon the wet ground. The men were in no condition to sit up and discuss the losses. We knew that General Daniel had been borne from the field mortally wounded. We knew that two senior Colonels succeeding him in command of the brigade during the day had also fallen, and that when night came on the brigade was in command of Lieutenant-Colonel Jas. T. Morehead, of the Fifty-third Regiment. After the night's sleep, the soldiers looked about them and found that our losses had been terrific.

The next morning we occupied a new intrenched line that had been fortified during the night, by whom I know not, and we were again ready for the enemy. There was little fighting of any consequence along our part of the line until the morning, as I remember, of the 16th, when the enemy advanced just at daylight in heavy forces, but were easily



driven back without much loss on our side. On the 17th or 18th and after the enemy had drawn back their line into the woods, giving up the entire field where the conflict raged on the 12th, I asked permission of Lieutenant Frank Erwin, commanding my company, to pass the picket line and go over into this angle to make observations. It was a bright May day. There was no fighting on any part of the line, and by his permission I went. The pickets permitted me to pass, and I went over the breastworks to that portion of the field which had been occupied by our brigade, and then to the right, to the position which had been occupied by Ramseur's Brigade. On my arrival in this angle, I could well see why the enemy had withdrawn their lines. The stench was almost unbearable. There were dead artillery horses in considerable numbers that had been killed on the 10th and in the early morning of the 12th. Along these lines of breastworks where the earth had been excavated to the depth of one or two feet and thrown over, making the breastworks, I found these trenches filled with water (for there had been much rain) and in this water lay the dead bodies of friend and foe commingled, in many instances one lying across the other, and in one or more instances I saw as many as three lying across one another. All over the field lay the dead of both armies by hundreds, many of them torn and mangled by shells. Many of the bodies swollen out of all proportion, some with their guns yet grasped in their hands. Now and then one could be seen covered with a blanket, which had been placed over him by a comrade after he had fallen.

These bodies were decaying. The water was red, almost black with blood. Offensive flies were everywhere. The trees, saplings and shrubs were torn and shattered beyond description; guns, some of them broken, bayonets, canteens and cartridge boxes were scattered about, and the whole scene was such that no pen can, or ever will describe it. I have seen many fields after severe conflicts, but nowhere have I seen anything half so ghastly. I returned to my company and said to old man Thomas Carroll, a private in the company, who was frying meat at the fire, "You would have saved rations by going with me, for I will have no more appe-



tit for a week." On the 19th our corps marched in the afternoon around the enemy's right, crossed one of the prongs of the Mattapony River, and attacked the enemy on his right flank and rear. We carried no artillery, and, as it happened, that which we had hoped would be a successful surprise to the enemy turned out to be a desperate and unsuccessful battle.

We found a large body of fresh troops coming up as reinforcements from Fredericksburg. We attacked them. The engagement began perhaps two hours by sun and lasted until in the night, and under cover of darkness our corps returned to its former position. In this engagement our regiment suffered severely. The Colonel of our regiment, the brave Samuel H. Boyd, was killed while leading a charge. My own company came out of the fight with not an officer nor non-commissioned officer left. In this last charge the writer received a severe wound from which he has never entirely recovered. The next day the armies commenced a movement toward Richmond, confronting each other and fighting almost daily, which finally culminated in the great battle of Cold Harbor, 3 June, in which battle the enemy received awful punishment, and our regiment again suffered severely. While this battle was raging, I was lying helpless in the Winder Hospital in Richmond, listening to the roar of the guns. After nightfall the wounded began to arrive from the field. I remember how the wounded in my ward lay upon their beds and inquired, as the wounded were brought in from their companies and regiments, as to the result of the battle and as to friends engaged. There I first learned of the death of Major Smith. The ward masters and nurses were principally composed of disabled men, assigned to light duty. I remember that about 10 o'clock that night, a man was brought in from an ambulance upon a stretcher, and when brought to the light, was found to be the only brother of our ward master, and mortally wounded. The next morning I learned of the death of a dear friend and school mate, a member of Manly's Battery, M. F. Cummins. He was shot through the head while mounted on the breastworks, cap in hand, watching the effect of a shell fired from his gun; a brave, gallant fellow. Soon after this battle, the regiment was sent



to join General Early, and with his command marched down the Valley, crossing the Potomac about 5 or 6 July, and had a severe engagement with the enemy's forces, commanded by General Lew Wallace, near Monocacy Junction. The regiment marched from there to the suburbs of Washington and lay there for a day or two drinking water from the spring of Hon. Montgomery Blair, and, as the boys afterwards told me, they *interfered* with the milk and butter in his spring house, but this is hearsay and therefore not evidence. On 14 July the command recrossed the Potomac with quite a number of prisoners and camped about Martinsburg and Winchester for some time, occasionally skirmishing with the enemy until 19 September, when Sheridan advanced with an overwhelming force and attacked Early's Corps, driving it from the field. In this battle our division lost its commander, General R. E. Rodes. He was a superb officer and beloved by every man in his division. The army retreated to Fisher's Hill, where it was again attacked on 22 September, both of its flanks turned, resulting in a disastrous rout. On this occasion, as I was afterwards informed by the men of my regiment, the regiment held a position across the turnpike, which it maintained after the troops both on the right and left had fallen back, and retired in good order but not till it became apparent that to remain longer would result in its capture. The courage and fortitude of the regiment on this disastrous day served the purpose of holding back the enemy and covering the retreat of the army. It was on this occasion that Colonel John R. Winston, coming up the pike with his regiment in the rear of the retreating army, was accosted by one of his soldiers, who was lying on the roadside disabled by a wound, and who pleaded with his Colonel not to leave him to fall into the hands of the enemy. He rode to where he was lying, reached down and took him by the hand, pulled him to his feet, removed his own foot from the stirrup of his saddle, assisted the soldier in placing his foot in the empty stirrup, lifted him into his lap and brought him off the field.

The army fell back to Cedar Creek, where it remained until 19 October. On the night of the 18th the regiment participated in the flank movement which resulted in the



rout of Sheridan's army in the early morning of the 19th, which splendid victory in the early morning was turned into a disgraceful defeat later in the day, through the inexcusable blunder of some one. This ended Early's campaign in the Valley. Later in the fall the brigade returned to Lee's army and took a position in the line engaged in the defense of Petersburg. Here it remained through the winter of 1864 and 1865 in the trenches, almost continually under fire. The regiment had suffered severely during the Valley campaign and by the spring of 1865 had become a mere skeleton.

During the month of March, the regiment occupied a position a little to the right of Petersburg and just to the left of Fort Mahone and near the Crater. Just in front of the left of the regiment stood Fort Steadman which the boys called Fort "Hell," a powerful earthwork of the enemy.

On the night of 25 March, the regiment participated in an assault upon Fort Steadman directed by General Gordon, and again suffered severely. Hence Proctor, a private in my company, was one of the skirmishers who first entered the fort about daybreak. Inside of the fort bomb proofs were occupied by officers and men. Hence was a fine soldier, full of fight and fun. He poked his head into one of these bomb proofs, and called out with ugly words, to give emphasis to his command, "Come out of there, I know you are in there." He wore long hair. An officer, startled by this unexpected command, sprang out of his berth in his night clothes, snatched his saber from its scabbard, seized Hence by the foretop and commenced to slash him about the head with his saber. Hence backed out of the bomb proof, the officer continuing his hold, coming out with him. On getting outside in the open, the fight became an unequal one. Hence's fixed bayonet on the end of his gun while thus held by the hair, was no match for the saber in the hands of his adversary, and but for timely aid from one of his comrades, he would have been quickly overcome. As it was, he came out of the fight with many gashes on his head and face. The assault upon the fort was unsuccessful.

Along the line of works we occupied we had but one man to five or six feet, an ordinary skirmish line. On the morn-



ing of 2 April, just before daylight, the enemy advanced upon our works in massed columns; brushed aside the *chevaux de frise*, cutting the chains that linked the parts together with axes, and poured over the line occupied by a part of Battle's and a part of our brigade. Then commenced a struggle which, to my mind, was the most desperate of all the war, and which lasted until into the night. Our main line of works stood about four feet high, and was very strong. In the rear of, and at right angles with the line, had been built traverses, made by building log pens about five feet high and filling them with earth. They extended back perhaps forty or fifty feet. The purpose of these traverses was to protect the men, standing in line, from the enfilading artillery fire from Fort Steadman away to our left. There was just room enough between the end of these traverses and the main line for a man to pass. When the enemy broke over the line they filled the spaces between these traverses, the traverses being about 200 feet apart. About 200 yards in the rear of this line had been placed batteries of heavy howitzers, which, up to this time, had been masked to conceal them from the enemy. As these traverses filled, with the Federal troops, these batteries in the rear opened upon them with grape and canister. Major-General Bryan Grimes commanded our division, and I need not say that at this perilous moment he was with the men at the point of greatest danger, for he was always at such places. All day long the men of this division fought between these traverses, slowly yielding one after another when compelled to do so by overwhelming forces. The fire from the enemy's artillery up and down the line was concentrated on our struggling troops.

Huge mortar shells, 12 inches in diameter, came plunging down, sometimes exploding between these traverses and sometimes burying themselves in the earth and harmlessly bursting six feet under ground. Long before noon all of our batteries had been silenced, and the conflict on our side was maintained by infantry alone. I saw the men of my regiment load their guns behind the traverses, climb to the top, fire down into the ranks of the enemy, roll off and reload and repeat the same throughout the day. While in the midst of



this din of battle, time after time they would send up the old time defiant rebel yell. Late in the evening, I asked Matt. Seerest, of my company, whose cheeks from the corner of his mouth to his ears were almost black as lampblack from the frequent tearing of cartridges, how many rounds he thought he had fired. His answer was: "I know from the number of times I have replenished my supply of cartridges that I have fired more than 200 rounds."

It was a matter of surprise to us during the day that we did not receive reinforcements. We did not know that our lines were broken throughout their length and that every soldier in the army of General Lee was doing five men's work, but it was a fact. In the afternoon, the Petersburg battalion of Junior Reserves, composed of boys without beard, were sent to our assistance and fought like veterans. At last, night came, and under cover of darkness the army that had been so long engaged in defending the gallant little city, retired from its lines crossed the Appomattox and started on the long retreat which ended at Appomattox Court House. If General Grant had succeeded in successfully breaking through our lines at Fort Mahone, he would have cut the army in two, and the war would have ended at Petersburg instead of Appomattox Court House. I have recently been along the lines at Petersburg, and it now seems to me a mystery how those lines were maintained so long with so few defenders.

The rest of my story is short. We fell back to Amelia Court House on the old Richmond & Danville road, where we expected to draw rations. It is hard to imagine our disappointment when we ascertained at this point that by some cruel mistake, the train loaded with provisions for our sustenance had gone through to Richmond and was in the hands of the enemy.

On 6 April, we started toward Lynchburg. Shortly after sunrise we were attacked by Sheridan on our left flank, and all day long we retreated and fought and fought and retreated, arriving at Farmville after night, leaving thousands of prisoners in the hands of the enemy. We continued our retreat on the 7th and 8th with little fighting. On the night of the 8th we camped in the woods near the village of Appomattox, and



before day the next morning again started on the march toward Lynchburg. Our division, commanded by General Grimes, marched up the red road through the little village, passed the Court House and halted and formed a line of battle just behind the crest of a ridge that lay at right angles with the road. As soon as the line was established, the division was ordered forward in line of battle, no enemy in sight. As we reached the top of the hill, we were greeted with a fire of artillery and infantry. We did just what we had always done before; raised a shout and made a dash at Sheridan's line. The line was broken, of course, and his troops driven from the field. The division was halted and the men lay down to rest awaiting further orders. It was a supreme moment, and the fate of that division rested with General Lee, the man, who was almost worshipped by his soldiers. It was for him to say whether the conflict should there end or whether the remnant of his army should close the last scene of the mighty drama, by submitting to annihilation. In the kindness of his great heart, he determined that his soldiers had done enough, and he yielded to "overwhelming numbers and resources." During the seven days' retreat many of the regiments of that army had not eaten what was sufficient for one full day's rations. The ceremonies and capitulation having ended, the men returned to their homes. The course pursued by these scarred veterans during years following that surrender, in helping to build up waste places and establish stable government, in the Southern States, is a part of the country's history, and is as glorious as were their actions on the field. I venture to say that the conduct of the Confederate soldiers since the war, in submitting to its results, in bearing the burdens of taxation to raise enormous sums of money, with which to pay pensions to their old enemies, and all without scarcely a murmur, finds no parallel in the history of the human race.

The foregoing sketch has been written from time to time, between pressing professional engagements. I greatly regret that it had not been written years ago, while facts might have been furnished by the actors, most of whom are now dead.



I trust I may be permitted to say that my name does not appear, as Second Sergeant of Company K, in the Roster, published some years since, while the name of C. B. Mabson, Second Sergeant, does.

Some people do not believe in bad luck. I do.

CYRUS B. WATSON.

WINSTON, N. C.,

9 April, 1901.

NOTE.

On 19 May, 1901, I attended the unveiling of a monument by the survivors of the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, on the battle field of 19 May, 1864, the thirty-seventh anniversary of the battle. I here met about sixty-five of the said survivors, some of them attended by wives and daughters. I spent a day or two with them and at their request took part in the ceremonies and delivered a short address. This regiment fought immediately in front of the Forty-fifth North Carolina, and the conflict was bloody. The monument bears the following inscription:

"IN COMMEMORATION OF THE DEEDS OF THE FIRST REGIMENT  
HEAVY ARTILLERY,  
MASSACHUSETTS VOLUNTEERS.

*Three hundred and ninety-eight of whose members fell within an hour around this spot during an action, May 19th, 1864, between a division of the Union Army commanded by General Tyler, and a corps of the Confederate forces under General Ewell.*

*Erected by the survivors of the Regiment.*

1901."

Together with these gallant men of New England I went over every part of the field and was surprised to find how familiar the fields, woods and houses appeared.

I also went into the Bloody Angle about a mile distant, and had no difficulty in finding the places where the regiment fought for days and nights. The fortifications are preserved without change all round the horse shoe. The old

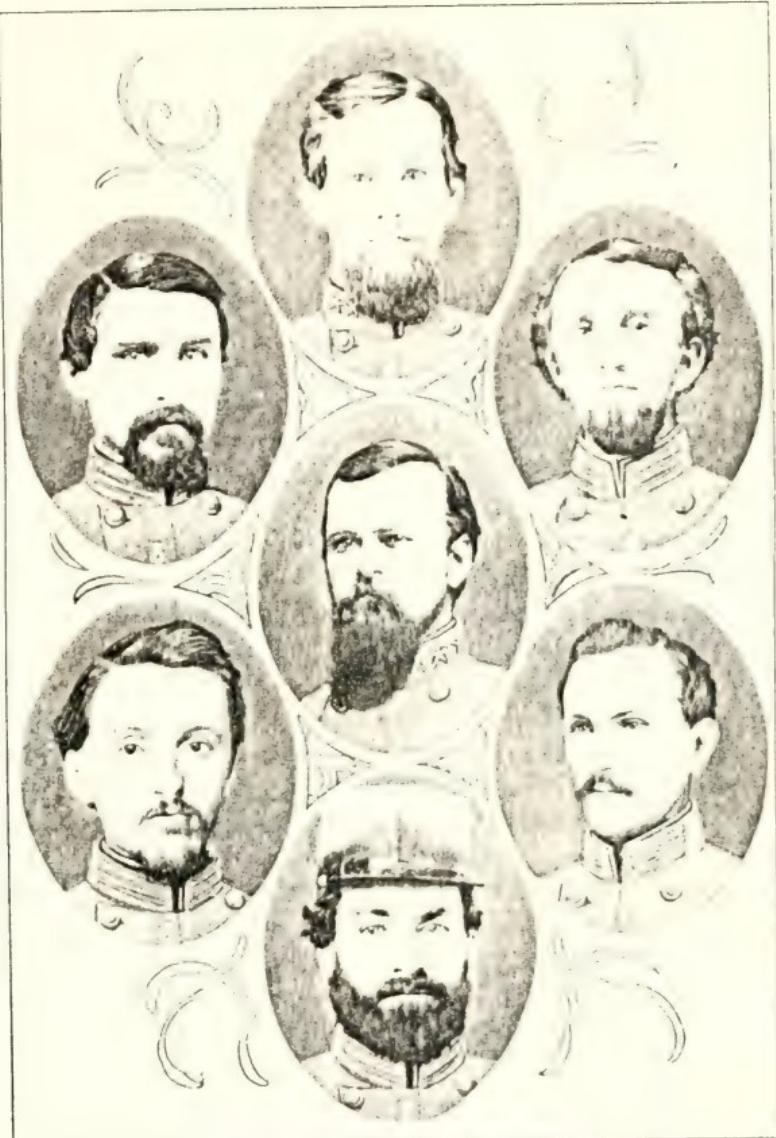


McCool house is just as it was thirty-seven years ago, the weatherboards perforated with bullets; the Harrison house almost ready to fall down from neglect; the trees that suffered during the battles are mostly down or dead, yet quite a number living, with marks of bullets and shells healed over, but plainly visible. There is considerable growth of younger pine trees. I brought away three blocks from a dead pine, with bullets embedded in two and a grape shot in another, which lies almost at the spot where the brave General Daniel fell. Another section from the preserved heart of the dead pine, too large for me to bring away, had nine bullets in it, partly concealed by the wood that had grown around them in the effort of the tree to outlive its injuries; many of the wounded trees seem to have recently died. It seems that after the armies left this dreadful angle, the dead of both armies were buried in shallow graves, or rather covered with earth, and the ground in the pine woods along these trenches plainly shows where the remains had since been removed. The survivors of Daniel's brigade should erect a monument on the spot where he fell.

C. B. WATSON.

3 June, 1901.





FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

- |                                          |                                             |
|------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| 1. W. L. Saunders, Colonel.              | 4. Robt. Preston Troy, Captain, Co. G.      |
| 2. A. C. McAllister, Lieutenant-Colonel. | 5. J. R. Heflin Captain, Co. I.             |
| 3. R. A. Bost, Captain, Co. K.           | 6. C. W. Carr, Captain, Co. G.              |
|                                          | 7. Adolphus Theodorus Bost, Captain, Co. K. |



## FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

---

BY J. M. WADDILL, SECOND LIEUTENANT, COMPANY B.

---

Well may North Carolina be proud of the part taken by her sons in the war between the States—proud of the large number of full regiments furnished, and of the promptness and willingness with which they were kept full, as shot, shell and saber thinned their ranks; proud of their gallantry on the battle field, of their patient endurance in camp and on the march; of their steadiness and reliability under all circumstances. Truly she has good cause to be proud of her sons. But of the long list of gallant regiments which marched away from her soil, none shed greater luster on the mother State than the Forty-sixth (Infantry) the subject of this sketch.

Others may have been as brave, others as patient and true, but few, if any, united all these virtues, which, combined with the perfect harmony prevailing among its officers and men all through those bloody years, entitle it to a topmost place in the record of the many faithful ones.

The writer (a boy in the early 60's) has little more than memory to rely on in outlining the experiences of his regiment. A third of a century casts a mist of uncertainty about even these historic events of the long ago, which is his apology for any errors as to dates, or other inaccuracies which may appear.

Promoted to the line from the Quartermaster's Department after much of the history of the Forty-sixth was made, he gives, prior to that event, the story as heard from participants, not having been an eye-witness of some of the facts narrated.

The many acts of individual gallantry, then so brilliant and conspicuous, have in large measure, faded from his memory, leaving but a shadowy recollection of a group of heroes.



bound together as a band of brothers, vying with each other on the battlefield, affectionately helping each other on the march and in camp, or tenderly caring for each other in the hospital:

The memory, indistinct though it be, of the daily, hourly sacrifices of these gallant ones brings even now the tears to his eyes as he recalls how, on the weary march, the last crust or the blood warm contents of the canteen were divided with those less fortunate—how, in the winter, on the bleak hill-sides of Virginia, those begrimed, unkempt knights sat in the blinding smoke about the camp fires, all through the long nights, lest if they lay on the threadbare blankets they should be frozen at reveille—and above all, how those thin, grey lines marched gallantly to their death in unbroken, unwavering ranks, closing up the gaps made by shot and shell, as they rushed onward to their graves.

Grand and glorious record is that of the hosts of the South which emblazons the page of history with a brilliancy surpassed only by that bloodless, but no less heroic battle of life, when returned to their blasted homes, they began the struggle for bread and raiment for loved ones, absolutely empty handed.

What success has crowned their efforts is best illustrated in the well-filled barns, the numberless tall factory chimneys, and the busy marts of numerous populous cities all over the once Southern Confederacy.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE REGIMENT.

The Forty-sixth North Carolina Infantry had its birth in March, 1862, at Camp Mangum, a camp of rendezvous and instruction four miles from Raleigh, and was composed of ten companies, as follows:

COMPANY A—*From Robeson County*—Captain, R. M. Norment.

COMPANY B—*From Rowan and Burke*—Captain, W. L. Saunders.

COMPANY C—*From Warren*—Captain W. A. Jenkins.

COMPANY D—*From Richmond*—Captain, Calvin Stewart.

COMPANY E—*From Granville*—Captain, R. J. Mitchell.



**COMPANY F—From Randolph**—Captain, A. C. McAlister.  
**COMPANY G—From Randolph**—Captain, R. P. Troy.  
**COMPANY H—From Moore**—Captain, N. McK. McNeill.  
**COMPANY I—From Sampson**—Captain, Owen Holmes.  
**COMPANY K—From Catawba**—Captain, A. T. Bost.

The organization of the field and staff was as follows:

E. D. HALL, Colonel, Wilmington.  
W. A. JENKINS, Lieutenant-Colonel, Warrenton.  
R. J. MITCHELL, Major, Oxford.  
S. T. GREEN, Surgeon, Warren county.  
V. O. THOMPSON, Assistant Surgeon, Warren county.  
J. A. MARSH, Quartermaster, Randolph county.  
G. HOLMES, Commissary, Sampson county.  
RICHARD MALLETT, Adjutant, Cumberland county.  
T. S. TROY, Sergeant-Major, Randolph county.  
J. M. WADDILL, Quartermaster Sergeant, Warrenton.  
O. P. SHELL, Commissary Sergeant, Warrenton.  
T. C. HESSEY, Hospital Steward, Missouri.

The changes occurring in the composition of the field and staff from the organization until the final end at Appomattox were as follows:

**RESIGNATIONS**—Colonel E. D. Hall, November, 1863; Lieutenant Colonel W. A. Jenkins, August, 1863; Major R. J. Mitchell, June, 1862; S. T. Green, Surgeon, ———; J. A. Marsh, Quartermaster, March, 1864; Major R. M. Norment, 11 September, 1862.

**DEATHS**—Lieutenant Richard Mallett, killed August, 1863.

**PROMOTIONS**—Captain W. L. Saunders, Company B, to be Major, 1 October, 1862; to be Lieutenant-Colonel, 1 January, 1863; to be Colonel, 1 January, 1864; Captain R. M. Norment, Company A, to be Major, 1 August, 1862; Captain A. C. McAlister, Company F, to be Major, 1 January, 1864; to be Lieutenant Colonel about June, 1863; Captain N. McK. McNeill, Company H, to be Major, 18 March, 1864; Surgeon Jenkins, of Charleston, S. C., appointed surgeon upon the resignation of Surgeon S. T. Green; Sergeant-



Major T. S. Troy, to be Second Lieutenant of Company F., succeeded by T. W. Wright, of Wilmington; Quartermaster Sergeant, J. M. Waddill, to be Second Lieutenant Company B. September, 1864.

For a few weeks after its organization the regiment remained at Camp Mangum, receiving instruction in the art of war at the hands of sundry drill masters, removing thence to Goldsboro, N. C., when after a stay of a few weeks it was hurried to Richmond, Va., arriving there on the day of the battle of Seven Pines.

Near Richmond the Forty-sixth was brigaded with the following commands, under Brigadier-General J. G. Walker, as follows: Twenty-seventh North Carolina Regiment, Forty-eighth North Carolina Regiment, Third Arkansas Regiment, Thirtieth Virginia Regiment, Second Georgia Battalion, Cooper's Battery of Artillery.

Previous to the Seven Days battles the regiment was stationed at Drewry's Bluff in support of the batteries at that place, when it was recalled to Richmond and sent to strengthen the army already engaged in the struggle with McClellan, which resulted in that officer's now historic "Change of Base."

During these trying days the regiment was but little under fire, being usually in reserve, though it sustained a few casualties at Malvern Hill from the shells of the gunboats in the river.

Pending the removal of the Federal army to its new field of operations in Maryland, the Forty sixth occupied various positions around Richmond, mainly at Hanover Junction.

The larger portion of the Confederate army had proceeded northward before marching orders were received to follow, and thus was lost the opportunity of a participation in the brilliant victory at Second Manassas.

Following the main body, the regiment marched toward Rapidan Station, where it bivouacked for some days--thence on toward Culpepper, encamping on the battlefield of Cedar Run; thence on to Warrenton, passing over the field of Second Manassas, over which lay scattered hundreds of dead bodies, rotting in the sun--thence to Leesburg and beyond,



crossing the Potomac at "The Upper Ford" to the music of "My Maryland" from hundreds of soldiers' throats.

At Buekeyetown, Md., a halt was made, at which place the tired and footsore men rested for three days, moving thence to Frederick City, Md. Thence the regiment moved at night, in a southeasterly direction, for the destruction of something in the nature of an aqueduct or canal lock (the Monocacy Bridge), but exactly what it was, few in the regiment knew, as the night was pitch dark and the country totally unknown.

Nothing was accomplished, however, and at dawn a hurried movement southward, was begun, continuing all day and far into the succeeding night, when the Potomac was again crossed at a ford near Point-of-Rocks just before daylight. This ford will ever be remembered as one of the many impossibilities (?) triumphed over by Lee's foot cavalry.

The chill of the water, the multitude of boulders which literally covered the bottom of the river, coupled with the depth of the stream (which came to the shoulders of the shorter men) all served to impress this bit of experience indelibly upon the memories of those who took that early morning dip.

Here, in the early gray of the dawn, by some mistake, the Forty-sixth received a volley from one of General Ransom's regiments, resulting in a few minor casualties.

Having rested for a day on the Virginia shore, line of march was taken up for Harper's Ferry, where the regiment took part in the operations, resulting in the surrender of that stronghold with 11,000 prisoners, with slight loss to the Confederates.

From Harper's Ferry the command moved to Shepherdstown, Va., arriving on 16 September, crossed immediately over into Maryland and was once more united with the Army of Northern Virginia.

In the great battle of the 17th, near Sharpsburg, Md., the Forty-sixth bore a conspicuous part, calling forth from the division commander especial mention of its gallant colonel and staff for distinguished bravery and coolness under fire, as well as for the line, which received the shock of battle like veterans of a hundred fields.



It was said by an eye-witness of one of the charges of the Forty-sixth, in which a force of the enemy was driven from its position and his guns captured, that "he hoped for their own sakes that the Forty-sixth North Carolina would soon learn the difference between the deliberation of a dress parade and a charge over an open field in the face of largely superior numbers." During the day the regiment occupied several different positions of importance and great danger, in which on every occasion it exhibited that steadiness and coolness which was to characterize its record all through the eventful years to follow. Space allotted to this sketch forbids details of this or other engagements in which the regiment participated. The losses for the day aggregated about eighty, being fully one-fourth of the number in line. It is proper to explain, in view of the small number of men in line at Sharpsburg, that this was the first forced march undertaken by the regiment, and in the mad rush from Harper's Ferry to Sharpsburg, many of the men were physically unequal to the task and fell by the wayside from exhaustion, rejoining the regiment, some during the engagement, others coming up during the next two or three days.

The Potomac was again crossed on the night of 18 September with the army in perfect order, and position taken up near Martinsburg, where for several days the men were engaged in destroying railway tracks and bridges in that vicinity.

The next stop of importance was at Winchester, where a stay of two or three weeks was made. Here, in this then land of plenty, the men revelled in the best of fresh beef, vegetables, fruits, not forgetting the honey, needing nothing for the stomach's sake, save "salt," which commanded a price near its weight in gold.

A short time after Sharpsburg General J. G. Walker, who had commanded the brigade, was promoted to a division in the West, and Brigadier General John R. Cooke was assigned to the command and held this position to the close of the war.

The men of the Forty-sixth parted with General Walker with unusual regret, having learned, in the brief period in which he commanded the brigade, to regard him with the



highest esteem, for his care of the force under his command, as well as for his courage and coolness under the most trying conditions.

General Cooke assumed command of the brigade almost a stranger to the men of the Forty-sixth, and many a doubt was expressed as to the ability of "that kid" (as he was at first called) to handle the brigade, being almost boyish in his appearance.

A year or less thereafter all doubts had vanished, for "that kid" had proven his ability on many occasions. It is doubtful if any general officer in the army, with the exception of Lee and Jackson, was more beloved by the men of his command than was John R. Cooke. Young, brave, generous and kindly in his dealings with officers and men, there ever existed the strongest ties between commander and men, which lasted to the end. No braver cavalier ever rode to death than General Cooke.

From Winchester the next move was down the valley and through Ashby's Gap, encamping for several days at Upperville, on the top of the Blue Ridge.

From Upperville, on 31 October, the command moved in the direction of Culpepper Court House, stopping for a brief rest at Orleans.

Marching by easy stages, pausing here and there for a day or two, the regiment made its way to Fredericksburg, arriving in front of that place 22 November. The last five days was a forced march in a continuous downpour of rain.

The experiences of the men on this march across Virginia were very severe—poorly clad, many barefooted—little or no camp equipage and with an almost unprecedented spell of bad weather, all conspired to the utterance of some bad language, which history does not require should be reproduced literally.

From 22 March to 11 December the regiment remained in camp two or three miles from Fredericksburg, when it took position at the foot of the heights fronting the little city, and immediately behind the stone wall on Marye's Heights.

Here it awaited the attack of Burnside, and bore a full share in that historic slaughter. In comparative security,



protected by the wall about breast high, all day long it shot down the brave men who charged again and again across the level plain in front, vainly yet most gallantly striving to accomplish an impossibility. The loss in the regiment in killed and wounded during the day was seventy-one. Among the wounded was Colonel W. L. Saunders, shot by a minie ball through the mouth. It was related by those near the Colonel, that during a lull in the firing, he was enjoying a hearty laugh at some remark when the minie entered the wide open mouth, making its exit through the cheek. It was said to have been the most abruptly ended laugh heard during the war.

Among the lamented dead in this engagement was Lieutenant Samuel P. Weir, a young officer of great promise—a gentleman and a Christian.

The command remained in front of Fredericksburg until 3 January, 1863, when orders were received to move to a new camp ground, a mile away, which had been carefully prepared the day before.

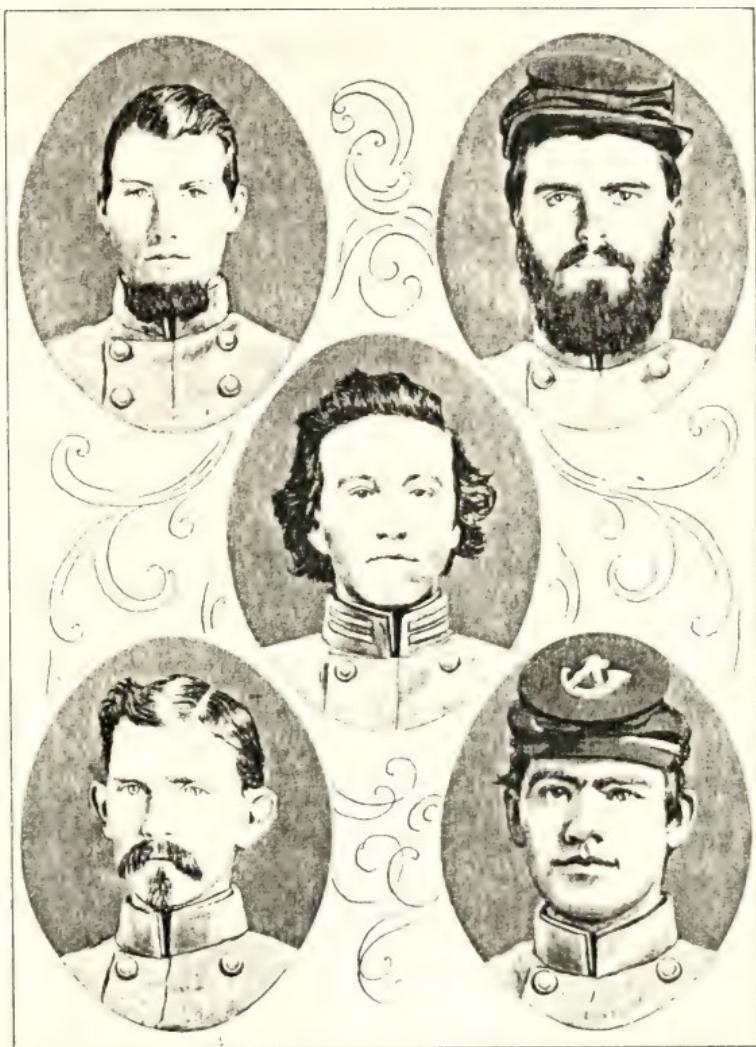
Accordingly, the men moved the next morning loaded down with rude benches, tables, tubs, etc.—such accumulation of conveniences as come, no one knows how, in a camp of some days. Instead of moving a mile, as was expected, the next step with any semblance of permanency was at Holly Shelter near Wilmington, N. C., which found the men in much lighter marching order, having laid aside their burdens of benches, buckets, tables, etc. Holly Shelter proved a haven of repose after the Virginia campaign. Some weeks were spent in this vicinity, the time being divided between Holly Shelter, Burgaw and Wilmington.

From this agreeable stay the regiment was called to Charleston, S. C., on 8 April, where a stay of a few days was made at the "Four Mile House," whence the command moved to Pocataligo, S. C., a camp dubbed by the regimental wit as "The Devil's Misery Hole."

Insects in millions invaded the camp by day and night, developing a biting and stinging power hitherto unknown to the up-country men composing the regiment.

Rations were scarce and Commissary Sergeant Shell made





FORTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

- |                                      |                                                                               |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Thomas Troy, Lieutenant, Co. G    | 3. W. C. Bain, sergeant, Co. G.                                               |
| 2. Henry C. Latta, 2d Lieut., Co. E. | 4. James A. Crews, Sergeant, Co. E.<br>(Killed at Petersburg, Nov. 12, 1864.) |
|                                      | 5. C. R. Thomasson, Private, Co. E.                                           |



affidavit before Sergeant-Major Troy that "thirteen typical South Carolina cattle yielded only eleven hundred pounds of blue beef."

With shouts of joy, the regiment bade adieu to Pocataligo about 20 April, proceeding to Topsail Sound, near Wilmington, where the usual army ration was totally disregarded for the luscious oyster, to be had in the sound for the getting.

8 May camp was broken and the regiment moved to Goldsboro, from whence it took a bloodless part in the Kinston campaign.

6 June the command left North Carolina for Virginia, where it was stationed near Hanover Junction.

Various camps were occupied near Richmond, the brigade being stationed here for the protection of the city, while the main army marched to Gettysburg.

Nothing of interest occurred here except a most brilliant engagement at South Anna bridge, between Company B, of the Forty-sixth, supporting a battery, and a force of Union cavalry, about 6 July, in which that company covered itself with glory. Thirty-three fresh graves were counted on the Federal position of the engagement. Loss in Company B, four killed and ten wounded.

Late in July, 1863, found the regiment near Fredericksburg, where it remained until 30 August. During this time the death of Adjutant Mallett, at the hands of deserters from another regiment, whom he was endeavoring to arrest, cast a gloom over the entire regiment.

This gallant young officer had endeared himself to every member of the regiment by his excellent bearing in the field, as well as the genial good nature manifested in his daily duties in camp. A detail under Lieutenant Mallett had been sent in pursuit of the party of deserters. By some means he became separated from most of his small force and coming up with the refugees he, with his usual fearlessness, rode up to them, demanding their surrender, when one of the party shot the noble fellow dead.

1 September, 1863, the regiment bade a final adieu to Fredericksburg, proceeding by the way of Guinea's Station to Taylorsville, where it remained some days, when on 25 Sep-



tember orders were received to repair to Gordonsville, where a quiet sojourn was had until 9 October, removing on that day to Madison Court House, this being the first day's march in the fatal flank movement to Bristoe. On this date Cooke's brigade (now composed of North Carolina regiments, as follows, Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth, Forty-eighth and Fifty-fifth) was attached to General Harry Heth's Division, and was thus attached until the close. The Division was composed of following brigades: Cooke's North Carolina, Kirkland's North Carolina, Davis' Mississippi, Archer's Tennessee, Walker's Virginia. Heth's Division formed a part of A. P. Hill's Corps, composed of the divisions of Heth, Wilcox and Anderson.

From 9 to 14 October the command made a series of most difficult marches over the ridges and across the rapid running streams which characterize the foothills of the Blue Ridge—in the effort to reach Manassas ahead of Meade, who was being pressed toward that point by General Lee.

Much of the distance was covered at night, over such roads as language fails to describe.

On the morning of 14 October, Cooke's Brigade took the advance and in the afternoon struck the Union forces in a strong position behind the railway embankment at Bristoe Station, with a number of field guns on the eminence in the rear. Before any support came up General Cooke, under orders, immediately attacked with great gallantry. In the charge made by this devoted brigade, the gallant Cooke fell, shot in the forehead, when the command devolved on Colonel E. D. Hall, of the Forty-sixth.

The unequal struggle was waged, with no result, save the loss of valuable lives; indeed a disaster was only averted by a rapid change of front by the Forty-sixth under Colonel Hall's immediate lead by which the enemy's left flank movement was checked. This movement, made under a heavy fire from both infantry and artillery, elicited great praise, and added new laurels to the record of the Forty-sixth for steadiness and deliberation. The effort to dislodge the enemy from his position proving futile, the command was withdrawn in good or-



der, out of rifle shot, which position it held until the next morning, by which time the enemy had disappeared.

It was said that General Lee most severely criticised General A. P. Hill for this blunder—that of sending a force of only two small brigades (Cooke's and Kirkland's) against overwhelming odds strongly intrenched, with ten or twelve regiments in reserve, who never fired a gun. Such a course was then, and is yet unaccountable, on the part of a commanding officer of undeniable ability.

In this unfortunate affair the Forty-sixth had about sixty casualties—the configuration of the ground over which it fought only saving it from a much severer loss.

On 18 October the command crossed the Rappahannock on pontoons, which were necessary, the river being much swollen, and went into what was at the time supposed to be winter quarters.

About this time the Forty-sixth lost its brilliant Colonel, E. D. Hall, who resigned to accept a civil office in North Carolina. Col. Hall had brought the regiment up to a high standard in every respect—a brave man, a good disciplinarian, the service lost, in his resignation, a most valuable and efficient officer—and it was with much regret that his regiment bade him farewell. On the hillside, near the Rapidan, huts were built and the men proceeded to make themselves comfortable, but the hope of a winter's rest was rudely dissipated by being suddenly ordered, on 8 November, to a position two miles from Culpepper Court House to oppose Meade's threatened advance, who had already captured a large portion of Hoke's and Hayes' Brigades. Expectations of a general engagement were not realized, and 12 November found the Forty-sixth in camp near Rapidan Station, on the south bank of the river, from which on 27 of November it again moved to confront Meade at Mine Run. Here the army entrenched and awaited the attack, which never came. The artillery was at times engaged, and there were a few casualties in the brigade, but no loss in the Forty-sixth.

From this date until 8 February, 1864, the regiment occupied its winter quarters near Rapidan, the monotony varied



by one or two bloodless and brief expeditions to the left wing of the army, caused by Federal cavalry demonstrations.

On 8 February, new quarters near Orange Court House having been constructed, the command again moved. This camp was the best yet occupied, in a well-wooded and watered section, and the severe winter of 1863-'64 —what remained of it—was spent here in comparative comfort.

The monotony here was unbroken by any event worth recording save possibly the great battle of "The Snow," which took place on 23 March, the snow being about fifteen inches deep and is thus chronicled. On the morning of this eventful day, the Twenty-seventh North Carolina challenged to mortal combat the Forty-sixth North Carolina. As the two regiments were getting into position, a long line of gray skirmishers from the direction of Kirkland's camp announced the fact that Cooke's command was to defend itself from the onslaught of that gallant brigade. Hastily sending word to the other Cooke regiments to come to the support, the Twenty-seventh and Forty-sixth rushed upon Kirkland.

For an hour the fight raged furiously, ending in the utter rout of the brave Kirklandites who were driven pell mell out of their quarters, the victors appropriating to their own use and behoof all the cooking utensils to be found therein. That evening orders were issued to company commanders to see that all such utensils were promptly returned.

Diligent search was made, but as every man found in possession of a cooking vessel vowed that "he had owned it for many months," it is doubtful if a single article was ever returned.

The Kirkland men being dissatisfied, sent a formal challenge to Cooke, for a "settlement" the next day, which was had in a ceremonious way in presence of an immense crowd of onlookers, including a number of general officers with their staffs from other commands.

The result was disastrous in the extreme, to Cooke's command, which was utterly routed, losing nearly one half its officers and men as prisoners of war, who were confined and informed that they would be detained until the "skillets" were produced, but the approach of night and the increasing cold frustrated this purpose and all hands returned to their



huts, good friends. A number of minor casualties resulted from this wholesale fun, but only one of a serious nature.

On 30 March, Governor Z. B. Vance addressed the brigade, closing with a series of anecdotes, which sent the men to their quarters in excellent good humor. It was observed that the Governor did not once allude to Holden and his adherents, these being the then absorbing topics in North Carolina.

The months of March and April witnessed a series of revivals of religion throughout the army. It was hoped that the Forty-sixth derived great and lasting good from these meetings, more to be prized than any earthly blessing.

1 May found the regiment with comparatively full ranks, and by the restored health of the sick and wounded, numbering over 500 strong. The efficient Colonel, W. L. Saunders, who had succeeded Colonel Hall, having lent his best energies during the winter to bring it up to a high state of discipline, it marched away from its comfortable quarters on 1 May, 1864, in better condition than ever to meet the trials and struggles of its last and most terrible campaign.

On 5 May, in the dense undergrowth of the "Wilderness," the Union army was encountered—the Forty-sixth being in line immediately on the plank road, Company B being in the road. The record of that day of butchery has often been written. A butchery pure and simple it was, unrelieved by any of the arts of war in which the exercise of military skill and tact robs the hour of some of its horrors. It was a mere slugging match in a dense thicket of small growth, where men but a few yards apart fired through the brushwood for hours, ceasing only when exhaustion and night commanded a rest.

The fight in General Cooke's front was opened by the gallant Wishart with his skirmishers, who in the dense brush, ran right into the enemy before he knew their whereabouts, receiving a volley at but a few paces distance, which laid low more than half our number, including their fearless commander severely wounded.

All during that terrible afternoon, the Forty-sixth held its own, now gaining, now losing—resting at night on the ground over which it had fought, surrounded by the dead and wound-



ed of both sides. Early on the morning of the 6th, the battle was renewed with increased vigor by the enemy who had received reinforcements during the night, and it was not long before the heavier weight of the Union attack began to slowly press back the decimated Confederate line. Matters were assuming a serious aspect when Longstreet's Corps, fresh from the west, with Lee at its head, trotted through the weakened line and forming under fire, soon had the enemy checked, driving him back to his original position. The writer had the pleasure of witnessing this glorious scene—the most soul-inspiring sight the imagination can conceive, and one never to be forgotten.

The night of the 6th the list of casualties was hastily made up—possibly not accurate—as follows: Forty-sixth North Carolina, killed 39, wounded 251, total 290, out of an effective strength of 540 men. The following were instantly killed: Captain N. N. Fleming, of Company B; Lieutenant George Horah, of Company B; Lieutenant J. A. B. Blue, of Company H; Lieutenant T. S. Troy, of Company G. Wounded: Colonel W. L. Saunders, Captain A. T. Bost, of Company K; Lieutenant F. M. Wishart, of Company A; Lieutenant T. G. Jenkins, of Company C.

After the 6th, Grant's famous left flank movement began; the Forty-sixth on the front line almost daily until Appomattox.

On 10 May, the regiment was again engaged at Spottsylvania Court House, where Cooke's Brigade made a most brilliant and successful charge on the enemy's batteries—loss not heavy, except in Company C, (Captain S. W. Jones) who lost three killed and eight wounded. Officers wounded: Captain S. W. Jones, of Company C; Lieutenant Routh, of Company K, mortally.

Again on 12 May was the Forty-sixth engaged—suffering slightly. From the 12th to 19th, the Forty-sixth was continuously in line, confronting the enemy—with small loss.

The continual lateral movement of both armies brought them near Mechanicsville, on 28 May, being a series of skirmishings to this date.

On 2 and 3 June the entire brigade did some handsome



work near Mechanicsville, receiving the highest encomiums from the Richmond *Examiner* which was said to have praise only for Virginians.

From 3 to 12 June, the Forty-sixth well entrenched, confronted the enemy at very close quarters—so close that conversation could be carried on between the opposing forces.

12 June, the sidelong movement was resumed. 15 June the regiment was engaged in White Oak Swamp for some hours—losing about twenty-five men. Here it was that Lieutenant Robert A. Small, of Company G, met his death. Few nobler spirits “passed over the river” during those terrible years than that of Lieutenant Small—a Christian and one of nature’s noblemen.

18 June the command crossed the James river, above Drewry’s Bluff, and occupied a position near Petersburg, in the entrenchments.

The line of march of the regiment, from the beginning of the campaign, was as follows: Along the Fredericksburg turnpike to “The Wilderness”—thence to Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction via Brooke turnpike to new Mechanicsville thence via “Nine Mile Road,” Williamsburg road, Charles City road, Darbytown road, River road, across Drewry’s Bluff pontoon bridge to the Richmond and Petersburg turnpike, thence to Petersburg—a path marked at almost every step with blood.

From 19 June to 22 August, the regiment occupied various positions on the front lines near Petersburg, being moved hither and thither as emergency required.

22 August the Forty-sixth took part in a brilliant affair, on the extreme right of the lines, on the Weldon Railway, driving from their works two lines of the enemy, but was checked in its mad rush at the third line by a withering fire of grape and canister—under which a number of gallant spirits sank to rise no more, among others Captain L. Branson, Company F, shot through the body by a grape shot.

25 August, one of the most desperate actions of the year was fought at Reams Station, mainly by Cooke’s and Kirkland’s Brigades. The enemy was strongly fortified with a quantity of artillery. Two brigades of Wilcox’s Division had



failed to drive them, when Cooke's and Kirkland's were sent forward, and in a most terrific storm of thunder and lightning, steadily advanced over the field, facing a deadly fire, and with a yell carried everything before them, capturing seven stands of colors, nine guns, 2,100 prisoners and a large quantity of camp equipage.

The bayonet was freely used in this affair, and Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister distinguished himself by his daring in leading the regiment to the muzzles of the cannon.

Loss in the Forty-sixth, seventy-three killed and wounded. Among the wounded were Captain H. R. KeKinney, of Company A; Captain A. T. Bost, of Company K; Captain Troy, of Company G; Lieutenant T. R. Price, of Company C; Lieutenant M. N. Smyer (both eyes shot out); Lieutenant J. W. Brock, of Company G.

After Reams Station the regiment returned to the lines around Petersburg, occupying different positions until December, when winter quarters were built on Hatcher's Run, near Burgess' mill, about ten miles from Petersburg and immediately in front of the enemy.

About 7 December took place the famous Bellfield expedition, noted for the suffering endured by the men from cold and exposure, which continued for five days.

From 7 December to 4 February the Forty-sixth remained in winter quarters, with little to vary the monotony.

5 February, 1865, took place the affair at Hatcher's Run, in which the regiment was engaged, with some loss, among the killed being Lieutenant J. W. Brock, of Company G, by a shell.

27 February Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister was detached from the regiment and with the writer as Adjutant, assumed command of a force of about six hundred men and was assigned to duty in the counties of Randolph, Chatham, Montgomery and Moore, North Carolina. This force was composed of the Seventh North Carolina, Major James G. Harris commanding, and two companies each from the Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth, Forty-eighth and Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiments, designed for the protection of that section from raiding parties of the enemy, as also to



preserve order in enforcing the Conscription Act. This force was actively employed until General Johnson's army arrived near Greensboro, when it was attached to General D. H. Hill's Division until paroled by General Sherman.

An episode of this bit of service was a lively engagement in the streets of Greensboro with a portion of Wheeler's disorganized cavalry, which undertook to capture the Government stores in the warehouses, and incidentally the town generally. The cavalry was driven out, but not without a number of casualties to both sides.

By reason of the above mentioned detail service, the writer can give no particulars of the regiment's experience from Petersburg to Appomattox from personal knowledge. Those whose duties kept them at the front near Petersburg state that the morning when Lee's lines near Hatcher's Run were broken, the Forty-sixth, with the balance of Cooke's Brigade, retired in its usual good order.

On the retreat to Appomattox its experiences were those of the army generally, continued fighting and starvation. Ever ready to do its duty, no apparent disaster, however great it seemed, shook its steady column, and up to the supreme moment at Appomattox its unity was preserved, its men, those whom the bullet and disease had spared, answering promptly "here," when the final roll call was had.

At Appomattox the remnant of this band of heroes laid down their arms to take them up no more forever, and the Forty-sixth North Carolina passed into history with not one member who but feels a just pride in its record, upon which rests no blemish. At the surrender the regiment was commanded by Colonel W. L. Saunders. Its strength is not recorded, but the whole Cooke's Brigade numbered 70 officers and 490 men. *Official Records Union and Confederate Armies*, Vol. 95, p. 1278.

Its torn and tattered battle flag which waved in triumph over many a bloody scene, was never lowered until by order of the immortal Lee it was laid down forever, but not in disgrace or shame, for about its folds shone the glories of Malvern Hill, Harper's Ferry, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Bristeroe, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Mechanicsville, Cold Har-



bor, White Oak Swamp, Petersburg, Reams Station, Davis' Farm and Hatcher's Run.

Not many remain to tell the story of its bivouacs, marches and battles, its patience and endurance, its hardships and sufferings for three years of hard service. Soon none will remain, but its glory is as fadeless as is that of "Lee's Army," whose fortunes and misfortunes it shared to the end.

OFFICERS OF THE FORTY-SIXTH.

(Compiled mainly from memory.)

COMPANY A--R. M. Norment, Captain, promoted, succeeded by Lieutenant H. R. McKinney, a New Yorker by birth, but a staunch believer in States Rights, who served faithfully to the end, wounded several times. The regiment had no more capable or efficient officer. First Lieutenant Frank M. Wishart, for many months, was commander of the regimental skirmish line. (The writer, during the latter months of the war, was intimately associated with Lieutenant Wishart, then Captain of Company B, and testifies to his absolute indifference to danger and his total ignorance of fear, laughing and joking under fire as in camp, always wanting to "get at 'em.") He survived the war only to be treacherously murdered by Henry Berry Lowry. Upon the promotion of Lieut. Wishart to Captaincy of Company B, his brother, Wellington Wishart, became First Lieutenant. He is remembered as the most silent man in the regiment, and as brave as he was silent. Sergeant J. H. Freeman was promoted to be Second Lieutenant and John Hammond from Ensign.

COMPANY B--Captain W. L. Saunders having been advanced to a Majority, Lieutenant N. N. Fleming became Captain and served as such until his death on the field at the Wilderness, when Lieutenant Frank M. Wishart, of Company A, was elected Captain, serving in that capacity until the close. Second Lieutenant George Horah, having been advanced to First Lieutenantcy, was instantly killed at the Wilderness. Sergeant W. B. Lowrance was promoted to Second Lieutenant and was transferred to another regiment. James T. Pearson and John J. Stewart were also promoted to Lieutenant. Quartermaster-Sergeant J. M. Waddill was



promoted to be Second Lieutenant, serving as such until sent on detached service under Lieutenant-Colonel A. C. McAlister.

COMPANY C.—Upon the promotion of Captain W. A. Jenkins, Lieutenant Stephen W. Jones became Captain, serving gallantly in that capacity until the close. Lieutenants, W. A. J. Nicholson, Samuel M. Southerland, Leon S. Mabry, Thomas R. Price and Thomas G. Jenkins. The latter two were several times wounded in discharge of duty.

COMPANY D.—Captain Colin Stewart was with his company in the one capacity from the organization to the final ending, and (I think) never received a wound. Daniel Stewart and S. M. Thomas were successively First Lieutenant, and Hugh Middleton, Malloy Patterson, John A. McPhail and John W. Roper were Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY E.—Captain R. J. Mitchell having been promoted to Major, Lieutenant R. L. Hellin became Captain, and later resigned, being succeeded by Lieutenant Jesse F. Hellin, who served as Captain until the close—a steady, brave, capable officer, ever at his post, in camp or field. James Meadows, First Lieutenant, resigned and was succeeded by Second Lieutenant J. J. Walker. James Wheeler, John C. Russell and Henry C. Latta became Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY F.—Captain A. C. McAlister, promoted to Major, Lieutenant Thomas A. Branson was advanced to Captaincy, losing his life on the field at Davis' Farm, near Petersburg, 1864, when Sergeant M. M. Teague, a gallant young fellow, was promoted Captain. His Lieutenants were J. A. Spencer and R. D. McCotter. James A. Marsh, originally First Lieutenant, was made A. Q. M. 17 April, 1862. Samuel P. Weir, killed at Fredericksburg, was Second Lieutenant in this company.

COMPANY G.—Upon the resignation of Captain R. P. Troy, Lieutenant O. W. Carr was advanced to Captain, and remained in command until the close—always at the post of duty, alike in the service of his country or his God. Ransom H. Steen, First Lieutenant, was succeeded by R. S. Small, and T. S. Troy, who fell at the Wilderness and was succeeded as Second Lieutenant by J. W. Brock, killed at Hatch-



er's Run 5 February, 1865, and Robert W. Stinson also killed at Petersburg.

COMPANY H—The promotion of Captain N. McNeill to Major, led to the advance of Lieutenant George Wilcox to a Captaincy, serving until the close. Charles C. Goldston, First Lieutenant, having resigned, J. A. Blue succeeded him and fell at the Wilderness, being succeeded by Lieutenant N. A. McNeill, who also shared the fortunes of the company to the end. John N. McNeill became Second Lieutenant 3 September, 1863.

COMPANY I—Captain Owen Holmes commanded the company from beginning to the end—was in nearly every engagement, with never a wound, if memory is not at fault. First Lieutenant O. P. White has (I think) the same unusual record. John C. Wright, Second Lieutenant, was succeeded by Thomas Owens. John D. Herring, Minson McLamb and Isaiah Herring were also Second Lieutenants.

COMPANY K—Captain A. T. Bost (if memory be not at fault) fell at Reams Station, and was succeeded by his brother, R. A. Bost, who, as Captain, receiving a severe face wound, was disabled thereby. No steadier men ever faced a firing line than these two. First Lieutenant A. Routh was mortally wounded while charging a battery at Spottsylvania 10 May, 1864. Second Lieutenant M. N. Smyer was mortally wounded at Reams Station 25 August, 1864. Lieutenants J. M. Hoover and Sidney Shuford were then in command until the close.

In commenting on certain names here mentioned, it will be borne in mind that by reason of longer acquaintance or closer intimacy, the writer knew more of certain ones than of others. Some company officers were appointed but a short time before the writer was called away from the regiment, and whom he knew only by name.

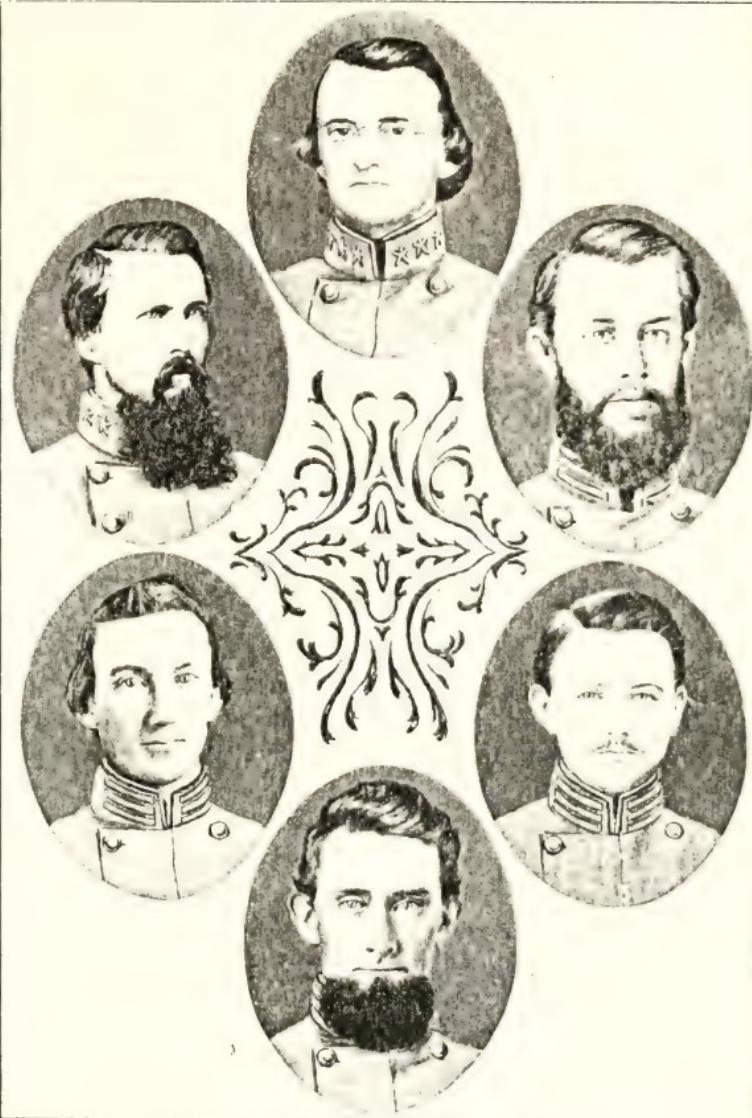
No invidious discrimination is intended, for it is distinctly remembered that no officer of the Forty-sixth was ever charged with doing less than his full duty.

J. M. WADDILL.

GREENVILLE S. C.,

9 April, 1901.





FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

- |                                         |                                        |
|-----------------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| 1. Sion H. Rogers, Colonel.             | 4. J. J. Thomas, Captain and A. Q. M.  |
| 2. W. C. Lankford, Lieut.-Colonel.      | 5. John H. Thorp, Captain Co. A        |
| 3. Campbell T. Tredell, Captain, Co. C. | 6. Geo. W. Westray, 1st Lieut., Co. A. |



# FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

---

BY JOHN H. THORP, CAPTAIN COMPANY A.

In March, 1862, amid the rush to arms of North Carolina volunteers, the 1,200 men who made the aggregate of its ten companies, organized the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment.

As the companies were coming together, New Bern was taken by the Federal General, Burnside, and those that had arrived at Raleigh were sent, without guns, below Kinston under Major Sion H. Rogers, to assist in staying the Federal advance. These remained there a week or two, when they returned to Raleigh, and with the other companies, now arrived, completed their organization with Sion H. Rogers, Colonel; George H. Faribault, Lieutenant-Colonel, and John A. Graves, Major.

On 5 January, 1863, Rogers resigned to become Attorney-General of the State, when Faribault became Colonel, Graves Lieutenant-Colonel, and Archibald D. Crudup, Captain of Company B, became Major. Graves was wounded and captured at Gettysburg 3 July, 1863, from which he died; Crudup became Lieutenant-Colonel March, 1864, and William C. Lankford, Captain of Company F, Major at the same time. Faribault and Crudup were wounded and the first resigned January, 1865, and the latter in August, 1864, whereupon Lankford became Lieutenant-Colonel and continued the only field officer. Hence, mainly by casualties in battle, the regiment was scant of field officers during very much of its severest trials, and frequently was without one. On such occasions it was led through hard-fought battles by a Captain, and some times by a Lieutenant. W. S. Lacy was Chaplain; R. A. Patterson, first, and after him Franklin J. White, were Surgeons; J. B. Winstead and Josiah C. Fowler, Assistant Surgeons, of the regiment. Thomas C. Powell was Adjutant.



COMPANY A—*Nash County*—It was first commanded by Captain John W. Bryan, who died in June, 1862, when Lieutenant John H. Thorp became Captain and commanded to the end of the war. The Lieutenants of Company A were: George W. Westray, who was killed at Cold Harbor; Wilson Baily, who died; Sidney H. Bridgers, killed at Bristoe Station; B. H. Bunn (since member of United States Congress) and Thomas Westray.

COMPANY B—*Franklin County*—After Crudup, its first Captain, was promoted, Joseph J. Harris was made Captain; was wounded, captured and remained a prisoner. Its Lieutenants were Harvey D. Griffin, who died; Sherrod J. Evans, Hugh H. Perry and William B. Chamblee.

COMPANY C—*Wake County*—The first Captain of Company C was Edward Hall, who died 1 September, 1862, when Cameron T. Iredell became Captain, was killed 3 July, 1863, and George M. Whiting became Captain, taken prisoner at Gettysburg and died after the war of disease contracted in prison. The Lieutenants of this company were Nathaniel L. Brown, David M. Whitaker, Marmaduke W. Norfleet and A. H. Harris.

COMPANY D—*Nash County*—John A. Harrison was first Captain of Company D, resigned in November, 1862, and Lieutenant Geo. N. Lewis became Captain, was elected to the State Legislature in August, 1864, when Richard F. Drake became Captain. Its Lieutenants were Benjamin F. Drake, resigned; William H. Blount and John Q. Winborne.

COMPANY E—*Wake County*—John H. Norwood was the first and only Captain of Company E. Its Lieutenants were Erastus H. Ray, Benj. W. Justice, promoted A. C. S. of the regiment; Leonidas W. Robertson and William A. Dunn.

COMPANY F—*Franklin County*—W. C. Lankford was the first Captain of this company, and when he was promoted, Julius S. Joyner became Captain. Its Lieutenants were J. J. Thomas, promoted A. Q. M. of the regiment; Sylvanus P. Gill, W. D. Harris (resigned) and H. R. Crichton.

COMPANY G—*Franklin and Granville Counties*—Joseph J. Davis was the first Captain of Company G, and was wounded, captured and a prisoner 3 July, 1863, and remain-



ing a prisoner, no other could succeed to the Captaincy. Its Lieutenants were P. P. Pease, Richard F. Yarborough, promoted to Colonel of another regiment; W. H. Pleasants, George D. Tunstall and George Williamson. Captain Davis was afterwards member of United States Congress and Justice of our Supreme Court.

COMPANY H—*Wake County*—Charles T. Haughton, first Captain of Company H, died in June, 1863, when Lieutenant Sydney W. Mitchell became Captain and was, to the close of the war. Its Lieutenants were T. L. Lassiter, Sydney A. Hinton, J. D. Newsom and John T. Womble.

COMPANY I—*Wake County*—I. W. Brown was the first Captain of Company I, and killed at Reams Station. Its Lieutenants were Charles C. Lovejoy, transferred to another regiment; William Henry Harrison, J. Wiley Jones and J. Rowan Rogers, a brother of the first Colonel of the regiment.

COMPANY K—*Flamance County*—Robert H. Faucette was the first and only Captain of Company K, and as Senior Captain commanding the regiment, signed the paroles of the commanders of companies on 9 April, 1865. Its Lieutenants were James H. Watson, Thomas Taylor, Jacob Boon and Felix L. Poteat.

After a short stay at Camp Mangum, in Raleigh, during which time it was drilled incessantly, the regiment was camped between New Bern and Kinston, where several weeks were spent in guarding our outposts, marching to near-by points where attacks were threatened, but never escaping to be drilled daily, and taught the duties of a soldier by the never-tiring General, J. G. Martin. It was here the men went through the sick period consequent upon the change from civil to military life; through measles and mumps and malarial fevers, from which quite a number died. Very few escaped sickness in passing through to the toughened condition.

At this time the predominant desire was to go to the scenes being enacted around Richmond, where General Lee and his illustrious co-generals were entering on that career which as



leaders of the Army of Northern Virginia, made them so famous. But the boon is not yet granted us. In July we go to Drewry's Bluff, at this time a position that must be held, and General Martin goes with us, and carrying us into a hot field, in view of delightful shade, continues his incessant drilling from morning till night. After a stay of three weeks the regiment is appropriately made provost guard of Petersburg. So thoroughly trained itself, it efficiently executed the delicate duties of guard in this important city, then a military center. During its stay the strongest of friendship was formed between civilian and soldier. Not a single unpleasant incident is recalled.

Early in November, to meet a threatened attack, we were taken to Weldon, where we took our first snow storm in camp without covering except such as the men hastily made with bark and boughs and dirt.

The regiment had returned to Petersburg when, on 14 December, it was rushed by rail to Kinston to resist the Federal General Foster in his attack on that town. We arrived late in the evening just as the Confederate General, Evans', Brigade was retreating across the bridge over the Neuse. In a jiffy we were unloaded from the cars, which were run off immediately, ordered to pile our knapsacks, overcoats and blankets, which we never heard of afterwards, and double-quicked to the rescue. As Colonel Rogers formed us in line of battle, General Evans learning of our arrival, ordered us to the north of the town to cover the retreat of his brigade which had been overpowered, and showing our full regimental front received General Foster's messenger, who bore his demand to surrender, and replied: "Tell General Foster I will fight him here."

Foster did not come, but night soon did, and we had again escaped a battle. At nightfall General Evans collected his scattered brigade and retreated to Falling Creek. The next day Company A, of the Forty-seventh, reconnoitered two miles toward Kinston without finding the enemy, and after night A and K went to Kinston to learn that Foster had advanced up the south bank of the Neuse. He attempted to cross at White Hall, but was driven back and continued his



march toward Goldsboro, to which the Forty-seventh was marched on the following day. On our arrival at Goldsboro we were marched across the county bridge and formed line of battle, in which we remained all this cold December night, to find at light that Foster had retreated and was now far away.

A few days afterwards the regiment is on Blackwater under General Roger A. Prior, protecting Eastern Virginia. Now for rigid marching. Every day marching thirty miles. All foot logs and small bridges are cut away ahead of us that the men may lose no time in breaking from column of four, and we must take the mud and water in the roads through this boggy section. And so, as we had been perfected in the drill and tactics by Martin, we were now Romanised by Prior. Frequently during this time a battle was imminent, but one did not occur. It was skirmishing, retreating, advancing on another distant point, over a large extent of territory to keep the enemy pushed within his limited lines.

#### ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

Thus inured to the vicissitudes of war, except actual battle, the Forty-seventh was, early in 1863, brigaded with the Eleventh, Twenty-sixth, Forty fourth and Fifty-second, under that splendid General, J. Johnston Pettigrew, and returned to Eastern North Carolina. The points of Rocky Mount, Magnolia and Goldsboro, as they were threatened, were quickly covered, and thence we were marched in D. H. Hill's army to the vicinity of New Bern, which town Hill threatened. Here about the middle of March, 1863, after a forced march of several days in bleak winter, Pettigrew, in the early dawn, drove in the enemy's pickets and passed one of his block houses, which protected New Bern, but by failure of other troops to co-operate time was lost and the enemy got one of his gunboats in action, with which our brigade was terribly shelled. Pettigrew being unable to reply with cannon, or to cross the water with his infantry, withdrew his brigade in regiments by echelon in such masterly manner, the men exhibiting the utmost coolness, that not a man was lost,



though the retreat was a long way over an open, level field. Soon after this we went to Greenville and thence to Washington, crossing the Tar in canoes in high water, when the regiment threatened the town and waked up the enemy's gunboats again; we lost one man killed and several wounded.

But the main object, on the part of the Confederate authorities, of these operations in Eastern North Carolina, to-wit: to gather in the supplies of this rich section, having been accomplished and General Lee making preparations for his second invasion, Pettigrew's Brigade, early in May, 1863, became a part of Heth's Division in A. P. Hill's Corps.

Thus after more than a year, perhaps well occupied, both in doing arduous, but less conspicuous service as in becoming thoroughly efficient for the sterner activities of actual battle, the Forty seventh Regiment is at length, and henceforth to the end, will be with the Army of Northern Virginia. It was well it had a thorough training, for soon it was to go through fiery trials, its ranks to be torn by shot and shell, to be depleted of its officers, leaving it to be led in great emergencies by a Captain, and the companies sometimes by a private. Whenever and wherever tried it was equal to the emergency. It responded with promptness to the command "Charge!" to the very end.

It was early in May, 1863, when we arrived at Hanover Junction, thence we marched to Fredericksburg, thence to Culpepper Court House, across the Blue Ridge mountains, through Winchester, and crossed the Potomac at Shepherdstown. On the north bank of the Potomac the disciplinarian, Pettigrew, delivered his strict commands against interfering with private rights and property, and right well were these commands obeyed. As we passed through Hagerstown, the eyes of our men were dazed by the fullness of an opulent city, but no one dared to loot it. On 29 June we camped near Cashtown, and on the 30th were marching rapidly into Gettysburg with the avowed object of shoeing our barefooted men. Already the non combatants had gotten (as they always do when danger is far off) to the front, and we were almost at our destination when a person in citizen's dress, on a farm horse, rode leisurely from the adjacent woods up



to the fence, on the other side of which we were moving, inquired for our commander, and paced up to the head of our column. On his arrival there the command "Halt!" rang down our line. Was this a spy? "About face—quick time, march!" and back we went; but not without several shots at long range being fired at us from both sides of the road. So we escaped the ambuscade that had been set for us.

## GETTYSBURG.

Early on 1 July the Forty-seventh was in the line which opened the battle of Gettysburg. It is remembered that Company A had eighty-two trigger pullers, each with forty rounds of ammunition, and the other companies were perhaps as large. The morale of the men was splendid, and when it advanced to its first grand charge it was with the feelings of conquerors. We were met by a furious storm of shells and canister and further on by the more destructive rifles of the two army corps confronting us. One shell struck the right company, killing three men, and exploding in the line of file closers, by the concussion, felled to the earth every one of them. The other companies were faring no better. Still our line, without a murmur, advanced, delivering its steady fire amid the rebel yells, and closed with the first line of the enemy. After a desperate struggle this yielded and the second line was met and quickly broken to pieces. The day was a hot one, and the men had difficulty in ramming down their cartridges, so slick was the iron ram-rod in hands thoroughly wet with perspiration. All expedients were resorted to, but mainly jabbing the ram-rods against the ground and rocks. This, with the usual causes, undressed our advancing line; still all were yelling and pressing forward through the growing wheat breast high, toward a body of the enemy in sight, but beyond the range of our guns, when suddenly a third line of the enemy arose forty yards in front, as if by magic, and leveled their shining line of gun-barrels on the wheat heads. Though taken by surprise the roar of our guns sounded along our whole line. We had caught the drop on them. Redoubled our yells and a rush, and the work is done. The earth just seemed to open



and take in that line which five minutes ago was so perfect.

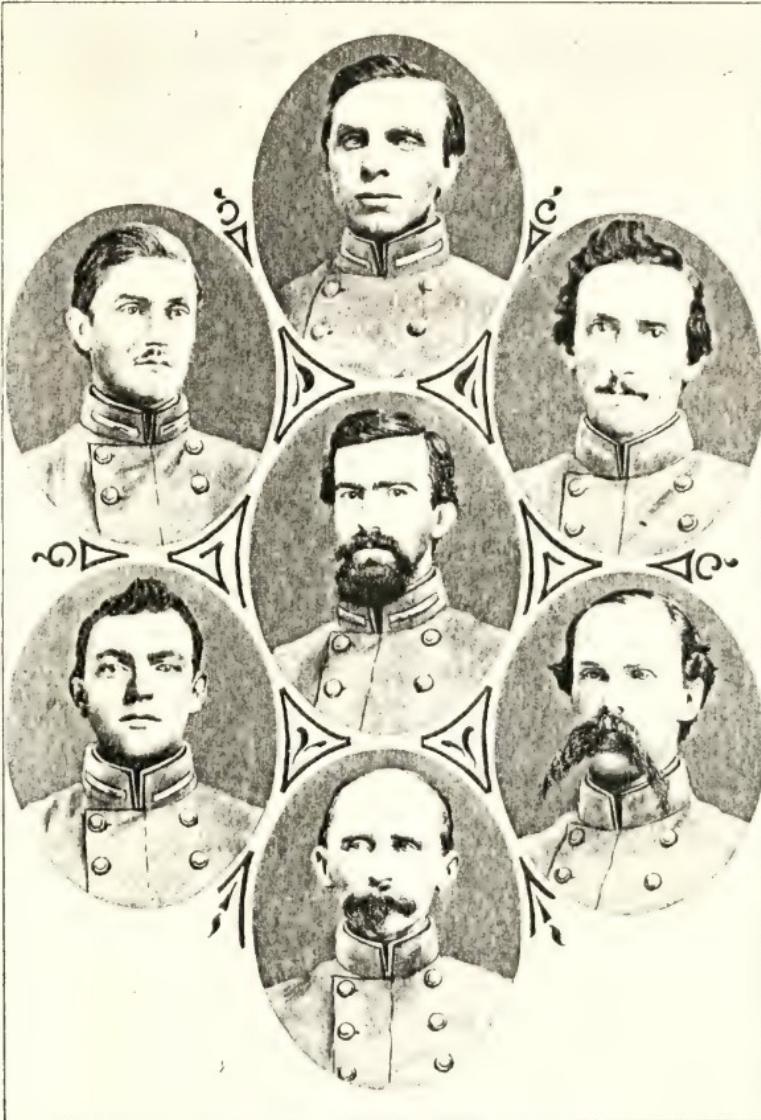
Just then a Federal officer came in view and rode rapidly forward bearing a large Federal flag. The scattered Federals swarmed around him as bees cover their queen. In the midst of a heterogeneous mass of men, acres big, he approached our left, when all guns in front and from right and left turned on the mass and seemingly shot the whole to pieces. This hero was a Colonel Biddle, who (if he were otherwise competent) deserved to command a corps. It was with genuine and openly expressed pleasure our men heard he was not killed. The day is not ended, but the fighting in our front is over, and the Forty-seventh dressed its line and what remained of it marching to the place whence it started on the charge, bivouacked for the night, intoxicated with victory. Many were the incidents narrated on that beautiful, moonlight night.

On the 2d we were not engaged save in witnessing the marshaling of hosts, with much fighting during the day, and at night a grand pyrotechnic display, this being the struggle on the slope of Little Round Top for the possession of the hill.

On 3 July the Forty-seventh was put in the front line preparing to make that celebrated, but imprudent charge, familiarly called Pickett's charge, though just why called Pickett instead of Pettigrew's charge, is not warranted by the facts. And why it has been said that Pettigrew supported Pickett instead of Pickett supported Pettigrew, is also incomprehensible. It is certain that the two divisions (Pettigrew led Heth's Division to-day) started at the same time, in the same line. Pickett's distance to traverse was shorter than that of Pettigrew. Both went to and over the enemy's breastworks, but were too weak from loss of numbers to hold them. Pickett's Division was perfectly fresh. Pettigrew's had just passed through 1 July in which even its commander (Heth) had been knocked out.

If further witness be sought, the respective numbers of dead men in the correctly recorded spots where they fell, supply it. But let it be distinctly understood Pettigrew's men appreciate that it was not the brave Pickett and his men, who claimed for themselves pre-eminence in this bloody affair.





FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

- |                                       |                                                                                                              |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. J. D. Newsom, 2d Lieut., Co. I.    | 6. George B. Moore, Sergeant, Co. C.                                                                         |
| 2. J. Willie Jones, 2d Lieut., Co. I. | 7. Luke E. Estes, Private, Co. E.                                                                            |
| 3. J. Rowan Rogers, 2d Lieut., Co. I. | 8. John Wesley Bradford, Private, Co. G.<br><small>(Picture in Supplementary Group,<br/>ith volume.)</small> |
| 4. Thomas Westray, 2d Lieut., Co. A.  |                                                                                                              |
| 5. B. H. Bunn, 2d Lieut., Co. A.      |                                                                                                              |



They remember, vividly remember, how Pickett chafed while waiting to make his spring, like an untamed lion for his prey. Perhaps the assault was a Confederate mistake. So good an authority as General Lee is quoted as saying this much, but that the stakes for which he was playing was so great (it being Harrisburg, Baltimore and Washington) he just could not help it. Later a similar excuse was plead by General Grant for the slaughter at Second Cold Harbor. The late Captain Davis, "Honest Joe," who led Company B in this charge, and who charged over the enemy's breastworks and became a prisoner, said the enemy was literally torn to pieces. But, then our "hind sights are better than our fore-sights." And may be, after all the best conclusion is that a kind Providence had heard the prayers for the Union that has ascended from both sides, though uttered not so loud from the South, and in answer, just wrote down in the book of Fate: "Gettysburg, 3 July, 1863, the beginning of the end." The writer, who was in the line of sharpshooters which preceded the main line of battle, witnessed an incident which (although not belonging to the Forty-seventh Regiment) ought to be recorded. He saw Brigadier-General Jas. H. Lane, on horseback, quite near the stone wall, riding just behind and up to his men, in the attitude of urging them forward with his hand; a moment later a large spurt of blood leaped from the horse as he rode up, and rider and horse went down in the smoke and uproar. This was about the time of the climax of the battle when darkness and chaos obscured what followed.

Surely the rank and file of the army of Northern Virginia did not realize the bigness of the event that had just happened; nor can we believe the Army of the Potomac did, inasmuch as it behaved so nicely while we spent several days in the same neighborhood.

The Forty-seventh now had had its ups and its downs. On the 1st as it double-quicked on Reynold, it had an equal chance with the enemy and had hurled 30,000 bullets in their faces. On the 3d they had attempted to march 1,000 yards in quick time through a raking fire of cannon and minies, with virtually no chance to use their minies—a soldier's



main weapon. The skeleton of its former self it returned to the place whence it began its charge and began business without a field officer, and during the balance of the day and the succeeding night welcomed the return of several of our members who, unscathed or wounded in various degrees, crawled from the field of carnage, for the space between the armies continued neutral ground, being covered by the wounded of both. On the 4th General Pettigrew told us that had we succeeded the evening before, no doubt our army would have been on the road to Washington and perhaps negotiations for peace would then be on foot. Surely the *esprit de corps* of our regiment was undaunted.

On the night of the 4th we moved off leisurely toward Funktown, where we stood up on the 11th to meet a threatened attack which did not materialize, and on the 14th were in the rear guard of the army at Falling Waters to cover the crossing of the Potomac. Here a drunken squad of Federal cavalry rashly rode on us while resting. Of course they were dispatched at once, but in the melee General Pettigrew received a pistol ball in the stomach from which he died in a day or two. Major John T. Jones, of the Twenty-sixth, was now the only field officer left to the brigade, and as we began to retire to cross the river the enemy furiously charged up and took quite a number of prisoners mainly by cutting our men off from the pontoon bridge.

#### BRISTOE STATION.

A few days rest was taken at Bunker Hill, thence we marched to Orange Court House, where we recuperated rapidly by the return of those who had been wounded and a goodly number of recruits from home. So that on 14 October the Forty-seventh carried quite a strong force into the battle of Bristoe Station. In this battle Kirkland's and Cooke's Brigades, being in the van of Lee's army, overtook Warren's Corps of Meade's retreating army, and without awaiting reinforcements made a furious attack against it thoroughly entrenched. This was a gross blunder on the part of our corps' general (A. P. Hill) who sent us in. Let it be



recalled that the ground over which we charged sloped down to the railroad embankment behind which were the enemy's infantry, and sloped up from their infantry to their artillery. Under these circumstances their artillery would have driven back any infantry in indefinite numbers. Of course we were repulsed with heavy loss. An incident in this fight was that the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh, forty strong, in going in this charge, saw a space of the enemy's front, not reached by the left of our advancing line, passed the front of the Eleventh or left regiment, and filled the space. The ground was more favorable for us on this end of the line, and the Eleventh and the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh captured the breastworks with the enemy behind them. The Confederates here were herding the enemy in squads to send them to the rear as prisoners, when the rest of the line being repulsed, these too, were compelled to retire. Our loss was heavy, including General Kirkland among the wounded. As on 3 July, at Gettysburg, we fell back to the point from which we started the charge, and for the same reason as on that day could not bring off our wounded who lay on the field of battle all night. The next morning, General Meade having made good his retirement on the fortifications at Manassas, we returned to the Rapidan. Here and at Orange Court House we wintered without military incident, save in frequent manœuvring; Meade and Lee, like two big bulls, each trying to put his head into the other's flank, and once at Vidiersville an imminent battle was avoided by the two generals doing like the king of France who, "with 40,000 men, marched up the hill and then marched down again." The Forty-seventh lost a man or two at Vidiersville by the enemy's artillery.

The health of the men of the Forty seventh is excellent, perhaps in part, because of short rations, and by the spring the regiment is pretty full again by returning convalescents and recruits from home.

General Grant is now in command of the Army of the Potomac, and by his hammering process proposes "to fight it out on that line if it takes all summer," which summer ran sharply into the following spring. General Kirkland has



returned to the command of the brigade, and Colonel Faribault to the command of the Forty-seventh.

#### THE WILDERNESS.

On 5 May, 1864, Grant moved out on Mine Run and the Forty-seventh Regiment deployed as skirmishers in the van of Lee's army, opens the battle, beginning with that of the Wilderness and continuing (with little intermission in the winter) till 9 April, 1865.

We first struck the enemy's cavalry, dismounted, and gradually pushed them back over five miles, during which we now and then lost a man, till the middle of the evening, when we came up to Cooke's Brigade just engaging the enemy's infantry in the tangled brush, the battle of the Wilderness. The Forty-seventh went in and mingled with Cooke's men in the fight, and so severe was the rifle fire and the opposing armies so near each other that neither advanced on the other. The night was spent in this position, and lines were not put in order; our men having been ordered to rest, as Longstreet's Corps was to relieve Hill's during the night. Longstreet did not arrive, and at dawn the enemy having ascertained our disordered condition, promptly advanced. Our men began to retreat sullenly, and fighting back at first, but as the day grew on our confusion increased until about 10 o'clock, when we met the welcome Longstreet. This splendid Corps came into line of battle by the order of "By the right of companies into line," and without any halt continued their advance in the face of the, 'till now, victorious Federals. It was a terrific battle in which the Confederates pushed the Federals over the same ground they had taken in the morning, mingling vast numbers of dead Federals among the Confederates slain a few hours before. The Forty-seventh lost no prisoners in this battle, but heavily in killed and wounded.

On the 10th the Forty-seventh was prominent in the battle of Wait's Shop, when General Early pressed Hancock back across the river after an engagement of several hours, wherein the Confederates advanced steadily, the Federals retreating without much resistance. This was a battle in which the powder used far exceeded a commensurate loss of men on



either side. The loss of the Forty-seventh was, perhaps, twenty. But the object of the Confederates was effected. Hancock left the important place at which he tried to break through our lines.

On the 12th at Spottsylvania the Forty-seventh was but slightly engaged. It supported our artillery which did great havoc near the bloody angle.

The succeeding fifteen days the regiment was more or less engaged, some of it at least being under daily fire, under which we seemed to grow stronger.

#### BETHESDA CHURCH.

On 1 June Kirkland's and Cooke's Brigades were desperately charged behind breastworks. The Forty-seventh was in splendid fighting trim on this occasion, and as the enemy started across an open field the order was given us not to fire until a certain cannon fired, and company commanders were to order the fire by file. The Federal officers threw themselves in front of their men and most gallantly led them, but when the cannon sounded the signal, our deadly fire opened on them within fifty yards and it was so steady and accurate, for our men were perfectly cool, that before the companies had fired a round, the enemy was completely broken and routed, a large number of them killed and wounded. Our loss was almost nothing as the enemy, depending on giving us the bayonet, withheld their fire, until they were repulsed. The sharpshooters of the two brigades, having previously been ordered, rushed after and harrassed their rear for two miles. This was the battle of Bethesda Church, and amid the tremendous events occurring, was the occasion of a dispatch from General Lee to the Secretary of War complimenting the two brigades.

While the sharpshooters were pursuing, the main body of the two brigades was ordered off towards Cold Harbor and participated in another battle at that place the same evening. In this last fight in which the Confederates charged the enemy out of their good breastworks, General Kirkland was again wounded and did not return to this command. General William MacRae succeeded to the command of our



brigade about this time, and through every vicissitude proved the equal of any brigadier in the army. Quite a number of the men of the Forty-seventh were killed and wounded in the engagement.

General Heth, with his division, remained on the ground taken that night, fortified and awaited to-morrow. Early on to-morrow the enemy massed a host in our front and attempted to break through us all day. They were in the woods, we on the edge of it with a small field behind us. This enabled them to get very near us, perhaps forty to sixty yards, and we learned by sound rather than by sight, when they arose to charge, and kept them in check by shooting in the direction of their noise, as they would attempt to encourage their men. It was literally an all-day affair. Among our other embarrassments we were nearly surrounded, and once when the enemy's cannon sent a shell from our rear and our men had craned their necks, General Heth coolly commanded an aid "to go stop that battery - tell them they are firing into my men." Fortune was propitious, and they did stop, doubtless, because they could suppose their own men to be fired into by their shelling, so close were we together. Our loss was considerable during the day, but at length night came. At dark a detail collected every canteen and bayonet and took them out, and as soon as it was dark good, we silently stole away by the only outlet left us.

From Cold Harbor we went to Gaines' Mill, just after Hoke had repulsed the enemy at that place, inflicting heavy loss. From Gaines' Mill we crossed the Chickahominy. Thence about the middle of June we crossed the James and a few days after the Appomattox rivers, and our division took position on the extreme right of General Lee's long line of defense extending from the Chickahominy to Hatcher's Run, a distance of about thirty-five miles.

Hatcher's Run and its vicinity are henceforth to be the scene of our operations, and it was around this flank and in this vicinity that General Grant did most of his hammering, and near here he finally broke through Lee's lines to begin the Appomattox campaign.

Once, in July, our division recrossed the Appomattox to



meet Grant's feigned attack on the north of the river, when the episode of the crater, on 30 July, took place.

On 21 August our division was a part of the attacking column to dislodge Warren's Fifth Corps from the Weldon Railroad. For about two days before and two after this date, the Forty-seventh was under almost daily fire, in which series of fights it lost several killed and wounded.

#### REAMS STATION.

On 25 August MacRae's, with Lane's and Cooke's Brigades distinguished themselves in the battle of Reams Station. Hancock had fortified this place and other Southern troops had failed to dislodge him, when these North Carolinians were assigned the honor of doing so. MacRae pointed out to his men how they could approach under the protection of an old field of pines, and we imagine the heretofore triumphant Federals must have smiled as they beheld the small force advancing against them, and intended to withhold their fire until we should reach a point from which we might be unable to escape. Suddenly MacRae ordered: "Don't fire a gun, but dash for the enemy." The dash was made, and behold the assault is successful. The result is several flags and cannon, a large number killed and wounded, and 2,100 prisoners. A Federal officer, as he sat, a surprised prisoner, remarked to one of our officers: "Lieutenant, your men fight well; that was a magnificent charge." The loss in the Forty-seventh was heavy, and it included an over proportion of our very best men. This was notably so in Company A. Men who seemed to have possessed charmed lives; who struck so quick, and were so cool and daring to pass the danger line, were struck down almost in a body. Many of them returned after recovery, but the regiment was notably weakened after this.

On 30 September General Heth attacked two corps of Federals trying to extend to our right, near the Pegram house, and captured quite a number of prisoners. On 1 and 2 October the effort to extend continued and we continued to resist it; but after several days doggedly fighting and putting in fresh troops, they succeeded and fortified themselves. It



was Grant's way, a continual extending his left with fresh troops and making his line impregnable with the spade and cannon.

#### BURGESS' MILL.

On the 27th the enemy again felt for our right flank, and at Burgess' Mill General MacRae's Brigade assaulted them, repulsing the full length of his line of battle, taking a battery of artillery and passing far to the front, discovered that the enemy were closing from both his flanks the gap he had just made. MacRae was on foot leading his command, and pointing to the perilous situation, asked them to follow him out, which they gallantly did by cutting their way out. Our loss here was very heavy in killed and wounded, but none were taken prisoners. Hill's Corps took a great number of prisoners. MacRae complained bitterly about his superiors in command allowing him to be cut to pieces when it could have been prevented.

Winter had now set in, and the men settled down with some degree of comfort in their rudely constructed quarters. Some attended religious worship by our Chaplain. The regiment in early 1864 had a good Young Men's Christian Association, but no sign of it was visible at the close of the campaign—the members of it having been knocked out. Some who could raise a Confederate dollar went to the theatre; yes, we had a theatre in Davis' Brigade, built of logs with a dirt floor and log seats, and such capers the soldier comedians and tragedians cut by torch light, and music by banjo and the fiddle! It was said the theatrical company made money. Camp life, however, in the winter of 1864-'65 was a hard one, and upon the whole a very sad one. These old soldiers of many battle fields, though they murmured not, knew a great deal, and a few who supposed they could bear no more deserted to the enemy, who stood with outstretched arms to welcome them. The Forty-seventh furnished very few of this class.

As General Grant received a steady flow of reinforcements he invariably sent them to extend his left and in the severest



weather the Forty-seventh was several times called out to resist the extension.

One of these was on 5 February, 1865. It was sleet ing and very cold when a large force of Federals again moved around our right to sever our communications. The Forty-seventh formed a part of the attacking force which was successful in driving them back. The regiment's loss was a due proportion of our total loss, which was perhaps 1,000, while that of the enemy was double that number.

Toward the end of March Grant had collected an irresistible force on his left, which was daily feeling for our right, and on 2 April broke through our attenuated line nearer to Petersburg and moved in our rear. At this time the Forty-seventh, lately reinforced by the last recruits from home, were further to the right to try to stem the torrent that appeared in that quarter. Lieutenant Westray, of Company A, with thirty men, were engaged on our old picket line and they held their position so well that even the enemy passed on both sides of them and left them in their rear, from which situation this little body made their way out, and the next day turned up for duty across the Appomattox.

The skirmishers of the Forty-seventh had done picket duty on the extreme of our right the night of the 1st and were returning on the morning of the 2d along the breastworks held by some Floridians. These were dividing out their day's rations, and if they had pickets out, they would evidently have been quietly captured. The head of a Federal cavalry column was approaching the breastworks and was within seventy-five yards, when our skirmishers halted, had a parley with the Federals and ascertaining they were enemies, poured a volley into them, which drove them off, and we moved off again, without having halted five minutes and without exchanging a word with our friends. Thus we saved them from a complete surprise.

Things everywhere on our side were now getting in a desperate fix, the battle raging, seemingly, everywhere. Our skirmishers, about 100 in number, of whom thirty were from the Forty-seventh, got up with our brigade near Southerland's Station, where McRae was so pressed 2 April that he must



need turn and fight. Two charges of the enemy were repulsed and the third was being made when a column of the enemy arrived on our left and rear. A fierce struggle ensued in which we were totally defeated, slain, wounded, captured, or scattered. Only a few came out, the river being in front, the victorious enemy in rear. By order all means of crossing the river had been removed. But the next morning when Lee passed up the northern bank toward Amelia Court House, MacRae at the head of our organized brigade, that is a few from each of his regiments, was in the retreating column as chipper as ever. Even the corps of such of his sharpshooters as had escaped retained their organization.

Passing through Farmville on the 7th our men snatched some rations from a government commissary store which they were in sore need of, as none had been issued, except on one occasion two ears of corn to a man. On the evening of the 7th we arrived on the field by a run, when Fitz Lee and Gregg's Cavalry Brigades charged each other, in which Gregg was defeated and himself captured.

On Sunday morning, 9 April, the Forty-seventh arrived at Appomattox, the last ditch, and was surrendered with the Army of Northern Virginia. When it was filed to the right of the road the men supposed they were going in line of battle to charge the enemy who were visible in front, but when MacRae commanded "Halt," and without any further order as to rest, etc., so contrary to his rule as a disciplinarian, all stared and wondered what it could mean. He dismounted and lay down, and we, too, began to lay down. The sad news was quickly learned, and then followed that mighty expression of blasted hope, which a witness will never forget. The Forty-seventh Regiment had no field officer. There were two Captains of companies, Faucette, of Company K, who was in command, and Thorp, of Company A. Company A had, in addition, Lieutenant Westray and twelve men; Company D had three men. The number of men of the other companies not remembered, but were about seventy-five.

The United States troops (now seemingly no longer enemies) flocked among us by the hundreds and showed their highest respect for their late antagonists. To see General



Lee was the burden on every tongue. There was no exultation; on the contrary they showed marked consideration for our feelings. If the whole country could have witnessed this sympathetic scene between the old Greys and the old Blues, seas of bitter tears and mountains of hate would have been spared.

A herd of fat, young steers, and many wagon loads of crackers were brought to us, with which we appeased our hunger. Through Monday and Tuesday we received our guests. On Wednesday we were paroled, and late in the evening we formed in our organizations for the last time, marched between the open ranks of the Federals and stacked guns. No Federal officer of rank was in sight. There was no music. 'Twas silent—very sad. We broke ranks for home.

And now old comrades (who may read it) this skeleton of a sketch is an attempt to write only the truth, though a very small part of it, of the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment. Praise, criticism or even mention of the heroes who composed it are purposely omitted. The merits alone of these would fill a large volume, and partial mention would be actual wrong. Is it not, therefore, better that whatever of merit, of honor, and of fame the dear old regiment attained we shall share in common?

JOHN H. THORP.

ROCKY MOUNT, N. C.,

9 April, 1901.



## ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT.

BY J. ROWAN ROGERS, SECOND LIEUTENANT COMPANY L

### GETTYSBURG.

I have accepted the task of writing this additional sketch of the Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment with alacrity, because I love so well its memory, and its many heroes of whom so many have passed over the river, though a few yet linger on this side.

At Gettysburg the Forty-seventh Regiment had the honor of being in the advance of all the troops and nearest to Gettysburg on 30 June, 1863. We had our pickets out on that night and next morning when the line of march was taken, Pettigrew's Brigade, composed of the Forty-seventh, Fifty-second, Twenty-sixth and Eleventh, was in front (Forty-fourth Regiment was on detached duty near Richmond). The Forty-seventh Regiment was in front of the brigade. After marching some distance from our camp on the morning of 1 July, the Forty-seventh Regiment was fired into from both sides of the road and a halt was immediately called, when the enemy was discovered to be advancing from both our right and left flank (being dismounted cavalry), from a body of woods which was away from the road on each side about 500 yards. Notwithstanding this was a great surprise to all of our regiment, you could plainly see pleasure depicted upon the face of every officer and man in the regiment, for we all were anxious for the fray. Every one waited anxiously for orders, which were given by our Colonel, G. H. Faribault, who ordered Captain Cameron Iredell, of Company C, to take five men from each company, making fifty, and charge the enemy on our right and ordered Lieutenant Westray, of Company A, to take five from each company and charge them on our left. All this was done quicker than I can write it. Colonel



Faribault then gave the order for our regiment to march in column to the right by fours, thus heading our column directly towards the attacking party, who were on the right of the road. Colonel Marshall, who was just in rear of the Forty-seventh Regiment with the Fifty-second, made the same movement with his gallant regiment, to the left of the road, thus the brigade faced three ways. The main line composed of the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second, faced in the direction of Gettysburg, while the two skirmish lines faced the enemy on our right and left respectively. As soon as the rear and left of the Forty-seventh reached the cleared ground on the right of the road and the rear and right of the Fifty-second had reached the cleared ground on the left, both regiments were ordered to halt. The Forty-seventh was ordered to face about and march on its side of the road, and passed the Fifty-second some distance. Then it was halted and the Fifty-second faced about and marched the same distance beyond the Forty-seventh, thus constantly keeping one regiment facing the enemy who was in our front trying to advance from that direction, while the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh were hotly engaged with them on the right and left of the road, respectively. This movement and fight was kept up then until the Forty-seventh was enabled to strike the enemy's line on the right of the road and the Fifty-second to strike the enemy's line, which was on the left of the road. This being done, a forward movement by the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second was again ordered, one on the right and one on the left, which was gallantly done without any loss except four or five slightly wounded. The enemy broke and fled towards Gettysburg at the second volley from the two regiments. The Eleventh and Twenty-sixth were not engaged in this skirmish. Marching in the rear, they did not have room to form in line in time, for the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second had about 1,300 men in line in both regiments. After repulsing the attack at this point we again marched back to the road, called in our skirmishers and took up our march, which was continued about one mile, when we were subjected to a severe cannonading from batteries in our front and here



we commenced to get into position and form line of battle for the great struggle which was about to take place on 1 July, 1863. Then the Fifty-second North Carolina, under Colonel Marshall, formed on the right of the Forty-seventh, being thus on the right of Pettigrew's Brigade, the Forty-seventh next, it being on the right center, the Eleventh and Twenty-sixth were on the left centre and extreme left, but I have never known which one of these regiments was next to the Forty-seventh. The line being thus formed, was advanced for a short distance to the front, where it was again halted with its line stretching far to the right and left, for whatever history may say, General Pettigrew had in line of battle that morning nearer 3,000 soldiers than he had 2,500, and they were all good and gallant men. Before night the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh North Carolina had lost two-thirds of their numbers, for when the word of command was given they rushed forward against a largely superior force which was stationed in the skirt of woods just in their front. The Forty-seventh suffered less severely on that day than those two regiments because of their disadvantages. The Forty-seventh was the next in loss, the Fifty-second being on the right of the line, suffered less than any other of the brigade on that day. But to go back, after our line was formed we were ordered to halt, and as the enemy was keeping up a rather hot fire upon our main line, skirmishers from our regiment were ordered to advance and drive them back out of reach of our line, which was done, but not until several of our regiment were wounded and our gallant Lieutenant-Colonel, John A. Graves, was slightly wounded on the leg, the ball first having hit the iron scabbard of his sword, which was hanging by his side. But see on our left our boys have charged the Yankees who are stationed upon a hill, and we drive them down the hill on the other side, pell mell. But now our gallant boys are met half way down the hill by a fresh line of the enemy and a severe contest ensues; our lines are thinned and the Yankees are continually bringing up fresh troops, but our boys stand it manfully.

A part of Anderson's Division was on the immediate left of Pettigrew's Brigade at the first stage of heavy fighting on



the morning of 1 July. Now when the rattling of musketry is growing to a perfect line of fire, the Forty-seventh is ordered forward. It is a grand spectacle. In the line of the Forty-seventh there are over 650 muskets, the men marching steadily to meet the foe, who are on their own soil and strongly posted, with a heavy infantry force and with artillery which at every step rakes through our lines, cutting great gaps, which are quickly filled up by our boys closing into the places of those who have just fallen. We cross a stream and then up a hill through a wheat field, and then in our front, not over seventy-five yards off, we see the heavy lines of Yankee soldiers with their guns shining and flags waving; the struggle grows hotter and hotter, men are falling in every direction, but the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second are pushing the enemy steadily back, and are going forward; the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh are contending with heavy odds both as to numbers and position. While the Forty-seventh and Fifty-second have the foe in an open field, the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh have nothing to shelter themselves any more than we have, and thus it is that the Fifty-second and Forty-seventh, having driven back the enemy in their immediate front, their lines swing around to the left. In this position they are charged by Yankee cavalry in our rear and on our right. Colonel Marshall was equal to this emergency, for he faced three of his companies about and met this charge, quickly driving the cavalry off with heavy loss to them. While this was going on the infantry in our front tried hard to rally their somewhat broken lines and regain the ground they had lost. This was a hot time for the Twenty-sixth and Eleventh. Men had fallen wounded and killed like hail from a heavy hail storm. The attention of the Forty-seventh was diverted from the enemy in our immediate front and almost before we knew it the enemy had rallied and was attempting to charge our lines. Besides, they had a number of pieces of artillery helping them, wherever the opposing lines were far enough apart for them to use artillery without striking their own men. At this critical moment Captain Cam. Iredell, who commanded Company C, which was the color company of the Forty-seventh, seeing one of his men



fall mortally wounded, rushes to his side and says, "My dear boy, I will try to avenge your hurt." He took his musket and continued to use it until he was struck by a shot from the enemy which caused his death, not, however, until he had seen the enemy again turn and flee. The Forty-seventh lost heavily in this fight of 1 July.

On 2 July we rested, cleaned our guns and attended to the wounded. Early on 3 July the Forty-seventh with the balance of Pettigrew's Brigade, was ordered considerably to the right of where it had fought on 1 July. It reached its position about 9 o'clock 3 July and remained quietly in line just in the rear of a Confederate battery until about 1 o'clock p. m., when a very heavy cannonading commenced between the opposing batteries, which continued until about 3 p. m., at which time the grand advance upon Meade's lines was made. On that part of the line where the Forty-seventh advanced, it was about three-fourths of a mile or perhaps a mile from our batteries to the enemy's lines. Our battery was situated about twenty-five yards in front of where the Forty-seventh had taken up our line. About 3 o'clock a slight cessation in the firing of artillery occurred and then the voice of our Colonel, George H. Faribault, was heard loud and clear, "Attention, Battalion," and this was repeated by the brave and beloved Lieutenant-Colonel, John A. Graves. Every man sprung into line and was ready to go forward, the men knew not where, for the ridge just in front of the Forty-seventh Regiment obstructed the view of the Regiment beyond twenty-five yards. The order was soon given to move forward, which was done in good order and without any confusion. Passing our batteries the field was before us, it was entirely open except here and there an old homestead, and one or two roads with a number of strong rail and post fences, some of them high and difficult to pass over. No one hesitated, no one faltered, but a good, steady quick-step was kept up. After leaving our batteries about fifty or one hundred yards the enemy commenced a terrific cannonade and kept it up until we were so close that they could not use their cannon. As our regiment advanced great gaps would be knocked in our lines by the Yankee artillerymen,



at almost every five or ten steps, but they were immediately filled in by our brave boys closing in and filling up the gaps. This continued until our line of battle came to where our skirmishers were situated, when we received a few shots from the enemy's skirmishers in addition to the cannon shot and shell which continued to pour in on us from the time we started until we were so close under their guns that they could not use them upon us without shooting their own men. As our regiment advanced its ranks were thinned at every step by shot and shell from the hands of the enemy. Many a brave man from our regiment fell dead upon the field and many more were slightly and others badly wounded. Here it was that Captain J. W. Brown, of Company I, was shocked by the bursting of a shell and carried back to the rear and almost immediately after this Lieutenant J. Wiley Jones was shot through the thigh leaving Lieutenant J. Rowan Rogers as the only officer with Company I. As Lieutenant Jones was wounded and fell he raised his sword and cheered his men on. J. D. Newsom, Lieutenant of Company II, was slightly wounded in the shoulder almost at the first shot from the musketry, which was fired after the charge was started and he rushed to his Captain (Mitchell) and says to him, "Captain, they have wounded me, but I want to lead Company II," and gallantly did he lead it. He fell terribly wounded with his foot upon one rail of the fence that ran along the road, next to the rock fence behind which the Yankee line was posted. Our color-bearer, a member of Company K, Fauveett's Company from Alamance county, succeeded in passing over this fence, but fell mortally wounded. He died that night with his face to the enemy. Our colors fell with our brave color bearer not ten steps from the rock wall. About 150 yards from the rock wall, while crossing one of the many fences, which ran across the ground we were charging over, I was shot in my left leg and thrown from the fence. When I arose the remnant of our once fine regiment was reduced to a mere handful of brave men, still going forward from thirty to as close up as ten steps to the rock wall. Seeing this and having recovered from my fall and my leg not seeming to be badly hurt, I made



a rush to join the set of brave men nearest the enemy, when I was startled to hear the command given the Yankee skirmishers "To the front," and immediately I heard our brave Lieutenant-Colonel Graves give the order for the handful of brave men to lie down, hoping thus to hold his position until reinforcements should come; but none came. The Forty-seventh acted bravely, coolly and none faltered.

The largest number of those who got out of that charge were those who had been slightly wounded before they got too close to the breastworks to fall back, and those who were wounded early enough in the charge to be carried back by our own men. Among those who were so close to the enemy's works that they could not retreat were Lieutenant-Colonel Graves, Captain Jos. J. Davis, afterwards member of Congress and Justice of our Supreme Court: Lieutenant Watson, of Company K, and a number of others I cannot recall, in all a mere handful, for they had all been shot down or exhausted and overcome by heat. I have seen somewhere that the Forty-seventh Regiment lost, wounded and killed and missing, 351. This is certainly a mistake. The proportion was larger than that in my company (I). We lost 57 and we had officers who were present and could report correctly the number of the killed and wounded. I think three companies lost all their officers and no correct report was given from those. They reported the smallest number of men killed, wounded and missing. As I have stated above, there was no faltering on the part of the Forty-seventh on 3 July, 1863. All did their duty and acted the part of brave soldiers.

#### FALLING WATERS.

After General Lee left Gettysburg our first halt for more than one night was at Hagerstown, Maryland. Here the Forty-seventh was engaged in skirmishing with the enemy's outpost and did some picket duty on or near a stream called Antietam. We then moved in line of battle and built breastworks not far from Hagerstown, towards Falling Waters. When General Lee recrossed the Potomac, Pettigrew's Brigade was again given the post of honor which was to bring up the rear of our retreating army. At Falling Waters, or



about one and a half miles from there, while our regiment was halted to give our wagon train and the troops who were to cross at Falling Waters protection while passing the river, we were surprised and charged by a squadron of cavalry. Our beloved General J. Johnston Pettigrew was on the extreme right of our line and was shot while drawing his pistol. It happened thus: General Pettigrew with a number of his staff (Captain Young, of Charleston, being one of them, who I understand is still living) were resting near their horses, when the word passed up the line, "The Yankees are charging us." The general ordered his horse, but about the time he took hold of his horse to mount, a Yankee officer riding on the left of their line and a little in front, ordered him to surrender. General Pettigrew did not notice the Yankee farther than to mount his horse and commence drawing his pistol, his horse, however, reared and plunged and the Yankee seeing that Pettigrew did not intend to surrender, fired and hit him. General Pettigrew fell from his horse and the fight was hot around and about him for fifteen or twenty minutes. We succeeded in killing all the Yankees except eight. The men in the charge were evidently all drunk. A heavier force coming up, we fell back to the river disputing every step with the enemy, so as to give our men as much time to cross as possible. When a few days thereafter we camped at Bunker Hill, our regiment numbered 98 men for duty. My company (I) lost at Falling Waters eight men killed, wounded and captured. I remember the loss particularly, because I was acting adjutant of the regiment, our gallant Adjutant Thomas Powell having been captured at Gettysburg.

#### WILDERNESS.

At the Wilderness, the Forty-seventh Regiment had the honor of bringing on the fight. We were in front of our lines and struck the Yankee pickets about 9 o'clock, driving them with our skirmish line back until their numbers increased so that Company I was first ordered to reinforce the skirmish line, then another company, then another, until the entire regiment was engaged and then, I think the Forty-



fourth regiment was the first regiment after the Forty-seventh to become engaged. When the enemy was driven back upon their main line and the fight of the first day became general, the Forty-seventh was ordered at first to take position on the left of the road, but was soon moved over to the right of the road, where we held our position for three hours, the enemy charging us almost continuously. During this time the heaviest fighting took place which, with our regiment, was about 2 o'clock p. m. The black-jack saplings were skinned by the bullets like a young apple tree in the spring of the year by the rabbits.

Without giving more of the particulars of this battle, here it was that the best friend of my boyhood fell mortally wounded through the neck, William H. Haywood, son of the late United States Senator W. H. Haywood and brother of Duncan Haywood, who fell at Seven Pines. I would like if I could, to tell about the fights in which the Forty-seventh was engaged at Spottsylvania Court House, Hanover Junction, Second Cold Harbor and the battle of Turkey Ridge on 2 and 3 June, 1864, where I was wounded and so kindly treated by my Brigadier General (Kirkland) who was wounded in the same battle.

I had just arrived at the field hospital. When he heard me speak he knew my voice and called me to his tent, had my wound dressed and carried me to Ward B, Jackson Hospital, Richmond, Va., early next morning. Had it not been for his kindness I doubt much if I should now be living, for I was out of my head for several days after I was wounded. On account of this wounding I missed the battles which took place from then until the day after the Reams Station fight (25 August, 1864), where the Forty-seventh covered itself with glory as did all the troops engaged, all being North Carolinians, viz: Cooke's, Lane's and MacRae's Brigades, the last being the one to which the Forty-seventh then belonged. I was thenceforward with the regiment until 2 April, 1865.

2 APRIL, 1865.

On that day I was captured on the Cox road about five



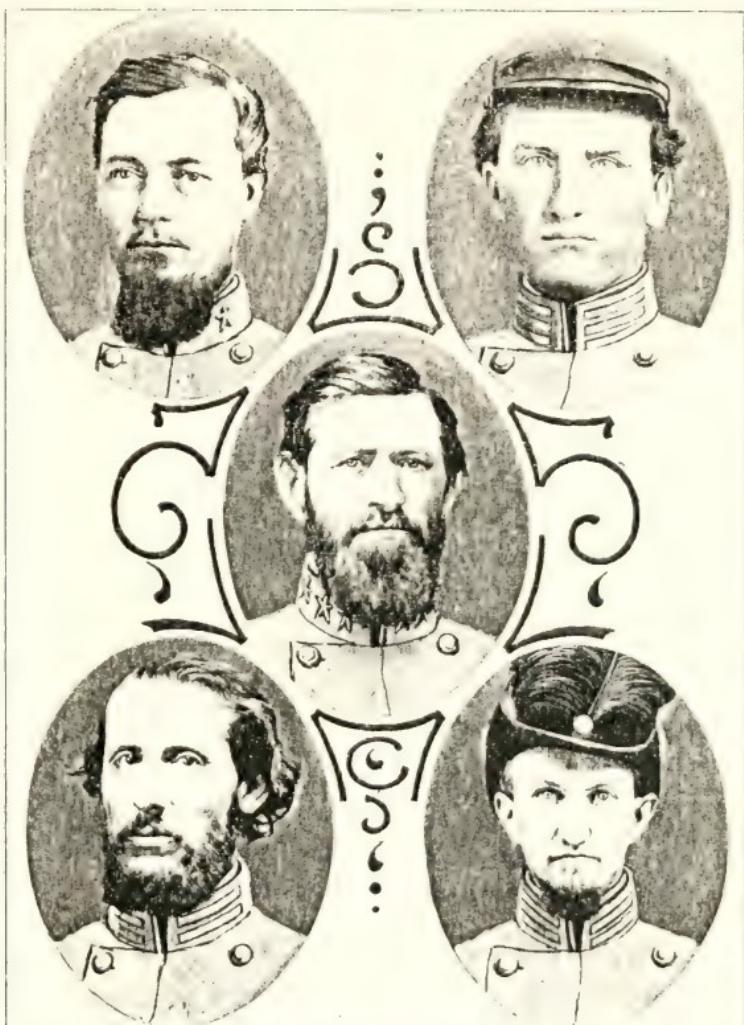
miles west of Petersburg, while with the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh Regiment holding the enemy back till the handful of Lee's army crossed to the north side of the Appomattox river, thus placing a barrier between them and the great host of Grant's army, which was then pressing him. After the Reams Station fight the Forty-seventh, like almost all the Southern troops which were on the south side of Petersburg, was engaged in a daily battle, and often nightly ones, until the close of the war; some of these was larger and heavier than others, and their names are recorded in history, for instance "Davis' Farm," "Jones' Farm," "Burgess' Mill," "Battery 45," southwest of Petersburg, and a number of other battles where many a brave man fell. I wish it was so that I could meet some of those of the Forty-seventh who were at the final scene when General Lee surrendered, but I have met only two, Lieutenant J. Willie Jones, of Company I, and Corporal Rufus Sanders of Company C, who are now living in Wake county. After 2 April the Forty-seventh had very few men but its organization was kept up till General Lee surrendered. On the 2d the Forty-seventh was bringing up the rear of General Lee's shattered heroes and here it was that with the larger portion of the remaining members of the Forty-seventh I was captured. I had orders when placed in charge of the skirmishers of the Forty-seventh Regiment on that day to hold our position at all hazards. The enemy was never able to break through my skirmish line, but it was completely surrounded and we were captured by the enemy coming from our rear. Gaston H. Mooneyham, a private of Company E, Forty-seventh Regiment, who is now living in Barton's Creek Township, this county, was with me when I was captured and stood manfully by me in this fight, the last fight we made for the Confederacy.

J. ROWAN ROGERS.

RALEIGH, N. C.,

9 APRIL, 1901.





FORTY EIGHTH REGIMENT.

- |                                     |                                                   |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Samuel H. Walkup, Colonel        | 4. John R. Winchester, Adjutant and<br>1st Lieut. |
| 2. William Hogan Jones, Major,      | 5. John A. Thompson, 1st Lieut., Co. G            |
| 3. W. H. H. Lawhon, Captain, Co. D. |                                                   |



# FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT.

---

BY W. H. H. LAWHON, CAPTAIN COMPANY D.

The great civil war began in 1861. Several companies made up in the summer of 1861, composed of volunteers for twelve months, in the Spring of 1862 reorganized for three years or the war. The battles of Big Bethel, First Manassas and others had been fought; the result of which had given the Southern troops courage, and some men in North Carolina, who had been opposed to secession, were now changing their minds, so that in the Winter of 1861 and 1862 preparations were being made on both sides for the next summer's campaign. The Federal army was recruiting so rapidly that the authorities of the Confederacy saw that they would have to meet a heavy force in the field the next summer, so a draft was ordered in North Carolina 25 February, 1862.

At this time volunteer companies were being raised in all parts of the State. Many of the patriotic sons of North Carolina volunteered, most of the men who were drafted joined some company then being raised. A few hired substitutes who joined and thus the companies were rapidly filled up and hurried off to the camp of instruction, near Raleigh, and as they arrived they were formed into regiments. The Forty-eighth was composed of the following companies:

COMPANY A—*Union County*—Francis L. Wiatt, Captain.

COMPANY B—*Davidson County*—Albert A. Hill, Captain.

COMPANY C—*Iredell County*—Arthur M. Walker, Captain.

COMPANY D—*Moore County*—Benjamin R. Huske, Captain.

COMPANY E—*Union County*—John W. Walden, Captain.

COMPANY F—*Union County*—Samuel H. Walkup, Captain.



COMPANY G—*Chatham County*—William H. Jones, Captain.

COMPANY H—*Davidson County*—John Michael, Captain.

COMPANY I—*Union County*—Elias C. Alexander, Captain.

COMPANY K—*Forsyth County*—Jesse W. Atwood, Captain.

It was organized on 11 April, 1862, choosing:

ROBERT C. HILL, Colonel, of Iredell County.

SAMUEL H. WALKER, Lieutenant-Colonel, of Union County.

BENJAMIN R. HUSKE, Major, of Cumberland County.

As many drafted men had furnished substitutes, some being old men and some mere boys, the Forty-eighth Regiment was made up of men of all sizes, and the reader, if acquainted with military tactics, will at once see the difficulty in drilling such troops uniformly. In marching the old men would step too long and slow, the boys too short and fast. But Colonel Hill, who was a military man, lost no time in drilling and disciplining his regiment. We were at Camp Mangum, but in a short while we moved to Goldsboro, where we were in camp until about the second week in June, when we went to Petersburg, Va., and camped on Dunn's Hill. Here we were attached to General Robert Ransom's Brigade.

Under his orders we marched one evening to City Point, arriving about dark; threw out a strong skirmish line, and a detail was made to load some wagons with ice from an ice house, which was near the bank of the James river. The Yankees were near by in gunboats. (The ice was to be carried to Petersburg.) The next morning General Ransom opened fire with two or three small pieces on the gunboats, which were down the river, a mile or more. The Yankees returned the fire very promptly and threw out among us what the men called "churns," cutting off tree tops, and digging holes in the ground. They fired the woods, and it looked like they would clear, burn and plow the ground all at the same time. Only a few rounds were fired. We fell back in order and disorder, but mostly in disorder. A horse was cut



on the leg with a piece of shell. This was all the blood lost on our side, and I do not suppose there was much lost on the other side. One of our men claimed to be hit on his shoulder with a piece of shell, but it is more likely he tore his coat running through the brush; we went back to our camp having, as we thought, tasted a little of war and seen a little of its danger. And we all knew we had smelt gunpowder. Not a few of the men told of narrow escapes. Some of them were certain they felt the wind of the shells, while others felt the heat of them as they passed by, and still others were jarred by the explosions.

On 24 June, we marched to Richmond and camped that night in the capitol square. Next morning we marched to the front line and about 4 p. m., had our first battle, at French's Farm. General Robert Ransom ordered Colonel Hill to advance through an open field on a brigade of Yankees, who were behind a fence on the edge of the wood, and ordered a Virginia regiment to support us on the right, but from some cause the Virginia regiment never came up, and the Forty-eighth fought a brigade of Federals for some time. They were in woods behind a fence and we in an open field. However, a Georgia battalion flanked the enemy on our left, and thus we were enabled to hold the ground. We lost Major Huske, Captain Clegg, Company D, and Captain Atwood, Company K, killed; and Captain Michael, Company H; Captain Walker, Company C; Lieutenant Anderson, Company D; and Lieutenant Stilts, Company A, were wounded. We lost non-commissioned officers and men: Killed 21, wounded 46; and of the 46 wounded, 19 died, according to the North Carolina Roster.

Some unpleasantness occurred between General Ransom and Colonel Hill, which resulted in the Forty-eighth Regiment being detached from Ransom's Brigade and on the next day, the 26th, we marched to Gaines' Mill, on the extreme left of our lines, where Stonewall Jackson had been fighting, and when we arrived Jackson had driven the enemy some two miles. So we camped on that battlefield that night and the next morning recrossed the Chickahominy river and went from place to place, until we joined General Walker at White



Oak Swamp, on 1 July. We were a little too late to take part in the Malvern Hill battle, but were under a severe shelling from gunboats, which were then on the James river at or near Harrison's Landing. This was the end of the seven days' battles around Richmond.

We then went back to Petersburg, where we were in camp until August. Some time in August while at this camp our regiment was recruited by conscripts and before we had time to drill them we were ordered to march and were now on the memorable Maryland campaign. We took part in the capture of Harper's Ferry 15 September, 1862. General J. G. Walker with his own and Ransom's Brigade occupied the London Heights between the Shenandoah and Potomac, and we were in full view of the town when it was surrendered. We then marched to Maryland, crossing the Potomac at Shepherdstown, and on the night of the 16th were placed to guard a ford on the Antietam river, about two miles south of Sharpsburg. The battle on the left opened very early on the morning of the 17th, and about 9 o'clock a. m. Walker's Division, (Ransom's and Walker's Brigades), were ordered to the left to support Stonewall Jackson. We arrived at the Dunkard Church, one and a half miles north of Sharpsburg, at about 11 o'clock. Jackson's line had been broken at that point. Kershaw's and Hood's Brigades had been driven out of a piece of woods west of the church and the enemy was coming into the gap. Walker's Division drove them back and held the field. If we had been a few minutes later the Confederate army might have been destroyed. The Forty-eighth Regiment occupied that part of the line at the church. The church was about the center of the regiment. We drove the enemy out of the woods, and charged their line east of the church, but were cut all to pieces. We lost about one-half of our men, killed and wounded. So closely were we pressed in this battle that brigades were divided. The Twenty-seventh North Carolina Regiment and Third Arkansas Regiment, a part of Walker's Brigade, were sent to the right, and the Forty-eighth North Carolina and Thirtieth Virginia Regiments to the left, leaving a gap between us that would have required several men to have filled, but fortunately for us,



the enemy did not see it. Then, about 4 o'clock p. m., Colonel Hill was ordered with his regiment, the Forty-eighth, to the extreme left of the line, where there was some hard fighting. We marched in quick time a little over a mile, but when we arrived, Jackson's men had driven the enemy back some distance. We then marched back, and arrived at the Dunkard Church about dark, where we remained until the night of the 18th, when we recrossed the Potomac.

After the Army of Northern Virginia had returned south of the Potomac, the army was more thoroughly organized into brigades, divisions and corps. Before, it seems, we had some regiments not permanently attached to any brigade. The Fifteenth, Twenty-seventh, Forty-sixth and Forty-eighth Regiments formed General John R. Cooke's Brigade, belonging to General H. Heth's Division and A. P. Hill's Corps.

The next battle we were in was at Fredericksburg, Va., 13 December, 1862. Here the Forty-eighth suffered another heavy loss, being in the hottest of the battle. Major A. A. Hill was wounded; Captain J. C. Stafford, Company K; Lieutenant Peter W. Plyler, Company E; Lieutenant M. S. Brem, Company C, and Lieutenant H. C. Banner, Company K, were killed. Captain J. D. Dowd, Company D; Captain John Moore, Company I; Captain J. F. Heitman, company H; Lieutenant J. K. Potts, Company C; Lieutenant H. A. Gray, Company F, and Lieutenant Edwin Tyson, Company G, were wounded. The loss of non-commissioned officers and men was very heavy.

From Fredericksburg Cooke's Brigade was sent, in January, 1863, to Pocataligo, S. C., where we remained until April, and were then ordered back to Eastern North Carolina until July. While here we did a good deal of marching, were in a little skirmish at Gum Swamp, and drove the Yankees as far as Red Banks, eight miles from New Bern. Then we went from place to place. We were at Little Washington, Tarboro, Weldon and other places until about 1 July, when we went to Richmond, and were around Richmond several days guarding the city. In August we went back to Fredericksburg, were there about a month; then to Gordonsville, where we joined the regular army and marched to Bristoe



Station on 14 October, 1863. We had missed all the hard marching on the campaign to Pennsylvania and the great battle of Gettysburg, but at Bristoe we suffered the heaviest loss of any battle we had yet been in, charging a heavy body of the enemy entrenched behind a railroad. From here we fell back to Orange Court House, where we went into winter quarters.

The next battle was at the Wilderness, 4 May, 1864. Heth's Division fought a heavy force of the enemy for two hours before we were relieved. At no time during the war did his division do better fighting. The writer heard General Lee tell General Cooke that night that he (Gen. Cooke), and Kirkland, with their brigades, had held 25,000 Yankees in check for more than two hours. Our loss was not heavy, but the enemy's was very great. There seemed to be as many dead men in our front as we had men engaged. The ground on which we fought was a dense thicket of small growth, which was cut down by minie balls before we were relieved, so that we could see the enemy's lines as they would come up to relieve one line after another, which they did about every fifteen or twenty minutes. And to show that the undergrowth was cut down principally by our balls, the tree tops in the rear of us were cut all to pieces, while but few balls struck trees near the ground, showing that the enemy shot over us. We were relieved a little before sunset by Wilcox's Division, and after dark were marched out and formed in line in an old straw field, where we lay until morning. At daylight the skirmish firing began. At sunrise the enemy advanced in several lines. In the meanwhile a battery of small guns was brought in and opened on the advancing lines of Federals which were between us and the rising sun. This was all the cannon used in the battle. The smoke from the cannon was so dense the Captain could not see what he was doing. The writer was ordered by General Cooke to go in front to see where the shells were falling. I soon saw that they were going over their lines and doing no execution at all. I informed the commander of the distance of the enemy. The next fire he began to cut lanes through the advancing lines, but the artillery had time only for a few



rounds, when General Longstreet's Corps advanced and drove them back into and out of their breastworks and took possession of the same. This was a most gallant act. Longstreet with one line drove several lines of Federals back, leaving the ground strewn with Federal dead. That night when we were in the captured breastworks and all was perfectly still, Gen. Lee rode across the line on the extreme right. Some one cried out "Three cheers for General Lee," which was taken up on the right and went the rounds to the extreme left—the grandest rebel yell of the war. The rear guard of the retreating Federals fired and ran. Some of them, captured a few days afterward, reported that several corps were ordered back as they thought we were advancing.

The regiment had a heavy skirmish on Po river and was severely shelled. The Federals, in falling back at this place, fired the woods on us, but the fire, like their shells, did not stop us in our advance. This all amounted to but little.

At Spottsylvania Court House we were engaged on 12 May, but the loss of the Forty-eighth was not so great as that of some other regiments, as we were not in the hottest of the battle. However, we did some hard marching through the brush and some fighting.

From here we were on the memorable march to Richmond, and exposed to an awful heavy shelling on 25 May, near Hanover. The solid shot were falling and bouncing thick on the ground. The only casualties I remember were Sergeant C. Lawhon and Corporal M. C. Yon, Company D, Forty-eighth North Carolina, both killed with the same shot. Our next engagement was at a place called Turkey Bend, or Turkey Hill. Wilcox's Division was fighting in front of us, and a heavy body of Federals were moving on his left flank. We were preparing to meet them, throwing up some temporary breastworks under a sharp skirmish fire. Lieutenant W. C. Howard, of Company F, Forty-eighth, was killed. Some four or five men wounded, were, I think, all of those lost by the Forty-eighth in this engagement. The enemy was moving in line of battle to our right. We were ordered to move in quick time and make no noise. While on this rapid march an amusing incident occurred, which I will relate: We were



passing through a ravine where some Yankee prisoners were under guard. A very large, gruff looking Yankee was standing up slurring the rebels. He asked: "Why do you rebels wear such dirty, ragged clothes?" An Irishman by the name of Forrest, belonging to Company D, Forty-eighth Regiment, and as good a soldier as was in the regiment, answered: "Faith and be jabbers, we Southerners always put on our sorriest clothes when we kill hogs, and it is hog killing day with us now," pointing to a dead Yankee near by. This wit of the Irishman caused a laugh, and forgetting the order to be quiet, some two or three men raised a yell, which was taken up along the line—a regular rebel yell. The enemy's lines halted, broke and fell back, so we did not get into any further engagement. Whether it was this yell that caused them to fall back, I cannot say, but I don't suppose they knew we were near them until the yell betrayed our whereabouts.

Our next engagement was at Cold Harbor, on 3 June, 1864. Cooke's Brigade was on the extreme left of the Confederate lines, only some cavalry being on our left. This was, with us, probably the very hardest-fought battle of the war. Just as we got in position on an old road—and it was about sun up—the Federals, in heavy force, made a charge which we met and after a hard struggle, which lasted some time, repulsed. They soon made another charge. We were assisted in repulsing this one by a battery of artillery, which had just come up. The enemy would reinforce and come again, but we repulsed every charge and during the day, working between attacks, built a very good breastwork. The last of the several charges was made about 6 o'clock p. m. Several lines came forward.

One line would fire and fall down, another step over, fire and fall down, each line getting nearer us, until they got within sixty or seventy-five yards of some portions of our line, but finding themselves cut to pieces so badly, they fell back in a little disorder. Our men seemed to rise all at once, with a rebel yell, and poured lead into them, cutting down numbers of them. The old field in front of us was almost covered with their dead. At no time during the war did the Forty-eighth and Twenty-seventh do better fighting.



Our position was a good one, and an important one to be held. We lost several good men in this battle. Lieutenant M. D. Clegg, of Company D, was wounded.

At 9 o'clock that night we took up the line of march, went from place to place for several days, spending about one week at Deep Bottom. At this place we had no battle, except with flies. I never saw so many flies in all my life. Then we went to the right of Petersburg. We were on the line about one half mile to the right of the "Blow-up," as it was called. The day before the springing of that mine we were ordered to the left of Petersburg and had crossed the Appomattox, and were marching toward Richmond, when we heard the explosion. We returned and on the next day took up our quarters in the trenches. The Forty-eighth occupied that position which had been blown up. Here we remained for several weeks, when we were moved to the extreme right and built our winter quarters on Hatcher's Run. General Heth was ordered to attack the enemy whenever he attempted to extend his lines. So we had several engagements, one at the Yellow House. This was in August, 1864, and on the 25th of the same month we were in the battle of Reams Station, where we charged a heavy force of Federals behind a breast-work, broke their line and captured several hundred prisoners and several pieces of artillery. This was a brave assault. Two attacks had been made by other troops (I forget which) that had failed to dislodge them. This had given the enemy courage, and was rather discouraging to us, who had to make the third attack. The timber for fifty or seventy-five yards in front of their works had been cut down, the limbs sharpened, making it very difficult to reach the works. The position of the Forty-eighth was near the centre of the line, the timber in our front being thinner than in other portions. We succeeded in gaining the works sooner than those on the right or left, who had more brush to go through. The first part of the line broken was on the left wing of the Forty-eighth, but the whole line was surrendered in a very few minutes. We lost several in this charge. Lieutenant M. D. Clegg, of Company D, was killed on the works about the time the line



was broken. Lieutenant C. W. Shaw, of Company D, was wounded before he reached the works.

The next day we marched back to Petersburg to our position on the right of the lines. The next march we took, and I think it was in December, was to Bellfield, where we had a skirmish with Yankee cavalry. Sergeant H. B. Cox, of Company D, lost his foot by a shell. This was all the loss I remember. We remained on Hatcher's Run until the Confederate lines were broken, 2 April, 1865. We had several skirmishes while here. On 25 March the troops on our left had made a charge on the enemy's lines at Hare's Hill and had carried their front works near the Appomattox river, but had to abandon them the same day. We were ordered around there in the morning and returned in the evening to our quarters to find the Yankees in possession of our picket post. They had captured all of our pickets and could have been in possession of our breastworks and winter quarters if they had known it, as we had left only a few men in camp, who were unfit for duty. Captain Henry R. McKinney, of the Forty-sixth Regiment, who was commander of the brigade sharpshooters, formed his line on the right, near the creek, and made a very brave and successful charge, recapturing our picket post in this charge. Lieutenant Austin, of the Forty-eighth Regiment, a very brave and good officer, was killed, and I do not remember that any other was killed or wounded. I believe that Lieutenant Austin was the last man killed in the Forty-eighth as I do not remember any other being killed afterwards.

We only held our picket post about two days, as our pickets were captured on 28 or 29 March, and on 2 April, the lines to our left were broken. We took up the line of march to the right, and crossing the creek, moved to Jarrett's Station, where in the evening we had a skirmish, but were about to be surrounded and made haste to get away and were on the memorable retreat to Appomattox Court House, losing more or less of our men every day.

The last skirmish we were in was on Thursday evening before the surrender on Sunday, 9 April, 1865. The Twenty-seventh and Forty-eighth Regiments were ordered out to



the right to protect the wagon trains, but before we arrived the enemy had set fire to a part of the wagons, and a heavy force of infantry was marching up the road the wagons were on. Here we had a narrow escape. A squadron of cavalry got in our rear, cut us off and we were scattered on both sides of the road. Several of our men were captured. Every man was left to take care of himself. Company D, which had only thirty-seven men at Petersburg 2 April, had been reduced to eleven and in this affair lost ten, leaving only one man and the Captain to witness the surrender. On Sunday morning, and in the race through the woods on Thursday evening, the Captain lost his hat, running from a Yankee horseman, and would have been captured had it not been for a deep gully near by into which he went and got out of the horse's way.

At the surrender the Forty-eighth Regiment had been reduced in number until we did not have men enough to make more than one full company.

Now a few words in regard to the officers of the regiment, and I close.

Colonel R. C. Hill was a very fine military man, very strict and much beloved by his men, but being in bad health he was often absent. He only commanded the regiment in the campaign of 1862 and 1863. He died in December, 1863.

Lieutenant-Colonel S. H. Walkup was made Colonel. He was one of the bravest officers in the Army of Northern Virginia. He was often laughed at on dress parade and brigade drill for his awkwardness, but when in battle all that knew him were satisfied that Walkup was there and that his regiment would do its duty.

Lieutenant-Colonel A. A. Hill was a good and kind officer. All his men liked him. He made a very fine appearance and was always with his men. I think he was one of the two or three officers of the regiment who missed no part of the march or duty imposed on the regiment during the memorable campaign of 1864.

Major B. R. Huske was a very mild, gentle and kind-hearted man, a well posted and good officer. The whole regiment was grieved at his death, which occurred on 15 July,



1862, from wounds received in the battle of French's Farm, 25 June.

Captain F. L. Wiatt, of Company A, was promoted to Major at the death of Huske. He was an old man, and won the respect of the whole regiment; was wounded at Harper's Ferry, 15 September, 1862, and resigned in October of the same year and was with us only a short while.

Captain W. H. Jones, of Company G, was made Major on the death of Colonel Hill, 4 December, 1863, but owing to bad health was not with us much. He was a very good man and kind hearted. He loved his men and was loved in return.

H. A. Gunter, of Wake, was our first Adjutant. From some cause he was not with us in the battle of French's Farm. Lieutenant J. H. Anderson, of Company D, was acting Adjutant and was wounded in that battle. Adjutant Gunter was wounded in the battle of Sharpsburg, and died soon after from wounds.

Lieutenant John R. Winchester, of Company A, then became Adjutant and was with us all the while. He was a very good officer and soldier. He was a cheerful and lively man and was generally ready for any fun with officers or men. The men all liked Winchester.

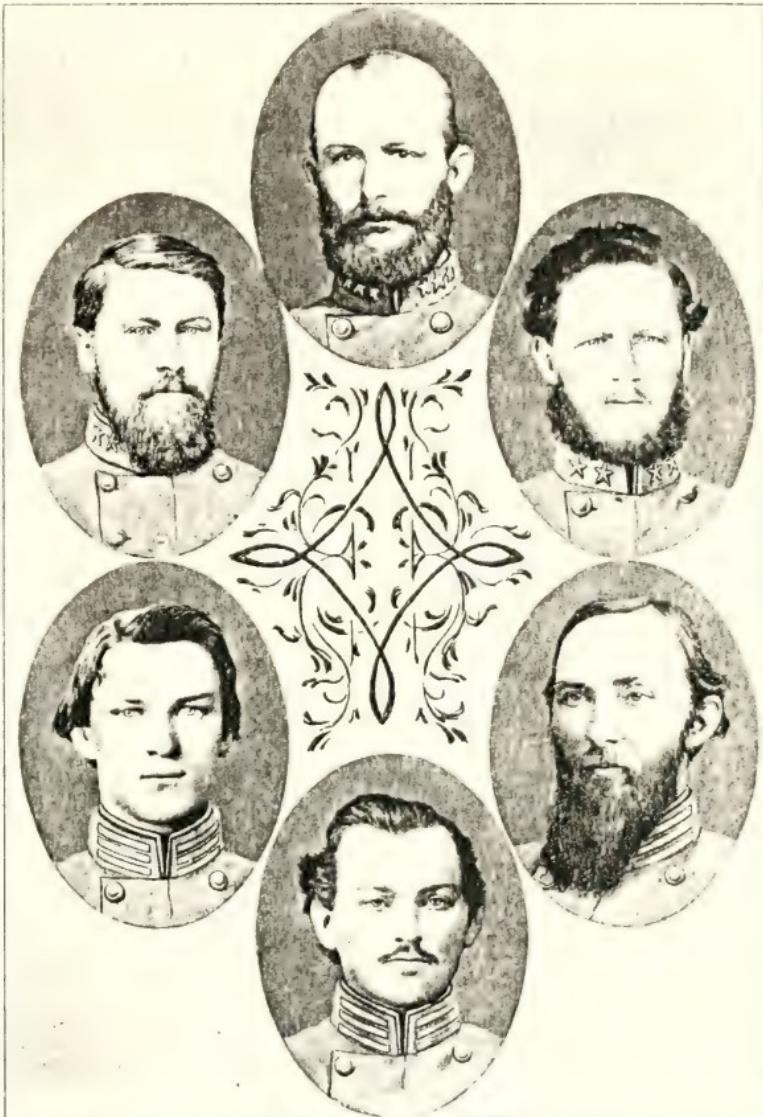
Several of the company officers are worthy of special reference in this history, and the writer would be glad to give it, but failing to get any answer to his letters of inquiry and having to depend solely on his memory, can not recall the names and company to which they belonged. Each company had its brave men. Many of these are entitled to mention in this sketch, but for the reason stated above the writer will have to leave them out, but feels assured that he can say that the Forty-eighth Regiment did as much hard marching and fighting as any regiment from North Carolina. From first to last, it had about 1,300 men, many of them as brave and as obedient as any soldiers in the Confederate army.

W. H. H. LAWHON.

MOORE Co., N. C.,

9 APRIL, 1901.





FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

- |                                                                 |                                        |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| 1. S. D. Ramseur, Colonel                                       | 4. Cheero Durham, Captain and A. Q. M. |
| 2. James T. Davis, Lieut. Colonel                               | 5. Henry A. Chambers, Captain, Co. C   |
| 3. John A. Flemming, Lieut.-Colonel.<br>(Killed at Petersburg.) | 6. Edwin V. Harris, Captain, Co. E.    |



# FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

---

BY THOMAS R. ROULIAC, FIRST LIEUTENANT COMPANY D.

The Forty-ninth Regiment of North Carolina State Troops was composed of ten companies of infantry, raised in the counties of McDowell, 1; Cleveland, 2; Iredell, 2; Moore, 1; Mecklenburg, 1; Gaston, 1; Catawba, 1; and Lincoln, 1, which assembled at Garysburg, in the month of March, 1862. It was constituted, at its formation, wholly of volunteers, many of whom had sought service in the earlier periods of the war, and all of whom had responded to the call for soldiers, as soon as it was practicable to furnish them with arms and equipments. In the latter part of March, or early in April, 1862, organization of the regiment was effected, by the election of:

STEPHEN D. RAMSEUR, Colonel.  
WILLIAM A. ELIASON, Lieutenant-Colonel.  
LEE M. McAFFEE, Major.  
LIEUTENANT RICHMOND, Adjutant.  
GEORGE L. PHIFER, Sergeant-Major.  
CAPTAIN E. P. GEORGE, Commissary.  
CAPTAIN J. W. WILSON, Quartermaster.  
DR. JOHN K. RUFFIN, Surgeon.  
REGINALD H. GOODE, Assistant Surgeon.  
PETER NICHOLSON, Chaplain.

The non-commission staff was completed with James Holland, Quartermaster-Sergeant; Harrison Hall, Hospital Steward, and James H. Geiger, Ordnance Sergeant.

The history of Ramseur is known to all the people of North Carolina. No one of her sons ever contributed, by his devotion to her service, skill and heroic bravery on the field of battle, and fearless exposure and ultimate sacrifice of his life, more to the historic lustre of the name and honor of this, one



of the greatest of the American States. He gave untiring energy and masterly judgment to the rapid organization, drill, discipline and preparation for active service in the field of his regiment. A graduate of the Military Academy at West Point, and for a few years an officer in the regular army, endowed with a mind of great strength and quickness, constant in purpose, daring and brilliant in execution, prepared for the science of war and revelling in its dangers and fierce encounters, and with a spirit fired with a determination to excel in the profession of arms; it is not to be wondered at, that, under his capable authority and the influence of his stirring example, the regiment rapidly took form and shape as a strong, disciplined and efficient body of men; nor that the impress of his spirit and the effect of his training should, as its subsequent career demonstrated, be retained, not alone to characterize the natural development of veterans, but, likewise, as a part of its heritage of honor, so long as the flag under which he arrayed them claimed an existence amid the heraldry of nations. Short as was the length of his authority over them, the force of his activity, zeal and fearlessness was felt and recognized by the Forty-ninth (Ramseur's) Regiment through all its struggles and hardships, in the camp, on the march, in making or meeting assaults, advancing or retreating, in sunshine and storm, through the long and wearing siege of Petersburg, where it rushed alone into the cavalier line after Grant's mine was sprung, and at skirmish distance in the works held the Federal advance at bay for three hours--the slender link by which the two halves of General Lee's army were united, until reinforcements could be brought seven miles to retake the crater; both when disaster fell fast and fierce on the cause for which they fought, as well as when before their steady charge the foe gave way, and victory perched on their well-worn battle flag; when death had thinned its ranks and suffering made gaunt the survivors, until at last its lines were crushed--its shout and shot the last to be heard--on the field of Five Forks. North Carolina, whose soil has been made sacred by the ashes of so many great and strong men, her jurists, her statesmen, her magistrates, her teachers, her ministers and



priests, her soldiers and her patriots, holds within her bosom the dust of no nobler or more perfect man than that of Stephen Dobson Ramseur.

The regiment was officered by men of education, and, for the most part, in the full vigor of young manhood.

Its rank and file were taken from the Piedmont region of the State, which then contained, as extended observation enables the writer to say, a population second to none for self-reliance, integrity, just respect for authority and modest worth and courage. Many of them were descendants of the people who made the Hornets' Nest of North Carolina a fortress of independence and a terror to their country's invaders.

Soon after its organization Lieutenant-Colonel Eliason resigned, Major McAfee succeeding him, and Captain John A. Fleming, of Company A, was promoted to Major.

#### MALVERN HILL.

When the operations of McClellan's army around Richmond, culminating in the seven days' battles, began, the regiment was assigned to General Robert Ransom's Brigade and participated in several of those engagements. At Malvern Hill it bore a conspicuous part, leaving its dead and wounded on the field next in proximity to the enemy's works to those of the Twenty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, then commanded by Colonel Zebulon B. Vance.

In this ill-advised assault the command suffered heavily in killed and wounded, Colonel Ramseur among the latter. His handling of the regiment and its conduct during those conflicts led to his prompt promotion to Brigadier-General, and to his assignment, as soon as he recovered from his wound, to another command.

On 1 November, 1862, Lieutenant-Colonel McAfee was commissioned Colonel, Major Fleming was promoted Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Pinckney B. Chambers, of Company C, was made Major. During the summer of 1862 Adjutant Richmond fell a victim to typhoid fever, and the life of this brave and capable officer was thus destroyed -no less an offering on the altar of patriotism than if he had laid it



down on the battlefield. Cicero A. Durham, of Cleveland county, prior to the war a cadet of the Military Institute of General D. H. Hill, at Charlotte, and who afterwards became so famous throughout the army as the fighting quartermaster, was appointed adjutant. He served in this capacity with great efficiency and distinction until 2 May, 1863, when he was promoted Assistant Quartermaster to succeed Captain George, who was transferred to other duties. William H. Dinkins, who had been Sergeant-Major, was appointed Adjutant, and continued in that position during the remainder of the war, actively on duty until some time in the spring of 1864, when bad health caused his absence to the close of hostilities.

By reason of the losses in front of Richmond in this campaign, both of officers and men, changes in the roster of officers were numerous.

It has been impossible at this late day to procure anything like full or correct reports of the killed, wounded, or missing in these battles. The aggregate was considerable, and the casualties told the story of the fierce struggles in which the command was engaged, but access to the reports cannot be had.

George W. Lytle succeeded to the Captaincy of Company A; Henry A. Chambers was, on 10 December, 1862, appointed to the command of Company C; Columbus H. Dixon was made Captain of Company G, on 17 November, 1862, in the place of Captain Rufus Roberts; Charles F. Connor, on 1 February, 1863, succeeded Captain W. W. Chenuault, of Company I, and George L. Phifer became Captain of Company K, in the place of Peter Z. Baxter, on 24 July, 1863; changes occasioned by the losses of 1862. Corresponding changes ensued in the other grades of company officers.

#### SHARPSBURG.

From Richmond the scene of action was speedily transferred by General Lee to the Potomac and beyond; and then back to the capture of Harper's Ferry, thence to Sharpsburg, or Antietam, the command moved under the orders of that great figure in our military history. At Sharpsburg it



shared with the rest of the brigade the honor of retaking and holding the famous "West Woods." Here the gallant Lieutenant Greenleaf Flemming, brother of Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, was killed and a dozen men of his company killed or wounded by a shell which fell in its ranks as the brigade was moving by the flank to change its position just before sunset. It was the rear company of the Forty-ninth and Colonel M. W. Ransom and Adjutant Walter Clark, who were riding at the head of the Thirty-fifth, were close behind and barely escaped the shell which was evidently directed by the enemy's signal corps at the moving line of bayonets, glistening in the setting sunlight, for it came from a battery on the other side of the Antietam. Returning to Virginia, the regiment was in the battle of Fredericksburg, beginning 11 December, 1862, where it took position to the left of the plank road, and during the four days that the fighting there continued it was subjected to heavy cannonading and some infantry fighting, several officers and men being killed and wounded.

After this battle the Forty-ninth remained in winter quarters near Fredericksburg until 3 January, 1863, when it was marched, by the Telegraph road, to Hanover Junction, thence to Richmond, and from there to Petersburg, which it reached on the evening of the 7th, and remained until the 17th, when it left for eastern North Carolina.

From this time on until the spring of 1864, the regiment, with the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Fifty-sixth Regiments, composed Ransom's Brigade which protected the line of the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad from those two terminal points, and that of the road from Goldsboro to below Kinston; being constantly on the move, appearing one day at the other end of the line from that at which they were the day before, and vigilantly guarding the territory of Eastern North Carolina, from which such abundant supplies were contributed for the support of our armies. Strategically, it was the right wing of the Army of Virginia; and General Scott, whose plan of campaign delineated



at the beginning of hostilities, of intersecting the Confederacy, was verified by events, and the consummation of which resulted in our downfall, declared that, after the opening of the Mississippi, a heavy column pushed through the gateway of Eastern North Carolina, would cause the abandonment of Virginia, and the dissevering of the most formidable portion of the Confederacy. The closing events of the war demonstrated the accuracy of his judgment and his consummate skill as a strategist. That it was not done sooner must convince the student of history how severely taxed were the powers and resources of the Federal government to meet and hold in check the main armies of the South, and that its dismemberment was deferred so long alone by the magnificent courage and endurance of its soldiery. Ransom's Brigade was the most important force in the section mentioned for many months; and, occupying in quick succession Weldon, Warsaw, Kenansville, Goldsboro, Kinston, Wilmington and Greenville, it was always on hand to confront any movement of the enemy in that region. Occasionally a sharp brush with the enemy's forces was necessary to warn him of the foe in his path. From New Bern, Plymouth and Washington, in Eastern Carolina, and from Norfolk and Suffolk, in Virginia, the Federals would send out expeditions; but, in each instance, no great distance would be traversed before they were confronted by Ransom's Brigade. Besides the protection thus afforded to the main army in Virginia, an extensive and fertile section of the country was thus kept open for supplies of corn and meat to the Confederate forces; and it was not rare for other supplies and needed articles to reach our lines through that territory. Meanwhile, the ranks of all the regiments in that brigade were recruited; drill and discipline were advanced; and equipment was perfected; so that, when in 1861 we were made a component part of General Beauregard's command between Richmond and Petersburg, on the south side of the James, it is more than probable that there was not in the Confederate service any brigade, containing a greater number of effective, well-trained, veteran soldiers.



## GUM SWAMP.

On 22 May, 1863, a sharp affair occurred at Gum Swamp, in Craven or Lenoir county, in which the Fifty-sixth and Twenty-fifth Regiments, owing to the negligence of our cavalry, were surrounded by a considerable force of the enemy; and, after losing about 170 prisoners, the remainder of those two commands barely escaped capture by fighting their way through the surrounding forces. During this movement Companies C, D and H, of the Forty-ninth, were picketing at Moseley's Creek, a parallel road from New Bern. The balance of the regiment being moved from Kinston to the support of the troops at Gum Swamp, by their timely arrival stayed the retreat and checked the attack.

The invasion of Pennsylvania during the summer of this year by General Lee occupied the attention of most of the Federal troops, and movements elsewhere were generally of slight importance.

During the presence of our army across the Potomac a demonstration in considerable force, probably with the hope of recalling some of the troops from General Lee to oppose it, was made towards Richmond from the direction of the Chickahominy; and Ransom's Brigade was hurried by rail to meet the threatened raid. At Bottom's Bridge the Federal column was encountered; but after two days of brisk skirmishing its commander declined to attempt the passage of that stream. Some losses in killed and wounded were sustained by our forces, and the enemy suffered to as great an extent, with the addition of some prisoners captured by us. The return of the raiding column to York river was precipitate; and after a few days our command was back at its old duties in North Carolina. During the residue of the summer and succeeding fall and winter it was constantly on the move.

On 9 June, 1863, Thomas R. Roulhac was appointed Sergeant-Major from Manly's Battery, which was then in the army of Northern Virginia. In the latter part of October he joined the regiment at Garysburg, and served in that capacity and as Acting Adjutant, until appointed First Lieutenant of Company D, in June, 1864.

On 28 January, 1864, the command left Weldon for Kin-



ston, and there became a part of the forces under Generals Pickett and Hoke in the movement against New Bern. General Pickett proceeded down the Dover road from Kinston with Corse's Brigade of his own division, and those of Hoke and Clingman, of North Carolina, and attacked a camp of the enemy at Bachelor's Creek, capturing about four hundred prisoners, two pieces of artillery, a large number of small arms, horses and camp equipage, and drove the entire Federal force precipitately towards New Bern.

#### ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

Ransom's Brigade with Barton's and Kemper's Virginia Brigades, some cavalry and artillery, all under command of General Barton, crossed the Trent river, and proceeded from near Trenton down the south side of the Trent to the south of New Bern. Meanwhile General J. G. Martin had moved with his brigade of North Carolina troops from Wilmington towards Morehead City. About daylight on the morning of 1 February the picket post of the Federals was reached and surprised without the escape of a single man. Every precaution had been taken, by the detention of negroes and every other person likely to be friendly to the enemy in the section through which we had hurriedly moved, to prevent information of the movement from reaching the commander of the Federals; and it is now certain that a complete surprise to him was effected. As soon as the picket post was taken, each regiment of Ransom's Brigade was ordered to throw forward a company as skirmishers, Company C, of the Forty-ninth, being selected from that regiment. This was done largely on account of the well-earned reputation of its commander, Captain Henry A. Chambers, for prudence, vigor and courage. No officer of his rank in the Confederate service was ever more faithful, constant and zealous in the discharge of every duty on every occasion and in every position than this distinguished and conscientious commander of Company C - youthful in age, but clear minded, steadfast and useful in all emergencies, ripe in judgment beyond his years, and as fearless as a lion. This company and the whole line of skirmishers were pushed forward rapidly under the orders



of Captain Cicero A. Durham, the fighting Quartermaster, until the enemy's fortifications were reached. It was the opinion of the officers above mentioned that, if the cavalry had been dismounted and advanced with the skirmishers, the works could have been easily taken. Instead of this being done, the artillery was moved to the front and a duel was begun between our few field pieces and the heavier guns in the redoubts, which resulted in nothing. That New Bern could have been taken in a short time and without any considerable loss, if any vigorous pressing had been undertaken by our troops on either side of the river, is now well ascertained. Indeed, General Martin captured a courier from General Palmer, the commander of the Federals at New Bern, bearing a dispatch to the officer in command at Morehead City, stating that, unless reinforcements were quickly sent him, he must surrender.

It was during this expedition to New Bern that Commander Wood, of the Confederate Navy, made his daring attack upon the gunboat, "Underwriter," and from under the very guns of their fortifications, captured and cut it out, and finding it disabled by the shells of the Federal batteries, destroyed it. Beyond these small results, however, nothing was accomplished; unless the whole movement was intended as a demonstration, merely.

During the entire day of 2 February, Company D, under Lieutenant Barrett, and Company E, under Captain E. V. Harris, occupied the skirmish line, the enemy keeping close within their works, and not venturing any movement or scarcely firing a shot from small arms or artillery.

On the night of the 2d the column retraced its steps through the deep, muddy swamp roads, illuminated by the blazing pine trees, whose turpentine boxes had caught from the camp fires on the way down.

#### CAPTURE OF SUFFOLK.

The next expedition, after returning to our winter quarters, was from Weldon, *via* Franklin and South Mills, in the direction of Norfolk. The enemy was met along the Dismal Swamp canal, driven in after the capture of a num-



ber of prisoners by Colonel Dearing, in command of the cavalry, and the capture of Norfolk threatened. This march was made in very severe weather in the early part of March, 1864. It was immediately succeeded by the attack on and capture of Suffolk, on 9 March, 1864. This was a most exciting little affair, in which our troops met negro soldiers for the first time. Quick work was made of their line of battle, and their retreat was soon converted into a runaway. Their camps were hastily abandoned, arms thrown away, and, discarding everything which could impede flight, they made their way to the swamps. One piece of artillery and a large number of horses captured, and a loss in killed and wounded of several score of the enemy were the results. It was here that our Quartermaster, Captain Durham, placing himself at the head of a squad of cavalry, charged into and put to flight a regiment of the enemy's horse. A number of them took refuge in a house in the suburbs of Suffolk, and began a brisk and hurtful fire upon Durham's men. He charged the house and succeeded, after a surrender had been refused, in setting fire to it. They continued the fight, until the flames enveloped the building, and all of its occupants were destroyed. The firing of our artillery was excellent, every shot taking effect among the fleeing ebony horsemen. At a swift run, by sections, Branch's Battery kept shot and shell in their midst as long as the fleeing cavalry could be reached.

The brigade held Suffolk all that day and the next. A heavy column was moved from Norfolk and Fortress Monroe to meet us; but, though we offered battle, no attack was made, and when we advanced, with Companies D and K, of the Forty-ninth, in the brigade front as skirmishers, the enemy fell back to the swamp. On the evening of the 10th we returned *via* South Quay and Murfree's Station, to Weldon.

On 30 March we began our march from Weldon, by way of Murfreesboro and Winton, the latter place having been totally destroyed by the Federals in one of their raids, to Harrellsville, in Bertie county.

At this place and Coleraine and on the Chowan and beautiful Albemarle Sound the month of April, 1864, was spent in the fullest enjoyment of all the delights of springtime, beau-



tiful scenery on sound and river, and in the opening life of woods and flowers. The fish and other delicacies of this favored region touched a tender spot in the make-up of veterans, and cause us much congratulation that we had been chosen to cover this flank of the attack upon and capture of Plymouth; and the period spent here marked a green spot in the memories of officers and men as the last space of repose and comfort, which fell to our lot during the struggle.

On the 30th we marched through Windsor and the lovely Indian Woods to Taylor's Ferry, on the Roanoke, which we crossed at this point; thence through Hamilton to Greenville, where it was reported that on the fall of Plymouth Little Washington had been evacuated by the Federals, after burning a considerable portion of the town. Pushing on from Greenville, we crossed Contentnea creek, the Nuse and Trent rivers to Trenton, thence to Kinston, and back to Weldon. Immediately on our arrival there, we were sent to Jarratt's Station, on the Petersburg Railroad, to drive back the raid, and open up the road from there to Stony Creek. A raiding column of Federal cavalry had the day before succeeded in cutting the road and tearing up the track after a hard fight with the small force defending it. On 10 May we reached Petersburg, and were at once hurried to Swift Creek, on the Richmond pike, where fighting had been going on for some time. We were now a part of Beauregard's army, and while he remained in Virginia continued under his command.

#### DREWRY'S BLUFF.

At the date last mentioned (May, 1864), Butler's movement on Drewry's Bluff, with Richmond as the objective point, had begun; and from this date until Five Forks every day was a day of battle for us. Butler had seized the Richmond pike, when we reached Petersburg, and had thrown a considerable force across to the railroad and Chesterfield Court House. But the advance of Hoke's Division with the brigades of Ransom and Hagood, under the command of that sterling North Carolinian, Robert F. Hoke, caused its withdrawal to the river side of the pike. At Half Way House Hoke offered battle, but the enemy slowly retired before him,



and the way was opened to Drewry's Bluff for the reinforcements to Beauregard. As soon as we arrived there Ransom's Brigade was ordered to the right of our lines, and had barely reached there and occupied the works when the first assault of the battle of Drewry's Bluff was made upon us. While repelling this attack in front, but fortunately for the Forty-ninth Regiment, which was on the extreme right, not till the Federals in front were beginning to give way, a Federal line of battle, which had extended around our right under cover of a piece of woods, opened a galling fire in our rear, and advanced to the charge from the woods on our right. But brave Durham had his skirmishers there; and though they were few in number, he was ever a lion in the path of the foe. Foot by foot he contested the ground until the charge in our front was broken, when the Forty-ninth and Twenty-fifth Regiments leaped over the works and poured a destructive volley into the ranks of the flanking party, before which their line melted away. Poor Durham—truly a Chevalier Bayard, if ever nature placed a heart in man which was absolutely without fear and a soul without reproach or blemish—received here a wound in his arm, necessitating amputation, from which he died. Occupying a position which did not call for his presence in battle, he never missed a fight; was always in the thickest at the forefront of the tempest of death; he gloried in the fray, and earned a reputation throughout the army as the fighting Quartermaster, which added lustre to the valor of our troops, and which North Carolina and North Carolinians should not suffer to perish. He was but a boy, an humble, devout Christian, as pure and chaste as a woman, and in the intensity of his love for his State and the cause she had espoused he counted the sacrifice of death as his simplest tribute in defense of her honor.

General M. W. Ransom was here wounded in the arm, and the brigade was afterwards commanded during the summer and till his return at different times, by Colonels Clarke, Rutledge, McAfee, Faison and Jones. The Fifty-sixth Regiment being hotly assailed in falling back, lost a number in killed and wounded; but repulsed every assault with telling effect. The Forty-ninth lost eleven killed and a consid-



erable number of wounded in this engagement of the evening of 13 May. Brave Captain J. P. Ardrey, of Company F, was wounded, and left in the enemy's hands, and died before he could be removed. Lieutenant S. H. Elliott, of the same company, was wounded, and Lieutenant Linebarger, of Company H, was mortally wounded. Dr. Goode, Assistant Surgeon, and three litter-bearers were captured, in attending upon the wounded. The 14th and 15th of May were passed in repelling repeated charges of the enemy upon our lines and efforts to advance his own from our outer line of fortifications, which had been abandoned to him on the evening of the 13th. Severe loss was inflicted upon them in each attempt.

16 MAY, 1864.

The morning of 16 May was obscured by a dense fog. Preparations began at 3 o'clock on the Confederate side for an attack, and by daylight Beauregard moved his entire army forward for an attack, *en echelon* by brigades, left in front, the left wing being under the immediate command of General Robert Ransom. Ransom struck the enemy on their extreme right, carried their works, and turned their flank, each brigade in turn assisting to open the way to the next attacking one.

Blow after blow fell thick and fast on Butler's army. All parts of his line were heavily pressed, so that none could render assistance to the other, and before noon his army, largely exceeding in numbers the attacking force, thoroughly equipped and confident of victory, was completely routed, and Beauregard had gained one of the best fought battles of the war. In boldness of conception and execution, tactical skill, thorough grasp of all the conditions of the situation, and command of his forces, conducted by him in person on the field, it was unsurpassed by any fight on this continent; and but for Whiting's moving from his position on the turnpike in Butler's rear, thus allowing him to escape without molestation to Bermuda Hundreds, it would have resulted in the capture of his entire army. It is difficult now to understand how so many blunders could have been committed at



critical moments by Confederate generals in important commands, save that the hand of Fate had penned the decree of our defeat; but of all those, which contributed to our downfall, that of Major-General Whiting, on the afternoon of 16 May, 1864, was one of the most glaring and stupendous. Soon after the battle opened the Twenty-fourth and Forty-ninth Regiments were ordered to the right flank of Bushrod Johnson's Brigade, on the right of the turnpike facing towards Petersburg, and which was heavily engaged on the immediate right of our brigade. Moving at double-quick through thick woods we came upon the enemy's first line of works, and drove them from it with great loss. Pursuing the foe, we advanced to the attack of the second line under a very heavy fire in our front, and a severe enfilade from our right. Colonel W. J. Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth commanded the brigade. Under his orders, and following that regiment, we turned to the right, and drove the enemy from the position, which enabled the enfilade fire to harass us, capturing his colors, inflicting heavy loss upon him. Moving directly forward, we again attacked the second line of their works, and had nearly reached them, when we were ordered to fall back and reform our lines. This was done under shelter of a skirt of woods; and in a short time Major James T. Davis, Colonel McAfee having been wounded, and Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming having been left in command of the brigade skirmish line when we were moved to the right, gave the command to advance with Captain Chambers' company deployed as skirmishers at an oblique angle to our right. In this attack, aided by the flanking movement from our left, the works in our front were readily taken. In these two charges of this day the Forty-ninth lost heavily in officers and men. When the works had been taken the dead body of Captain Ardrey was recovered. Besides the wounding of the Colonel, Lieutenants W. P. Barnett, of Company F, and H. C. Conley, of Company A, were killed. Captain G. W. Lytle, of Company A, was mortally wounded, and Lieutenants Daniel Lattimore, of Company B, and B. F. Dixon, of Company G, were severely wounded.



## BERMUDA HUNDREDS.

The next day we continued the pursuit of Butler's army, and assisted in his "bottling up" at Bermuda Hundreds. Several brisk skirmishes and picket fights were had there until the lines were established, but none were of serious importance. In a picket charge on the night of 1 June, Captain George L. Phifer, of Company K, was wounded. Companies C, F and K of the Forty-ninth were on the picket, and sustained a loss of three killed and seventeen wounded. In June, 1864, Dr. Ruffin resigned, and Dr. Dandridge was appointed Surgeon, in which position he continued to the close of the war.

On 1 June we crossed the James at Drewry's Bluff, and confronted the enemy on the Chickahominy, at the York River Railroad bridge, and strengthened the fortifications there. On the 10th we were relieved by Kirkland's North Carolina Brigade, and returned, by a forced march, to the south side, and thence to Petersburg, to meet Grant's advance across the James. From this time on Ransom's Brigade became a part of Bushrod Johnson's Division. After marching all night of the 15th we reached Petersburg about 8 o'clock on the morning of the 16th, and were hurried to our fortifications on Avery's farm. At a run we succeeded in getting to the works before the enemy reached them. Through a storm of shot and shell we gained them, just in time to meet their charge, and drive them back. In the afternoon we were hurried to Swift Creek, where the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, under Major John W. Graham, and Gracie's Brigade, drove back the Federal cavalry which had attempted to cut our communications with Richmond, and enter Petersburg from that direction. We were then marched along the Richmond pike until about midnight, when we opened communication with the head of Longstreet's Corps. By the first light next morning we were hurried by train back to Petersburg, where early in the morning the enemy had captured a considerable part of Bushrod Johnson's old brigade and several pieces of artillery. Hastily we threw up a line of rifle pits; and now commenced Beauregard's magnificent grapple with Grant's army until Longstreet's command could



reach us. With scarcely more than 5,000 men and eighteen pieces of field artillery Beauregard kept in check Grant's army, coming up from City Point, all the day and night of 17 June, until sunrise of the 18th, when Longstreet came over the hill at Blandford cemetery on our right. When flanked on our right, we would fall back to meet the flank attack, repulse it, and then, being massed, Beauregard would hurl his shattered but compact battalions against the Federal lines, and force them back, to reform and again press upon us. Through the 17th and the succeeding night every foot of ground from Avery's farm to Blandford cemetery was fought over and over again.

Ransom's Brigade played a conspicuous part in these movements. First Lieutenant Edward Phifer, of Company K, received his death wound through the lungs in this battle. A bright, noble boy and faithful, light hearted soldier. At times during this engagement our troops would be lying on one side of the works and those of the enemy on the other; and it is said that the flag of the Thirty-fifth Regiment was lost and regained a half dozen times, until the Michigan Regiment with which it was engaged in a hand to hand encounter, surrendered to it. It was desperate fighting, and the most prolonged struggle of the kind during the war. With anxious hearts we saw the night wear on, not knowing what fate the morning would bring us, if we survived to see it; and it was with a glad shout that, as the sun rose, and the Federals were massing on our right flank to crush us, we welcomed the head of Longstreet's column coming at a trot to our right wing. The contemplated charge upon us was not made; rifle pits were hastily dug and strengthened into formidable entrenchments on the new line; and thus began the siege of Petersburg.

From this date until 16 March, 1865, just nine months, in the lines east of Petersburg, occupying at different times positions from the Appomattox river to the Jerusalem plank road, often not a hundred yards from the works of the enemy, constantly exposed to danger and death from mortar and cannon shells and balls, grape, shrapnel and the deadlier minie balls, we engaged in daily battle. Exposed to sun and storm,



heat and cold, with scant food and insufficient supplies, the ranks thinning hourly from deaths, wounds and sickness, depressed by the gathering gloom of our falling fortunes, through the dark, bitter and foreboding winter of 1864-'65, the men of the Forty-ninth were faithful unto the end; never faltering in the performance of any duty, and never failing to meet and resist the foe.

On 8 June, 1864, Lieutenant C. C. Krider, of Company C, was wounded in the right shoulder by a piece of shell. On 23 July Captain John C. Grier, of Company F, was wounded in the arm and thigh by pieces of a mortal shell.

#### THE CRATER AT PETERSBURG.

On 30 July occurred the springing of Grant's mine under Pegram's Battery, formerly Branch's, on a hill about four hundred yards to the right of our regiment, and on the left of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade. The Twenty-fifth North Carolina was between us and the mine. The battery, most of its men and officers, and a considerable part of the Twenty-sixth South Carolina Regiment were blown up, the mine containing, it was said, thirty tons of blasting powder. A large excavation was made; and in the smoke and confusion, amid the flying debris and mangled men, the enemy charged in great force, effecting a lodgment in our lines, and a large number of the flags of Burnside's Corps floated on our works. Reinforcements poured to their support and a vigorous assault was made on our line on both sides of the crater. In the van were negro soldiers, crying, "No quarter to the rebels." Most fortunately for our army, we had completed but a day or two before a cavalier line in the rear of the salient, where the explosion occurred; the two lines, salient and cavalier, forming a diamond-shaped fortification. Into this cavalier line, from the left of the salient, rushed by the right flank the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments of Ransom, and, from the other side, the remnant of the Twenty-sixth South Carolina, which had been blown up, and a part of another regiment of Elliott's Brigade. These rapidly formed for a charge to retake our works, but the enemy massed his troops so rapidly into the broken salient that it



was deemed useless to make the attempt, and best to hold on to the cavalier line. Now began some of the most desperate fighting of the war. Ransom's Brigade was that day commanded by Colonel McAfee, of the Forty-ninth.

Simultaneously with the rush into the broken salient, the enemy in three lines of battle charged our works for a half mile on each side, only to be repulsed time and again with fearful slaughter. Meanwhile, in the cavalier line, our troops were clinging to the works with the tenacity of despair, and fighting with the fury of madmen. The compact, crowded mass of Federals rendered every shot effective. Our men aimed steadily and true; and as each rifle became too hot to be used another gun was at work by one who took the place of the first, or supplied him with rifles which could be handled. From a redoubt to our left and rear Wright's Battery opened upon the crowded, panic-stricken foe, as they huddled together, an enfilading, plunging fire with five field pieces, and two mortars, every shot and shell tearing its way through living flesh. Between our men and small bodies of the enemy, who formed and tried to force their way down our works, several hand to hand conflicts, with bayonets locked and rifles clubbed, occurred, which availed nothing to the cornered enemy. When their supports on either side were driven back it was seen that those who had filled the salient were caught in a trap. When the fighting was hottest, but our supreme danger had been averted, in a large measure, by his promptness in the arrangement and disposition of his own regiment and those men of the brave South Carolinians who had formed with us (when driven from the salient), he, who had so often led us with such calm, intrepid courage, Lieutenant-Colonel John A. Flemming, was shot through the head and instantly killed. Never was a braver knight than he; our State had no more devoted son than Flemming; the South no truer soldier. Somewhat reserved in bearing, severe to those who failed in duty, and disdaining all pretense and insincerity, he did not desire nor practice the arts which seek popularity. But he was so brave, so ready, so steadfast and constant in all trying conjunctures, as in his friendships, that his officers and men loved and respected



him and followed him with implicit zeal and faith. He had said to the writer more than once that he was convinced that he would be killed, and the last time he repeated it, soon after some disaster to our arms, remarked that he would have few regrets in laying down his life, if by so doing, the freedom of the South could be secured. From early morning till nearly 3 o'clock in the afternoon of that fateful July day, the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth North Carolina and Twenty-sixth South Carolina held our line against tremendous odds, and until the force of the assault was spent and broken, when Mahone's Virginia, Wright's Georgia and Sander's Alabama Brigades charged with the Twenty-fifth North Carolina and retook the entire salient, inflicting frightful slaughter upon the enemy. Our lines were re-established, and the Federals were driven back at all points, losing, it was stated, more than 9,000 men, killed and wounded, besides 2,000 prisoners, colors and small arms captured in the undertaking. And when the victory was won, and the Forty-ninth was returning to its former position, Captain Edwin Victor Harris, of Company E, was shot through the neck, severing the main artery; and with his life-blood gushing from his wound and his mouth, realizing his mortal calamity but unable to speak, he extended his hand in farewell to Major Davis, and then to his devoted Lieutenant, John T. Crawford, and immediately the spirit of Edwin Harris, so joyous, happy and bright in this life, winged its flight to God.

Nothing occurred beyond the daily fighting, shelling and sharpshooting, on the lines occupied by our brigade, until 21 August, when we were hastily marched to our right, and under A. P. Hill attacked the enemy on the Weldon Railroad, and after carrying two of his lines of fortifications, dislodged him from his position. Our loss was severe, the Forty-ninth suffering considerably. We then returned to our old place in the trenches. On 14 December Captain C. H. Dixon, of Company G, was killed, and Major C. Q. Petty, who had been appointed Major in the place of James T. Davis, who had succeeded Lieutenant-Colonel Fleming, and eight men, were wounded during a fierce mortar shelling to which we were subjected.



## HARE'S HILL.

We remained in the trenches until 16 March, 1865, when we were relieved by Gordon's troops, and moved to the extreme right of our lines, occupying Mahone's old winter quarters, and there we stayed until the evening of the 25th, when we were marched to Petersburg, and back to our old position on the lines. We reached there about midnight, and soon the arrangements were made for the attack on Fort Steadman, or Hare's Hill, under General John B. Gordon. Just at daylight the next morning we advanced to the assault, Ransom's Brigade being the second one from the Appomattox, and directly in front of Hare's Hill. At the signal the sharpshooters of the Forty-ninth, under First Lieutenant Thomas R. Roullae, following the storming party led by Lieutenant W. W. Flemming of the Sixth North Carolina, in advance, moved across our works, through the obstructions in our front, and the whole brigade, with a rush, climbed the *chevaux de frise* of the enemy, and clambering through and over the deep ditches in their front, went over the enemy's works and captured them before they aroused from their slumbers. The surprise was complete. Sweeping down their lines, the Forty-ninth opened the way for other troops. Ransom's Brigade captured Fort Steadman, the Forty-ninth rushing over it without a halt, and all the works in our front; but those between us and the river were not taken, although we enfiladed that part of the line, and with our fire on their flank, it could have been easily done. Their fort near the river was thus enabled to annoy us greatly. Here Colonel McAfee was again slightly wounded, and Lieutenant-Colonel James Taylor Davis was killed. He was a splendid soldier and a true, warm-hearted gentleman, of decided talents and great promise in his profession—the law. His life would have been an honorable and useful one if he had been spared. Major Petty having remained in camp sick, Captain Chambers, of Company C, was left in command. We held our position until all the troops on our right had fallen back, and most of those on our left. When the order to fall back finally reached us, the retreat was made under the most trying cir-



cumstances. We were exposed to a raking fire from three directions, many were falling at every step, but at last we returned to our lines with but a remnant of the command, having sustained the greatest loss in killed, wounded and prisoners the Forty-ninth met with during the war. Captain Torrance, of Company H, was wounded, Lieutenant Krider, of Company C, was wounded and captured, and Lieutenant Witherington, of Company I, was wounded. The brigade lost 700 men in all, of which the proportion of the Forty-ninth was the greatest.

#### FIVE FORKS.

After the failure of the attack on Grant's lines, evidently a forlorn hope on General Lee's part, we returned to our quarters on the right. On 30 March we participated in the battle of Burgess' Mill and drove the enemy back into his entrenchments after he had assaulted ours. On the 30th we were, with Wallace's South Carolina Brigade, attached to Pickett's Division, and the next morning were marched down the White Oak road to Five Forks, the Federal cavalry making frequent reconnoissances to ascertain our movements. From Five Forks we marched on to Dinwiddie Court House and engaged in battle that afternoon with Sheridan's cavalry, driving them back. We slept on the field. During the night the force in our front was largely reinforced, and before day on 1 April, we were aroused and slowly fell back to Five Forks. By noon we had reached that place and formed line of battle, Ransom's Brigade on the left, the Twenty-fourth holding the extreme left, next the Fifty-sixth, then Twenty-fifth, Forty-ninth and Thirty-fifth. We threw up rifle pits and after the whole regiment had been deployed as skirmishers by Captain Chambers to support the Twenty-fourth, the line was formed as above mentioned, with Wallace's Brigade on our right. The skirmishers and sharpshooters of the brigade were placed under the command of Lieutenant Roulhac and connected with our cavalry on the left. These dispositions had hardly been completed when clouds of Federal skirmishers were advanced against our skirmish line, but



these were held at bay. Twice they charged with lines of battle, and were driven back by our skirmishers. Heavy columns of infantry - Warren's whole Corps - were observed massing on our left, and moving around our flank. Frequent reports were made of this by Lieutenant Roulhac, but apparently no steps were taken to oppose or prevent the movement. After several messages had been sent, Captain Sterling H. Gee, Adjutant-General on Ransom's staff, visited the line and directed Lieutenant Roulhac to turn over the skirmish line to Lieutenant Bowers, and to report in person to General Ransom, who had already communicated the reports to General Pickett. Proceeding to do this, he reached General Ransom and was ordered by him to find General Pickett and inform him of the condition of affairs. But by this time Warren's infantry had struck the left of our line, and overlapped it. Colonel Clarke quickly threw back his regiment to meet this attack, and in a short time was joined by the Twenty-fifth in a similar movement; but this small force could do nothing to check such overwhelming numbers. Doubled up and overpowered, they were nearly all shot down or captured. The remainder of our line was hotly engaged with two lines of battle in their front, which had driven in our pickets, and advanced to the attack of our main line. Running over the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth, and driving the Fifty-sixth from their flank and rear, the enemy was upon us, both flank and rear, protected by the woods on our left, where Clarke had been, while he still fought the line in our front. Colonel McAfee was again slightly wounded, and directed Lieutenant Roulhac, whom he had requested to act as Adjutant to turn over the command to Captain Chambers. As quick as he could be reached, the regiment was moved by Captain Chambers out of the works, at right angles to its former front. In this Colonel Benbow, commanding Wallace's South Carolina Brigade, lent the assistance of one regiment, all he could spare from the right of his command, our Thirty-fifth North Carolina and the remainder of his brigade remaining to hold our front line. The enemy was upon us in a few moments and were discovered in our rear, as we then faced, moving in line



of battle. We were penned in like rats in a hole, but the old regiment which Ramseur formed, and McAfee, Flemming, Davis and Chambers had led, still fought with desperation, and though its ranks were thinning fast, the survivors held their ground and did not yield. A slight attempt was now made to reinforce us by another regiment from Wallace's Brigade and one of Pickett's regiments which tried to reach us on our left and extend our new line, but the enemy was pouring down upon us, and the succor could never reach us. At this time Captain Chambers was severely wounded in the head by a minie ball, and instructing Adjutant Roulhac to hold the position, was carried from the field, barely in time to pass through the only gap which the enemy had not filled. In but a few moments more the left flank of the regiment was driven back on the right to our works, while the enemy's line in our former front came over the works, which had been stubbornly held by Captain J. C. Grier, of Company F, up to this time. We were overpowered and the few that were left were made prisoners, some being knocked down with the butts of rifles, and Captain Grier throwing away his empty pistol, as several bayonets were presented at his breast, with the demand for his surrender. And this was the end. Three times after we were surrounded the Forty-ninth advanced to the charge and drove back the constricting foe; but when we charged in one direction, those on the other side of us closed in upon us, and our efforts availed nothing. Many were killed, maimed and stricken in that last useless and criminally mismanaged encounter. The few who escaped endured the manifold sufferings and daily conflicts of the historic retreat to Appomattox, where with numbers still further reduced, the remnant of the glorious regiment was surrendered, commanded by Major C. Q. Petty.

The details and most of the data for this monograph of the old command have been obtained from Captain Henry A. Chambers, who kindly furnished me the diary he faithfully and accurately kept throughout that stormy period. Accidentally, as I find in reading it over, I have omitted the fact of the wounding of Captain James T. Adams, of Company K, in the trenches during the month of July, 1864, by which he



was deprived of his leg. Others may have escaped my recollection. I have intended them no slight. I would that I could do justice, full but simple justice, not alone to its officers, but its brave, patriotic, faithful rank and file, so many of whom gave up their lives or carried through life mutilated limbs and bodies. In the midst of exacting duties, I could not refuse to contribute the best I could to perpetuate some memorial of the Forty-ninth Regiment. In the thirty-odd years since the surrender many, perhaps most, of those who survived the casualties of war, have faced the grim Sergeant and answered the rollcall beyond. With all such, may their portion be God's blessing of everlasting peace. With those who yet remain, may He bless them with prosperity, usefulness and honorable repose when age has sapped their energies and wasting strength has unfitted them for further toil. My heart fills with sadness and distress when I think of those who poured out their blood as a sacrifice which perchance, the world will say was useless. But, nay, the lesson of courage, fidelity and heroism they left cannot be useless to mankind; the scroll of honor upon which their names are written high cannot, and shall not, be effaced or tarnished by their descendants and their kindred. And what a noble band they were—Ramseur, McAfee, Flemming, Durham, Harris, Davis, Chambers, the Phifers, Adams, Lytle, Krider, Grier, Horan, Thomas, Alex. Barrett, Summers, Crawford, Ardrey, Barnett, Dixon, B. F. Dixon, Torrance, Linebarger, Rankin, Connor and Sherrill. As was said of a group of noble young Englishmen, it may be truly said of them:

“Blending their souls’ sublimest needs  
With tasks of every day;  
They went about their greatest deeds  
Like noble boys at play.”

How their bright young faces come back over the vista of all these long years! How splendid and great they were in their modest, patient, earnest love of country! How strong they were in their young manhood, and pure they were in



their faith, and constant they were to their principles! How they bore suffering and hardship; and how their lives were ready at the call of duty! What magnificent courage; what unsullied patriotism! Suffering they bore, duty they performed, and death they faced and met; all this for the defense of the dear old home land; all this for the glory and honor of North Carolina. As they were faithful unto thee, guard thou their names and fame, grand old mother of us all. If thy sons in the coming time shall learn the lesson of heroism their lives inspired and their deeds declared, then not one drop of blood was shed in vain. If they emulate them, and lift yet higher the banner of the old land's honor, credit and worth, then the agony of defeat is healed to those who survive.

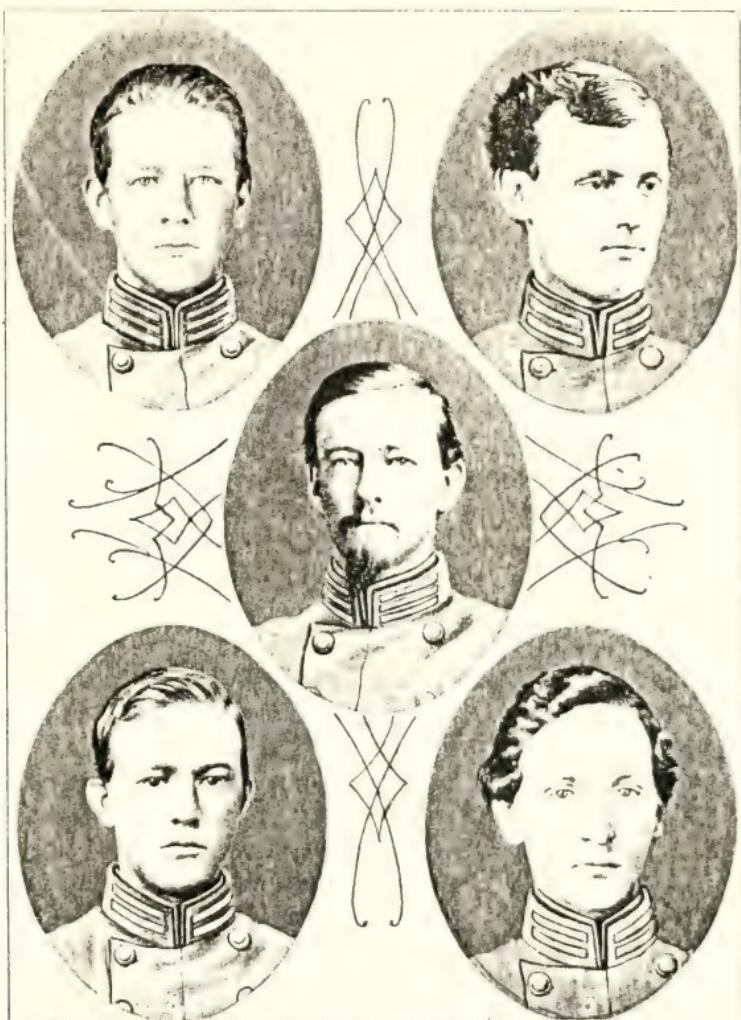
To the memory of those who fell, and those, who have since passed away, this imperfect tribute is offered. To the veterans of the Forty-ninth, who are still among the living, an old comrade salutes you.

THOMAS R. ROULHAC.

SHEFFIELD, ALA.,

9 April, 1901.





FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

1. George L. Pflefer, Captain, Co. K.
2. B. F. Dixon, Captain, Co. G.
3. Thos R. Bouilhac, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
4. Edward Pflefer, 1st Lieut., Co. K.
5. James Greenlee Fleming, 1st Lieut., Co. C.  
(Killed at Sharpsburg.)



## ADDITIONAL SKETCH FORTY-NINTH REGIMENT.

BY B. F. DIXON, CAPTAIN COMPANY G.

The Forty-ninth Regiment was made up of as brave and gallant men as ever shouldered muskets in defense of the South. They were men who did not rush into the army at the first call for volunteers, but who considered well what they were doing, and then calmly and deliberately put down their names as volunteers to defend their country. A large majority of them were heads of families that were dependent upon them for the bread necessary to sustain the lives of wife and children. Yet those men kissing their wives and babies good-bye in March 1862, with unwavering step marched to the front to expose their lives to the bullets of a foe of twice their number. Many a man volunteered in the very outbreak of the war because he had been told that the war would not last sixty days. Indeed some of those war prophets offered to drink all the blood that would be shed, so he hurried away from home for fear that he would not get even a taste of the much-coveted battle. All this had passed away when the Forty-ninth Regiment was organized, and the men knew that a desperate struggle was before them. The Northern army had been greatly strengthened by recruits and discipline, and the great Southern army had already begun to realize the fact that one of the greatest wars ever waged in any country was then raging. Knowing this these men left their homes and turned their faces toward Virginia, the great battle field of the South. The Forty ninth Regiment was made up largely from the country, very few town men were in it, and strange as it may seem, the town and city men were able to endure loss of sleep and irregular hours better than the men from the farms. I suppose the reason for this was the fact that the countryman kept regular hours at home. He went to sleep at 8 o'clock at night, and got up before the sun. He had been accustomed all his life to three square



meals a day at regular intervals, and to depart from that custom was a hardship difficult to meet. While the townman was in the habit of keeping late hours, and eating at uncertain periods, hence the march and the general irregularity of living did not affect him as it did his country cousin. But with a few weeks of drill and discipline the splendid health and the absence of dissipation, which had marked the life of the country boy, began to assert themselves, and soon he became the tough and wiry soldier that never fell out on a march, and was in line when the command came to charge.

The regiment was composed of the following companies:

COMPANY A—*Burke and McDowell*—Captain Flemming. He afterwards became Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, and was one of the bravest men in Lee's army. He fell dead, shot through the heart at the Crater in front of Petersburg. George W. Lytle and J. M. Higgins were successively Captains.

COMPANY B—*Cleveland County*—Captain Corbett. This company was transferred to the Forty-ninth Regiment from the Fifteenth Regiment. Captain Corbett was fearfully hurt in a railroad wreck near Cherryville, N. C., while on his way home on a furlough in 1864, and after realizing the fact that he would not again be able for duty, resigned and Lieutenant Jud. Magness was promoted to the Captaincy of the company.

COMPANY C—*Rowan County*—Captain Pinkney B. Chambers. On his promotion to Major he was succeeded as Captain by Henry A. Chambers.

COMPANY D—*Moore County*—Captain William M. Black. Upon his resignation David S. Barrett became Captain.

COMPANY E—*Iredell County*—Captain Alex. D. Moore.

COMPANY F—*Mecklenburg County*—Captain Davis. Captain Davis was promoted to Major and Lieutenant James P. Ardrey was promoted to Captain. Major Davis was killed in front of Petersburg 25 March, 1865, just a few days before the surrender. He was a brave and true soldier. Captain Ardrey was killed at Drewry's Bluff. I could not keep



back the tears when they told me that he was killed. I loved him like a brother. He was succeeded as Captain by Lieutenant John C. Grier.

COMPANY G—*Cleveland County*—Captain Roberts. Captain Roberts resigned on account of ill health and C. H. Dixon was made Captain. He was killed by a mortar shell in front of Petersburg and Lieutenant B. F. Dixon was promoted to the Captaincy, which he held to the close of the war.

COMPANY H—*Gaston County*—Captain Charles Q. Petty. Captain Petty was promoted to Major and Lieutenant J. N. Torrence became Captain.

COMPANY I—*Catawba County*—Captain W. W. Chenault. Lieutenant Charles F. Connor afterwards became Captain. Lieutenant Connor always made me think of a game rooster in battle. He was tall and straight and his eye was full of fire.

COMPANY K—*Lincoln County*—Captain Peter Z. Baxter. Upon his resignation Lieutenant George L. Phifer and later James T. Adams became Captain.

In the organization of the regiment the following gentlemen were elected Field Officers: Stephen D. Ramseur, of Lincoln county, Colonel. He afterwards became a Major-General and was killed in battle 19 September, 1864. W. A. Eliason, Lieutenant-Colonel; Lee M. McAfee, Major; Cicero Durham, Adjutant; Dr. Rufflin, Chief Surgeon. Colonel Eliason resigned and Major McAfee was promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, and after the promotion of Colonel Ramseur, McAfee became Colonel of the regiment and commanded it to the close of the war.

Cicero Durham became Quartermaster of the regiment, but was in every battle in which the regiment was engaged and always at the front. He had command of the sharpshooters and was killed at Drewry's Bluff while bravely leading his men. I would be glad of the opportunity of naming many more of the Forty-ninth Regiment on account of their magnificent soldierly qualities, but as this is a sketch of the regiment and not of individuals, I must desist.

While the Forty-ninth Regiment was engaged in most of the battles in which the Army of Northern Virginia partici-



pated, and always with honor, and while I would be glad to tell the story of their devotion and fortitude and bravery on all these bloody fields, still I have not the time to go into these matters, and will confine myself to a brief synopsis of the doings of this regiment during the great siege of Petersburg. I do not believe that any soldier in any war, either civilized or savage, ever suffered more than the men who filled the ditches around Petersburg from June, 1864, until the last of March, 1865.

Half clad and half-rationed these brave, devoted men held the lines for nine long months, including one of the most terrible winters that ever spread its white mantle over the earth. Barefooted in the snow, the men stood to their posts on picket, or at the port-holes. Lying in bomb-proofs, so-called, with mud and water to the ankles, and the constant drip, drip, of muddy water from above, clothing and blankets saturated, with a fire that only made smoke, these men passed through the winter of 1864 and 1865. The mortar shells from the enemy's guns fell in the ditches or crashed through the bomb-proofs day and night, while the sharp, shrill hiss of the minie ball, and the shriek of shell and solid shot made the hours hideous day after day, and night after night. For nine months it was certain death for a man to raise his head above the works. Yet with joke and laughter these men dodged the mortar shells and elevated their old ragged hats on ramrods to see how many holes would be shot through them in a given time. I have seen a dozen men gather in the ditch to watch for the coming of a "mortar" as they called it, and when they saw the awful thing curving towards them, they would run with shout and gibe around a traverse while it exploded in the ditch. I saw one of these mortar shells fall in the ditch and lie there frying, when a brave soldier from Lincoln county rushed out of his bomb-proof, caught it up in his hands, and tossed it over the breastworks. When asked why he had gone out of a place of safety to do such a rash act, he said: "I thought maybe the pieces might hit some of the fellers." One night there was a fearful rainfall and the next morning it was discovered that a part of the dam across a small stream had been washed away and all the water in the



pond had disappeared, leaving an opening of some fifteen feet through which the bullets from the Yankee lines could come on the least provocation. Being officer of the day, my attention was called to a crowd of soldiers gathered on either side of the chasm, and upon investigation, I discovered the amazing fact, that these men were trying to see who could run across without being killed, or wounded. There was not the slightest necessity for any of them to cross, but in a spirit of wantonness and fun, they were making the effort. A fellow would take his old hat in his hand, step back to get a good start, then with a shout, he would rush across and kick up his heels at a great rate, if he happened to get over safe. I had to place a guard there to make them stop such foolishness. I give this incident to show how, under constant danger, men became indifferent to it.

The morning sun, as he came from his chamber in the east, day by day, made plain the path for the minie ball, and the "torch" of the mortar shell lighted up the heavens by night. The morning was a call to battle and the night was hideous with bursting shell. No wonder men became inured to danger, and sought excitement in playing with death.

In all these months I do not remember a single, solitary complaint made by any of the men, because of short rations, or cold or nakedness. No intimations were made against the character of canned beef—we had none—a piece of fat bacon and a hard and mouldy cracker were luxuries. A soldier in the trenches asked me to write a letter to his wife at home. This is the letter in substance:

"DEAR WIFE:—The Captain is writing this letter for me, and I wish to say that I am well and getting on first-rate. George Gill had his brains shot out yesterday and Jack Gibbons' son and three others were torn all to pieces with a shell, but thank God they haven't hit me yet, and if I get home I will make up for all lost time in taking care of you and the children. I was sorry to hear that you didn't have enough to eat and the children were crying for bread, but you must be brave, little woman, and do the best you can. I think we will whip the Yankees in a little while longer, and then I can come home and everything will be all right. I pray for you



and the little ones every night and morning, and I know the good God will not let you suffer more than you are able to bear. Your loving husband, etc."

This man was barefooted in January, 1865, when he dictated the letter above. He had not eaten anything all day (this was in the evening), because he had nothing to eat; he was without a coat for his back, and yet the soul within him kept him fed and warm. A Confederate soldier standing barefoot, in tattered trousers, coatless and hatless, with an Enfield rifle on his shoulder, and his cartridge box full, was as brave a man as ever met an enemy on any field of battle in any country, or in any age. Nimble as a deer, long-breathed as a hound, he could run with the horsemen without weariness and fight all day without hunger. He taught the whole world how to fight, and when I meet him to-day I lift my hat and stand bareheaded till he passes by. The Forty-ninth Regiment was in General M. W. Ransom's Brigade during all these weary months, together with the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Fifty-sixth North Carolina Regiments. This brigade stood between Petersburg and the enemy, and if you will ask any citizen of that city he will tell you how they loved and honored Ransom's Brigade. General Ransom was then the same courtly and kind-hearted man he is to-day. Fearless in danger, courteous and kind always, the true gentleman everywhere, he was the idol of his men.

Although we were fighting every day while the siege lasted, there were many extraordinary battles during this period. I have not time to notice but one or two, and notably among these was the battle of the Crater.

This battle occurred on 30 July, 1864. About daylight the mine, which the enemy had charged with eight thousand pounds of powder, was fired and a terrific explosion was the result. Many thought the judgment day had come. The earth, with all it contained, was thrown into the air, leaving a hole 100 feet long, 60 feet wide, and 30 feet deep. Men and cannon were thrown hundreds of feet into the air. Simultaneous with the explosion the enemy opened two hundred pieces of artillery on our lines. The Forty-ninth was to the



left of the ravine, and we were moved rapidly across the ravine and up the works to the crater. And until the enemy, which had taken possession of our lines, was beaten back, we stood in the position assigned to us and fired our guns. The enemy, white and black, came in solid phalanx shouting: "No quarter to the rebels." They held their position until about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, when Mahone's Brigade arrived and with the Twenty-fifth North Carolina Regiment of our brigade and a regiment of South Carolina troops, drove them out. I saw the Twenty-fifth Regiment as they came dashing up the hill towards the Crater. How we cheered them! They rushed up to the Crater which was full of the enemy, white and black, fired one volley and then turning the butts of their guns, they let them fall, crushing the skulls of negroes at every blow. This was more than mortal man could stand, and in a little while the lines were re-established and the dead of the enemy lay in heaps upon the ground. I mention this battle for the reason that, taken unawares as we were, with the heavens filled with dust and smoke, and the earth rocking beneath our feet, with out-speaking thunders in our ears, if that portion of Lee's army which held the lines around Petersburg had not been made up of some of the coolest and bravest men that ever fired a musket, they would have stampeded then and there and Grant would have taken the city and Lee's army could have been destroyed. This is doubtless what the enemy expected us to do, but instead of that, our brave boys never wavered for an instant, but marched to the rescue of the gallant South Carolinians, as if they were going on dress parade. General Ransom being absent, the brigade was commanded that day by Colonel McAfee, of the Forty-ninth.

Another notable battle in which the Forty-ninth was engaged was the battle of Hare's Hill, on 25 March, 1865. In this battle the Forty-ninth lost fully one-half its number in killed, wounded and missing. Somebody blundered here. On the morning of the 25th a corps of engineers and sharpshooters crossed over the space between the lines, and without the loss of a single man, captured the enemy's works, includ-



ing Fort Steadman, together with a large number of prisoners. The main body of our army followed and took possession of the works and then lay down and waited until the enemy could reinforce their lines, and still waited until they came upon us in front and by flank in numbers so great that they could not be counted, then we were ordered to fall back to our own lines, which we did through such a storm of shot and shell as I never dreamed of before. How any man escaped death I have never been able to see. I remember starting on the perilous run never expecting to reach our lines, and the terrible thought would come to me, "I am to be shot in the back." I have always been able to find some sort of excuse for failures, but in this instance I stand to-day as I did on that day, and unhesitatingly say, "Somebody blundered."

The last battle I shall mention was that of Five Forks, the loss of which caused the fall of Petersburg and practically ended the war. After the disastrous struggle on 25 March the Forty-ninth Regiment marched through Petersburg for the last time in a drenching rain, and lay at Battery No. 45 all night; then we were moved daily from place to place until the morning of the 31st we moved in the direction of Dinwiddie Court House, and after marching and counter-marching, we finally lay down on our arms near the enemy, and waited for daylight, fully expecting to be ordered into battle every minute. We were doomed to disappointment, however, for early in the morning of the first day of April we were ordered to Five Forks, with the enemy following close in our rear. Reaching Five Forks, we quietly threw up a line of breastworks, and the enemy came thundering on in front, then in the rear, the men of the Forty-ninth blazing away with the same calm deliberation that had characterized them on scores of battlefields before, but it was no use. The Yankees simply run over us and crowded us so that it became impossible to shoot. They literally swarmed on all sides of us, and by and by, as I looked toward the center of the regiment, I saw our old tattered banner slowly sinking out of sight. A few men escaped by starting early, but most of the true and tried men of this gallant old regiment were prisoners of



war and in a little while were on their way to Point Lookout, or Johnson's Island.

It is unjust to all the other regiments of the North Carolina troops to claim for any one regiment any special bravery or devotion to the Lost Cause. There was not a regiment, so far as my information goes, that did not meet all requirements of the service and fill the measure of its responsibility to the South. But while I do not claim any special honor for any one body of soldiers from North Carolina, I do claim this for my State as against other Southern States.

With a population in 1860 of 629,942, and 115,000 voters, North Carolina sent 127,000 soldiers to the Confederate armies. She furnished 51,000 stands of arms, horses for seven regiments of cavalry, artillery equipments for batteries, etc. North Carolina expended, out of her own funds, \$26,663,000 and never applied for a dollar of support from the Confederate Government. She lost 37 Colonels of regiments killed in action, or died of wounds. She had six Major-Generals in service, and three of them, namely: Pender, Ramseur and Whiting, were killed in battle. There were 25 Brigadier Generals from this State, four of whom were killed, and all the others were wounded. The first victory was won by North Carolinians at Bethel, 10 June, 1861, and they fired the last volley at Appomattox.

In the seven days' fight around Richmond in 1862, there were 92 Confederate regiments engaged, and 46 of them were from North Carolina—just one-half—and more than one-half of the killed and wounded were from this State. At Chancellorsville in May, 1863, there were forty North Carolina regiments, and of the killed and wounded over one-half were from this State.

At Gettysburg 2,592 Confederates were killed, and 12,707 wounded. Of the killed 770 were North Carolinians, 435 Georgians, 399 Virginians, 2,588 Mississippians, 247 South Carolinians, and 204 Alabamians. The Northern army lost in this great battle 3,155 killed and 14,529 wounded. North Carolina lost during the war 41,000 men who were killed in battle or died in the service, 14,000 of the above number were



killed upon the battlefield, against 9,000 as the highest number from any other Southern State.

These are facts and figures which do not properly belong to a sketch of the Forty-ninth Regiment; still they are true as to the part which our good State played in that dreadful war, and I want our North Carolina boys and girls to know what sort of forefathers they had in the times which tried the souls of men.

Peace to the ashes of the brave men who gave their lives for the Lost Cause! "They sleep their last sleep, they have fought their last battle, and no sound can awake them to glory again."

May God bless the living! Some of them are watching, day by day, for the sunset's glow, or stand listening to the beat of the surf as it breaks upon the shores of eternity. May God give them victory in the last battle!

B. F. DIXON.

SHELBY, N. C.,

9 April, 1901.





FIFTIETH REGIMENT.

1. John C. Vanhook, Lieut.-Colonel.      3. J. T. Ellington, 1st Lieut., Co. C.  
2. Wm. A. Blalock, 1st Lieut., Co. A      4. J. C. Ellington, 2d Lieut., Co. C.



# FIFTIETH REGIMENT.

BY J. C. ELLINGTON, SECOND LIEUTENANT COMPANY C.

The Fiftieth Regiment North Carolina Troops was organized 15 April, 1862, at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, composed of the following companies:

COMPANY A—*Person County*—Captain John C. Van-Hook.

COMPANY B—*Robeson County*—Captain E. C. Adkinson.

COMPANY C—*Johnston County*—Captain R. D. Lunsford.

COMPANY D—*Johnston County*—Captain H. J. Ryals.

COMPANY E—*Wagaw County*—Captain John Griswold.

COMPANY F—*Moore County*—Captain James A. O. Kelly.

COMPANY G—*Rutherford County*—Captain G. W. Andrews.

COMPANY H—*Harnett County*—Captain Joseph H. Adkinson.

COMPANY I—*Rutherford County*—Captain John B. Eaves.

COMPANY K—*Rutherford County*—Captain Samuel Wilkins.

Marshall D. Craton, of Wayne county, was elected Colonel; James A. Washington, of Wayne county, Lieutenant-Colonel; George Wortham, of Granville county, Major; Dr. Walter Duffy, of Rutherford county, was appointed Surgeon; E. B. Borden, of Wayne county, Quartermaster; E. S. Parker, of Wayne county, Commissary; W. H. Borden, of Wayne county, Adjutant; Jesse Edmundson, of Wayne, Sergeant-Major; Dr. R. S. Moran, Chaplain.

The six weeks following the organization of the regiment were spent at Camp Mangum, and we were subjected to almost constant drilling from morning till night. There was



not, during this time, a single musket in the regiment, but as a substitute we were armed with what was then known as the "Confederate pike." This formidable implement of war consisted of a wooden handle about ten feet long, at one end of which a dirk-shaped spear was securely fastened, and attached to this spear at the shank, or socket, was another steel blade in the form of a brier hook in order, as the boys said, that they could get them "a-going and a-coming." These were not very well adapted for practice in the manual of arms, but at the end of the six weeks the regiment was remarkably well drilled, considering all the circumstances. On 31 May we were ordered to Garysburg, near Weldon, where the same routine of daily and almost hourly drill was kept up until 19 June, when we were ordered to Petersburg, Va., and went into camp at Dunn's Hill, near the city. In a short while we were moved from here to Pickett's factory, on Swift creek, where we remained until 26 June, on which date we were ordered to Drury's Bluff, on the James river, below Richmond.

We were now organized into a brigade composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth, Fiftieth and Fifty-third North Carolina Regiments, and Second North Carolina Battalion, with General Junius Daniel in command of the brigade.

#### IN FRONT OF RICHMOND, 1862.

On Sunday, 29 June, we were made to realize for the first time that we were actually a part of the great Confederate army, when we received orders to prepare at once for a forced march to reinforce our troops who had already been fighting for several days in succession around Richmond. Taking the Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fiftieth North Carolina Regiments and Brem's (later Graham's), Battery, General Daniel crossed the James river on a pontoon bridge, and after a hard day's march over almost impassable roads, we reached a point near the two contending armies and camp for the night. About daybreak on the morning of 30 June we resumed the march. Just at sun rise, and immediately in our front, at a short distance, a balloon sent up by the enemy for the purpose of locating our lines and discovering the



movements of our troops, made its appearance above the tree tops. Our line was immediately halted and a battery quickly gotten into position, opened fire on the balloon, which rapidly descended and passed from view. We resumed the march, but being thus timely warned, changed our course. We are soon joined by Walker's Brigade, moving on a different road, and together reached New Market at an early hour. At this place we were joined by General Wise, with the Twenty-sixth and Forty-sixth Virginia Regiments, and two light batteries, he having left Chatlin's Bluff soon after Daniel's Brigade left Drewry's Bluff, for the purpose, as he states in his official report, of supporting General Holmes at his urgent request.

The aforementioned troops, together with a squadron of cavalry under command of Major Burroughs, constituted the command of General Theo. H. Holmes, which, early on the morning of 30 June, took position near New Market on the extreme right of the Confederate line. We remained in this position for several hours, when we received orders to move down the River road to support some batteries in charge of Colonel Deshler, which had been placed in position in a thick wood near the River Road between Malvern Hill and the James river. The three regiments of General Daniel's Brigade took position in rear of Colonel Deshler's Battery with the Forty-fifth North Carolina Regiment, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Morehead, on the right; the Fiftieth, commanded by Colonel Craton, in the center; the Forty-third, commanded by Colonel Kenan, on the left. The right of the Forty-fifth rested a little beyond where the roads forked, and was partially protected by the woods; the Forty-third had the slight protection afforded by woods on both sides of the road; the Fiftieth occupied the open space made by clearings on both sides of the road at this point. About the time the formation of our lines in the road was completed, we were startled by the explosion of a single shell just over our heads, as if dropped from the skies above. We could form no idea whence it came, but were not long kept in doubt, for in a few minutes there was a perfect shower of shells of tremendous proportion and hideous sound hurled from the heavy naval guns of the Federal fleet on the James river,



just opposite and about 900 yards distant, with a perfectly open field intervening. The scene was awe-inspiring, especially to raw troops who were under fire for the first time. Such a baptism of fire for troops not actually engaged in battle has very rarely been experienced in the history of war. There was a slight depression in the road way, and across the open space occupied by the Fiftieth Regiment was a plank fence. We were ordered to lie down behind this for such protection as it and the embankment on the road side might afford. About this time a squadron of cavalry, which was drawn up in line on the right of the road and just opposite the position occupied by the Fiftieth Regiment, was stampeded by the explosion of a shell in their ranks, and in their wild flight rushed their horses against the plank fence which, like a dead-fall, caught many of our men who were held down to be trampled by the horses, until we could throw down the rail fence on the opposite side of the road and allow them to escape, which they were not slow to do. In the confusion incident to this affair, and the effort of the men to escape injury from the wild horses, the color-bearer of the Fiftieth Regiment escaped to the open field to the right of the road and planted the colors in full view of the fleet on the river, thereby concentrating their fire on our part of the line. It was some time before he was noticed standing solitary and alone in the open field, grasping his flag staff, which was firmly planted in the ground, as if bidding defiance to the whole Union army and navy, and the rest of mankind. As soon as order had been restored, Colonel Deshler was notified that the infantry support was in position, and he was instructed to open fire on the enemy's lines, which were now occupying Malvern Hill. This served to divert a portion of the fire of the gunboats from our part of the line, but at the same time drew upon us the fire of the enemy's batteries on Malvern Hill at short range with grape and canister, together with solid shot and shell. We were now under a heavy cross fire, with no protection from the fire of these batteries. The Confederate batteries in our front under command of Colonel Deshler, were suffering terribly, and although many of the men were either killed or disabled by wounds, and most of the horses lost,



they never wavered, but stood by their guns and served them to the close of the fight. As the fire from Malvern Hill continued to increase, new batteries being constantly added, General Holmes requested General Daniel to send forward the guns of Brem's battery to reinforce Colonel Deshler. A short while after these passed to the front, General Daniel received an order from General Holmes to advance a portion of his infantry to their support. The Forty-fifth and Fiftieth Regiments promptly moved forward in column down the road, but had proceeded only a short distance when we were met by Brem's Battery in wild flight, dashing through our ranks, knocking down and running over many of our men with their horses and guns. About this time the Federals posted a battery on our right flank at short range. As it was impossible to withstand this flank fire, we were ordered to leave the road and take position under cover of the woods on the right. The writer remained in the road, but took advantage of such protection as was afforded by an oak gate post about eighteen inches square standing on the right of the road. I had been here but a short while when General Daniel came riding slowly along the line, speaking to and encouraging the men, his horse bleeding profusely from a wound just received. There was a perfect shower of shot and shell along the road all the while, but as he reached a point opposite where I was standing, a shell from the gun-boats exploded just above the road, and I saw him fall from his horse. He was soon able to rise and walk to the gate post, where he remained until he recovered from the shock, after which he walked to the rear, secured another horse, and returning to where I was ordered me to go across the road, form my company, which was the color company of the regiment, march it to our former position on the road and have the regiment form on it. We were all soon back in our first position on the road, where we remained until about 10 o'clock that night, when we were marched back up the road to a piece of woods and camped for the night. On the following day, 1 July, we took position near that of the day before, and remained in line of battle during the day and all night. For six days in succession the Confederates had been



successful in battle, and the Federal army, under General McClellan, was whipped, demoralized and in full retreat, hoping almost against hope, that they might by some chance reach cover of their gunboats on the James river. The battle of Malvern Hill, the last of the seven days' battles, proved disastrous to the Confederates. There was a fearful sacrifice of life and all for naught, as on the following morning, 2 July, we stood for hours and watched the Federal column moving along the roads to their haven of safety under cover of their gunboats at Harrison's Landing, and we were powerless to interpose any obstacle.

Without presuming to criticise the conduct of this battle, or fix the responsibility for failure to capture McClellan's entire army, a result which at this time seemed almost absolutely certain, I will simply recall the fact that as early as the night of 29 June, and all day of the 30th, General Holmes was within a short distance of the naturally strong position of Malvern Hill with more than 6,000 troops, and could easily have occupied this position. During the day of 30 June, General Porter, of the Federal army, took advantage of this opportunity to occupy and fortify these heights, and thereby cover the retreat and make possible the escape of McClellan's army, while the 6,000 troops under General Holmes for two days and nights served no other purpose than to furnish targets for the Federal gunboats and batteries.

On 2 July we commenced the march back to our former camp at Drewry's Bluff, reaching there about 8 o'clock the next morning.

On 6 July we were ordered to Petersburg, where for several weeks we were employed in constructing breastworks around the city and doing picket duty along the river.

#### HARRISON'S LANDING.

On 31 July, just one month after the battle of Malvern Hill, the infantry brigades of Generals Manning and Daniel, and the artillery brought over by General Pendleton, consisting of forty-three pieces, together with the light batteries belonging to General D. H. Hill's command, making seventy pieces in all, left Petersburg on a secret mission. In order



to conceal the real design, the report had been freely circulated that it was a demonstration against Suffolk. We left Petersburg at 7 o'clock a. m., marched seven miles and were halted at Perkinson's Mill, where rations were issued to the men. Late in the afternoon we resumed the march, having received orders that all canteens or anything that was calculated to make unnecessary noise, should be discarded, and that no one should speak above a whisper under penalty of death. The night was intensely dark, as a heavy thunder storm prevailed. This caused much trouble and consequent delay on the part of the artillery, which was following in our rear. About midnight General Hill, with the infantry brigades of Manning and Daniel, reached Merchant's Hope Church. In a short while General Pendleton arrived and reported to General Hill that it would be impossible to get his guns in position in time to make the attack that night, as had been contemplated and planned. General Hill expressed great disappointment and fear that the expedition would prove a failure, as our troops would undoubtedly be discovered the next day. He turned over the command to General S. G. French and returned to Petersburg that night. The infantry moved back from the road in a thick wood just opposite the church, where they remained concealed the balance of the night, all of the next day and until midnight of 1 August. About the time we reached our position on the night of 31 July, the rain, which had been threatening during the fore part of the night, broke loose in a perfect torrent, thoroughly flooding the flat, swampy ground upon which we were compelled to lie until midnight of 1 August.

This day, 1 August, was the date set apart by the State authorities of North Carolina for the casting of the soldier vote in the State election, which was then held on the first Thursday in August. We, therefore, had the novel experience of conducting an important and exciting election while lying flat on the ground in mud and water, and "no one allowed to move or speak under penalty of death." It is needless to state that Colonel Z. B. Vance, who was recognized as the soldiers' candidate for Governor, received an overwhelming majority of the vote cast. The writer, who was then eighteen



years of age, had the pleasure of casting his first political vote for this favorite son of the Old North State. For fear that some member of Congress, over zealous for the maintenance of "the purity of the ballot," may introduce a "joint resolution" to inquire into the legality of this election, I will state that in the army "age" was not one of the qualifications inquired into, but the carrying of a musket or sword was considered all-sufficient.

After it had been decided that it was impracticable to make the attack on the night of 31 July, General Pendleton gave orders to his subordinate officers to take such steps as would effectually conceal their guns and horses from the observation of the enemy when they sent up their balloon next morning, which was their custom each morning as soon as it was light enough to see distinctly. They had barely completed this task when the balloon was seen slowly ascending, but fortunately they were not discovered. Each commander of a battery had certain specific work assigned him by General Pendleton, and they spent the entire day in selecting locations and routes by which they could reach the same the following night. They also took advantage of the day time, when everything was in full view, to range stakes by which to direct their fire at night. The long range guns were directed on McClellan's camp across the river, and the short range on the shipping on the river. The plan was to make the attack precisely at midnight, but it was 12:30 before everything was in readiness. Forty-three of the seventy guns had been placed in position on the bank of the river, some of them at the very water's edge. The other guns were not considered of sufficient range, and were, therefore, not brought into action. By 12 o'clock the infantry had been quietly formed, moved across the road, and drawn up in line between the church and the river, in rear of our guns. We were held in suspense for half an hour when the expected "signal" gun was fired. Immediately and simultaneously the forty-three guns were discharged. Each of the guns had been supplied with from twenty to thirty rounds, with instructions to fire these as rapidly as possible, hitch up and retire. The noise and the flashes of light produced by the rapid and continuous fire of



these guns in the dead of a dark, still night, immediately on the water front of the river, was awe-inspiring in the extreme, and the consternation produced among the shipping on the river and in the camp beyond was indescribable. In less than ten minutes many of the vessels were sinking and many others were seriously damaged. In a few minutes after we opened fire several gunboats, which were up the river on the lookout for the Confederate "Merrimac" No. 2, which they were momentarily expecting to come down the river, and which were constantly kept under a full head of steam and prepared for instant action, steamed past our position at a rapid rate of speed, raking the banks of the river with their fire, but not halting to engage our batteries in fair action. Our only casualties were one man killed and two wounded by the explosion of a shell at one of the batteries served by Captain Dabney. The damage inflicted on the enemy will perhaps never be known. General McClellan, in his first report to Washington next morning, states his only damage to be one man slightly wounded in the leg, but in a later report the same day, admits the loss of ten men killed and twelve wounded, and a number of horses killed; but he strangely omits any reference to the damage inflicted on the shipping on the river where most of the guns were directed, and at much shorter range than his camp, where, as stated in his report, "For about half an hour the fire was very hot, the shells falling everywhere from these headquarters to Westover." As evidence that the damage to the shipping must have been serious, on the following morning as the tide came in the whole face of the river was covered with floating wreckage. Thus ended one of the most interesting, as it was one of the most mysterious affairs of the war.

After the affair just related, we returned to Petersburg and thence to our former camp at Drewry's Bluff, when we were again employed in constructing fortifications and doing such picket duty as was required.

On 14 August General McClellan commenced very suddenly and hurriedly to abandon his camp at Harrison's Landing, and a few days thereafter the writer rode down the river and went through and took a general survey of the camp. I



have never witnessed so great destruction of property as I saw then. Articles of clothing and blankets (all new) by the thousands, were piled in great heaps and apparently saturated with oil and fired. Great heaps of corn and oats in sacks were similarly treated and guns by the hundreds and various other articles of value were scattered over the camp, indicating that they must have left in a very great haste.

In the early part of the war it was persistently charged and as persistently denied, that the Federal troops used "steel breast-plates" for protection. I can not certify as to the truth of the charge, but will state that I saw a number of their breast-plates which were left in McClellan's camp.

We remained at and around Drewry's Bluff the balance of the year. In December we constructed comfortable log cabins in which to spend the winter. We completed them in time to move in just a few days before Christmas. We enjoyed a jolly Christmas and congratulated ourselves on being comfortably housed for the winter, but on the last day of December the brigade received "marching orders," and on 1 January, 1863, we started for North Carolina and reached Goldsboro on 3 January. We remained here until 3 February, when we started on the march to Kinston in a very heavy snow storm. We reached Kinston on 7 February, and went into camp.

#### ATTACK ON NEW BERN.

A plan for a general and concerted movement along the coast region between Norfolk and Wilmington had been arranged for the early spring. A part of the plan was to make a simultaneous and combined attack on New Bern from three points. General Pettigrew was to open the attack from the north side of the Neuse river and General Daniel with his brigade was to follow on the south side, while General Robert Ransom moved down the Trent river, these last two commands to attack from the land side and the rear of the city. The Forty third, Forty fifth and Fiftieth Regiments of Daniel's Brigade left the camp near Kinston on the morning of 12 March, moving down on the south side of Neuse river, accompanied by General D. H. Hill in person. Late in the after-



noon of 13 March, we encountered the enemy in considerable force of infantry, cavalry and artillery, and strongly fortified at "Deep Gully," a small stream a few miles west of New Bern.

General Daniel led the attack in person, and after a lively skirmish the enemy retired hastily and in much confusion. After thoroughly shelling the woods in front, we occupied their abandoned works for the night. During the night the enemy was reinforced by three regiments of Massachusetts infantry, together with cavalry and artillery. At daybreak on the following morning we moved to the east side of the stream and took position in the following order: Forty-fifth Regiment in the centre, Forty-third to the right, and Fiftieth to the left of the road. A strong skirmish line was immediately thrown forward by the Fiftieth Regiment to feel for the enemy in the thick wood in our front. When they had advanced only a few paces in front of the main line they received a volley from the enemy, to which they promptly replied, and then followed a lively skirmish, our line slowly, but steadily, advancing all the while. The enemy resisted stubbornly, but were forced back on their main line. This our men were instructed to do, and then to slowly fall back in the hope that the enemy would follow and be drawn on our main line and thus bring on a regular engagement, but they remained behind their fortifications. While the Fiftieth Regiment was thus engaged, Colonel Kenan, with his Forty-third Regiment, gallantly drove the enemy from his front on the right of the road. We were in suspense in the meantime, waiting for the sound of Pettigrew's guns on the north side of the river, which, by arrangement, was to be the signal for our advance to the attack of the city from the rear. Owing to the soft, miry character of the soil on the flat lands on the north side of the river, he found it impossible to move his guns near enough to be brought into action, and without these nothing could be accomplished, and he concluded to withdraw his line and this forced us to retire from our position, which we did the following day and returned to Kinston.



## WASHINGTON, N. C.

On 25 March, 1863, the Fiftieth Regiment left Kinston for Greenville, and on the 29th, crossed the Tar river, and joining Garnett's Brigade moved on Washington, which we invested for sixteen days. The regiment first took position with Garnett's Brigade on the east side, and near the town, but was afterwards ordered to meet a strong force of the enemy, which were reported to be advancing from Plymouth. They afterwards recrossed the Tar river and rejoined their old brigade (General Daniel's), which had been recalled from Virginia, at the Cross Roads near Washington, on the south side of the river. On 9 April the Fiftieth Regiment was sent by General Daniel, at the request of General Pettigrew to aid him in the affair at Blount's Mill. After this we returned to our brigade at the Cross Roads, and on the night of the 14th the Fiftieth Regiment moved down the "Grimes Road" and took position in a small clearing to the right of the woods a few hundred yards from the bridge at the town. We were exposed to heavy fire from the Federal guns, which had perfect range of the road for more than a mile. We were located by the small clearing which we occupied and were subjected to heavy fire from the combined batteries throughout the night, but having the protection of the timber in the intervening swamp, suffered very little. On the 15th the entire brigade took position near the river between the town and Rodman's Point. The Fiftieth Regiment was sent across the low land and took position immediately on the bank of the river. In a short while our batteries at Hill's and Rodman's points opened a heavy fire, which lasted only for a short while. We supposed that the enemy's boats, which were constantly attempting to "run the blockade," had been driven back, as usual, but in a few minutes were taken completely by surprise when a small gunboat made its appearance in front of us and discovering our line drawn up on the bank of the river, greeted us with a succession of broad sides with grape and canister, until we "double-quicked" across the open ground and found cover behind a swamp. The garrison now being relieved by an ample sup-



ply of rations and ammunition, as well as reinforcement of fresh troops, the siege of Washington, which had lasted for sixteen days, was raised, and on the 16th our troops retired to Greenville.

The Federal commander, General Foster, in his official report, states that the "Escort," which succeeded in running the gauntlet of our batteries, was struck forty times by the guns at Hill's and Rodman's points, and that the pilot was killed by a rifle shot.

On 1 May the brigade was ordered to Kinston, and on the 7th moved down near Core creek, on the Atlantic & North Carolina Railroad, and tore up several miles of the railroad track. Together with Colonel Nethercutt's Battalion, we made repeated incursions into the enemy's territory around New Bern, capturing a number of their pickets and scouts.

On 17 June the brigade was again ordered to Virginia, and we reached the depot about midnight; but before we were all aboard our train an order was received for the Fiftieth to return to their camp, and thus for the second time we were separated from our brigade, which we never rejoined.

On 21 June we were ordered to Greenville and attached to Martin's Brigade. We were engaged in constructing fortifications around the town and occasionally raiding the enemy's territory around Washington until 3 July, when we returned to Kinston.

#### POTTER'S RAID.

On 19 July, 1863, we received orders to intercept General Potter, who was raiding the eastern counties from New Bern to Rocky Mount. This expedition, composed chiefly of the Third New York Cavalry and "North Carolina Union Troops," mostly negroes, left New Bern on 18 July and reached Street's Ferry on their return 22 July. They burned the bridges at Greenville, Tarboro, Rocky Mount; also the railroad bridge and trestle at this place, the Battle cotton factory, machine shops, engines and cars, store-houses, flour mills, a Confederate iron clad gunboat, with two other steam-boats, all provisions they could find, and eight hundred bales of cotton. Some of the above might be excused as being



legitimate in time of war, but the conduct generally through the country traversed was wholly inexcusable, cowardly, and infamous in the extreme. Where they visited plantations they ordered the negroes to take the horses, wagons, buggies and carriages and plunder their owner's houses, taking whatever they wished and join the procession. General Potter, in his official report, states that some three hundred of these negroes reached New Bern with him. This is a very small proportion of the number we intercepted and captured at the "Burney Place," where Potter succeeded in flanking us and making his escape. Our object was to get between Potter and New Bern, cut off his retreat if possible, or at least harass and delay his return until reinforcements might reach us by way of Kinston and effect his capture. Unfortunately we had no cavalry except a small detachment of Colonel Kennedy's men. Colonel Faison, with the Fifty-sixth North Carolina Regiment, had been left to guard and hold Coward's bridge. This left only the Fiftieth Regiment and a portion of Colonel Whitford's Battalion to operate. The difficulty of contending with the movements of cavalry in an open country can be fully appreciated, especially as they kept constantly on the move all night. By destroying all the bridges and by rapid movement, without rest, sleep or anything to eat, we held them on the upper side of the creek for two days and nights. After maneuvering all night of the 21st, crossing plantations and traveling unused country paths, they succeeded in escaping with the head of their column about daybreak on the morning of the 22d. We succeeded, however, in reaching the point in time to intercept the rear of the column consisting mostly of negroes, traveling in every conceivable style. General Potter, in his haste to escape, with his troops, abandoned his "contrabands," as he calls them, to their fate.

On reaching the "Burney Place" we opened fire on the column with a small brass cannon mounted on a saddle strapped to the back of a mule. This utterly demoralized the "contrabands" who, in their mad rush to keep pace with their erstwhile deliverers, but who were now fleeing for their lives, failed to discover us. The shock was so sudden and unex-



pected that the effect was indescribable. The great cavalcade, composed of men, women and children, perched on wagons, carts, buggies, carriages, and mounted on horses and mules, whipping, slashing and yelling like wild Indians, was suddenly halted by our fire upon the bridge. This fire was upon some negro troops who were in the rear of Potter's column. One negro Captain, who was driving a pair of spirited iron-gray horses, attempted to rush past three of our men who were lying in the yard and was shot dead as he stood up in the buggy firing at them as he drove past. Many others were either killed or wounded in attempting to escape through the woods near by. In the excitement and confusion which ensued many of the vehicles were upset in attempting to turn around in the road and many others wrecked by the frightened horses dashing through the woods. We scoured the woods and gathered up several hundred negroes among the number several infants and a number of small children who had been abandoned to their fate. About 8 o'clock we started in pursuit of Potter. For miles the road and woods on either side were strewn with all kinds of wearing apparel, table ware, such as fine china and silver ware, blankets, fine bed quilts and all sorts of ladies' wearing apparel which had been taken from the helpless, unprotected women at the plantations visited by the negroes, under General Potter's orders. The reason these things were strewn indiscriminately along the road was that the few men of Colonel Kennedy's Cavalry and such as we were able to mount from time to time with the abandoned horses, kept up a running fight with the rear of the retreating column from the "Burney Place" to Street's Ferry, causing many of the spirited carriage horses to become unmanageable and take to the woods, wrecking the vehicles and scattering their contents. I saw a number of instances where the carriages had been upset and the throats of the horses cut to prevent their falling into our hands. The Fiftieth Regiment, with the exception of the few who had been mounted, performed the extraordinary feat of marching forty eight miles on this, 22 day of July, 1863, reaching Street's Ferry about two hours in the night, and this after having been in line or on the march continuously for two days



and nights without rest, sleep or rations. When we reached the ferry that night there was perhaps not more than one-fourth of our men in line. The writer had charge of the remnants of four companies, but after a rest of about two hours nearly every man and officer was in his place. About midnight some citizens of that section came into our camp and reported that General Potter had communicated with New Bern and that a number of transports had reached the Ferry with heavy reinforcements, and that we were in very great danger of being captured. Acting upon the supposition that this report was true, we left our campfires brightly burning, and retiring in midnight darkness, marched the balance of the night, in the direction of Kinston, thus adding this to our previous record of forty-eight miles, all within twenty-four hours. We afterward learned that we had been deceived by "Buffaloes," and that the transports from New Bern did not reach Street's Ferry until late in the afternoon of the next day. Thus ended the "Potter Raid," one of the most infamous affairs that stain the record of our Civil War, and one which, I believe, has made every true soldier, who was forced to take part in it, blush with shame.

On 9 August the regiment was ordered to Wilmington, and first went into camp at Virginia Creek and afterward at various places along the sound from there to Fort Fisher. On reaching camp on Topsail Sound, commissary supplies were brought down from Wilmington late at night, and rations were issued to the entire regiment early the next morning. All cooked and ate breakfast about the same time, and the entire regiment, men and officers, were poisoned by eating flour which had been poisoned and sent through the blockade. No deaths resulted directly, but the serious effects were felt for a long time and much sickness resulted. This was the second occurrence of the kind at Wilmington. We remained in and around Wilmington until the spring of 1864, engaged in constructing fortifications, doing picket duty along the coast, and provost duty in the city. Nothing except an occasional shelling from some of the enemy's guns and watching our steamers successfully, and with a regularity almost equal to



an up-to-date railroad schedule, run the so-called blockades, served to break the monotony of our every-day life.

On 28 April, 1864, we received orders to proceed to Tarboro. On 30 April, started on the march to Plymouth. The town had, after two days of desperate fighting by the Confederate infantry, led by the gallant Hoke, assisted by Captain Cooke, with the iron-clad boat "Albemarle," surrendered to the commander of the Confederate forces on 20 April.

A part of the Fiftieth Regiment was stationed at Plymouth as a garrison for that place and the other part was sent to the town of Washington in charge of Lieutenant-Colonel Van Hook for similar duty. The chief occupation of the regiment from this time to the latter part of October following, was raiding the eastern counties lying along the coast from New Bern to the Virginia line for the purpose of collecting and bringing out provisions from these productive counties for the use of our army in Virginia. This work was done by small detachments usually in charge of a Captain or a Lieutenant, but in many instances in charge only of a non-commissioned officer. The enemy being constantly on the lookout for these raiding parties, frequent encounters resulted. Recounting the many thrilling adventures covering this period, a whole volume might be written as a well-earned tribute to the private soldier, as many of the daring deeds were accomplished by them without the aid or direction of an officer. Many prisoners and much valuable property were brought in by these small detachments, and a remarkable fact is that they rarely ever lost a man. On one occasion a small party were scouting in the vicinity of Coinjock, where there was a "lock" on the Albemarle and Chesapeake Canal, and noticing the manner of passing boats through this "lock," concluded that it afforded a splendid opportunity to capture one. On returning to camp they reported to their officers the result of their observations and conclusions, and asked permission to make the attempt to carry them into effect. The officers seeming unwilling to assume the responsibility, they then asked for the assurance that they did not object to their assuming all the responsibility and undertaking the job.



Having received this, they at once commenced to make the necessary preparation. Being their week "off duty" they at once proceeded to the place, and having detailed their plans to the "lock-keeper" and secured his co-operation, they concealed themselves near by and awaited the arrival of the Government mail boat, plying between Norfolk and New Bern. The machinery for operating the "lock" very opportunely refused to work and the boat was unable to move in either direction, being fast upon the bottom. The squad made a sudden dash, and after firing a few shots the Captain surrendered his boat. They secured the United States mail pouches and such other valuables as they could carry, and then released the boat with all on board except General Wessells, who had shortly before surrendered Plymouth to General Hoke, and who had been paroled and was on his way to be exchanged. He protested against his arrest and detention, but without avail, as the boys marched him back to Plymouth, the scene of his recent misfortune and humiliation. On another occasion a small party secured a boat, and crossing the sound, reached Roanoke Island at night and proceeded to the light house, and after destroying the light, took the keeper and his wife prisoners. Hundreds of such deeds of daring and adventure might be recorded, but this sketch must necessarily be brief.

23 October the regiment was relieved and ordered to Tarboro, and on the night of 27 October Lieutenant Cushing, of the United States Navy, made his way up the river in a small steam launch, passed the pickets stationed on the wreck of the "Southfield," which was sunk by the Albemarle in the engagement of 19 and 20 April, and making a sudden dash at the Albemarle, exploded a torpedo under her bottom, which caused her to sink at once, thus making it possible for the enemy to recapture Plymouth, which they did on 31 October. This feat of Lieutenant Cushing was one of the most daring and desperate on record, but one which might easily have been prevented if our pickets had been as watchful as they should have been. Several attempts had been made by this same officer to pass our pickets on the river while the Fiftieth Regiment was in charge, but always failed, and several



of his men were killed and captured in these attempts. The Fiftieth Regiment would have remained at Plymouth but for the urgent appeal made by General Lee to Governor Vance and General Holmes to garrison Plymouth and Washington with North Carolina Reserves, and send the Fiftieth back to Virginia. But for this change it is almost certain that Plymouth would not have fallen into the hands of the enemy at the time and under the circumstances it did, thus cutting off the chief source of supplies for our army in Virginia. After the baggage had been loaded, and just as the regiment was ready to go in the cars, the news of the fall of Plymouth was received, order countermanded, and the regiment was, for the third time, prevented from returning to Virginia. We remained at Tarboro and Williamston for one month.

24 November the Regiment was ordered to Augusta, Ga., reaching that place on the 27th, and on the 29th was ordered to Savannah. On reaching Charleston the next day a special train was in waiting, General Hardee having telegraphed General Beauregard from Savannah to rush the regiment with all possible haste to Grahamville to meet General Foster, who was moving on the Charleston & Savannah Railroad near that point for the purpose of destroying the long trestle and thus cut off all communication with Savannah.

On the night of 29 November, General G. W. Smith reached Savannah with a brigade of less than one thousand Georgia militia. At this time there were no other troops in Savannah. General Hardee had received information that General Foster was moving in force on the Charleston & Savannah Railroad for the purpose of destroying the long trestle near Grahamville and thus cut off the only means of transporting troops and supplies to Savannah. General Smith's militia were the only troops that could possibly reach the scene in time to check this advance and save the road, and he had received positive instructions from the Governor of Georgia not to carry the militia beyond the State line. He and General Hardee hurriedly discussed the situation in all its bearings, and the conclusion was reached that the condition and circumstances justified disobeying the orders of



the Governor, and the train which contained the troops was shifted to the Charleston & Savannah road, reaching Hardeeville at daybreak 30 November. They at once proceeded to Honey Hill, and passing a short distance beyond, discovered that the enemy in force had already reached and occupied the position which had been chosen by the Confederate commander prior to the arrival of the troops. This forced General Smith to fall back and occupy a less desirable position. About 8:30 a. m. the enemy commenced his advance on this position and was greeted by a single shot from the only gun in position. Thus opened one of the most remarkable battles, in many respects, that was fought during the Civil War. The fighting was fierce and furious throughout the entire day, and ended only when the darkness of night made it possible for the enemy to retreat unobserved. Charge after charge during the first part of the day was repelled by this small band of Georgia militia, supported only by a South Carolina battery of five light field pieces. During the morning the Forty-seventh Georgia Regiment arrived, but was held in reserve until ordered into action to check a flank movement of the enemy. The Thirty-second Georgia and Fiftieth North Carolina, sent from Charleston, reached the field too late to participate. The Confederate forces present and engaged consisted of the Georgia Militia (Senior and Junior Reserves), 1,000 strong, the Forty-seventh Georgia Regiment, and the South Carolina Battery, commanded by Colonel Gonzales, making a total of 1,400 in all.

The Federal forces engaged consisted of the Fifty-sixth, One Hundred and Twenty-seventh, One Hundred and Forty-fourth, One Hundred and Fifty-seventh New York Regiments; Forty-fourth Massachusetts (colored), and Fifty-fifth Massachusetts; Twenty-fifth Ohio; Twenty-sixth, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, One Hundred and Second United States Colored Regiments; a brigade of Marines, a number of field batteries and several naval guns brought up from the gun-boats in the river near by.

The losses, as taken from the official reports, are as follows:

Confederate: Killed, 8; wounded, 42; total, 50.



Federals: Killed, 88; wounded, 623; missing, 43; total, 754.

The Fifty-fifth Massachusetts reports the loss of its Colonel and 100 men in five minutes, and the Fifty-fourth Massachusetts (colored), reports carrying 150 wounded from the field.

Considering all the circumstances, the character of the troops engaged, disparity in numbers, this fight perhaps has no parallel in history.

#### SAVANNAH.

On 2 December the regiment reached Savannah, and on the 3d was ordered to the Forty-five Mile Station on the Georgia Central Railroad. The other troops were ordered back to the entrenchment at Savannah, leaving the Fiftieth Regiment and a small squadron of Wheeler's Cavalry alone to meet and contend with Sherman's column which was moving down the Georgia Central Railroad. The instructions were to harrass and delay the column so as to gain time to strengthen our fortifications around the city as much as possible. On the 7th we commenced to skirmish with the vanguard, and on the 9th, having fallen back some distance to a strong position, the skirmishing became general and very heavy. The main body of the regiment had fortified a naturally strong position on the right of the road, and Lieut. Jesse T. Ellington, of Company C, was sent with a strong skirmish line to an open savanna on the left to protect that flank. The advance of the enemy was checked and the firing soon became extremely heavy at the point occupied by the regiment, but they stubbornly resisted the repeated attacks and held their position. After awhile there was a sudden lull in the firing on that side of the road which attracted Lieutenant Ellington's attention, and seeking a point where he could get a view of the breastworks discovered that they were occupied by the enemy in force. They had succeeded in flanking the position on the right, and thus forcing the regiment to hastily retire across a bridge which was held by some of Wheeler's men for this purpose. Lieutenant Ellington had been instructed to hold his position until he received orders to withdraw, and now found himself entirely cut off, the enemy considerably to



the rear of his position and a strong skirmish line deployed immediately in rear of his own line. He quietly faced his men about and commenced to move forward in regular order, and passing along the line whispered instructions to each man. Noticing a dense swamp some distance in front and to the right of the line of march, he had instructed the men to watch him and as they neared the swamp, at a given signal from him, to stoop as low as possible and run for the swamp. They had been moving all the while between the skirmish lines, the original one which was now in their rear and the new one which was thrown out after capturing our works, which was now in front. When they reached what seemed the most favorable position, the signal was given and promptly obeyed by every man. As they made the break it was discovered for the first time that they were Confederates, and fired upon. Three of his men were shot dead, but all of the others, though fired at repeatedly, succeeded in reaching the swamp, which was quickly surrounded, but not a single one was captured. During the night they quietly left the swamp and attempted to make their way through the lines. As the night was dark they were guided in their course by the guns at Fort McAllister, but after swimming the Ogeechee river and proceeding for some distance, the firing at the fort ceased and about the same time a battery of heavy guns opened in an entirely different direction, causing them to lose their course. This brought them again to the Ogeechee river, which they recrossed and after travelling all night, found themselves at daybreak next morning on the same ground they had left the evening before, and again in the rear of the enemy. They could make but little headway during the day but, the following night brought them near the lines of the two contending armies, which were now facing each other around and near the city. It was now daylight and the fighting was in progress all along the lines which, at this point, were only a short distance apart. Discovering a short and unoccupied space in the Federal line, they made a sudden dash, at the same time signaling to our troops not to fire. They were discovered and drew the combined fire from the right and left of the enemy's line, but reached our line safely.



On 10 December, Sherman commenced the investment of the city of Savannah, and on the 13th the small garrison at Fort McAllister were forced to surrender. The enemy now controlled the river above and below, and the last means of escape for Hardee's army had been cut off. General Sherman sent in a flag of truce and demanded an unconditional surrender of the city. The reply of General Hardee, characteristic of the man and soldier, was: "I have plenty of guns, and men enough to man them, and if you ever take Savannah you will take it at the point of the bayonet." This was "bluff" in all of its perfection, as we then had not exceeding 5,000 regular troops all told, and were trying to gain time, hoping almost against hope, that some means of escape might be provided. The fighting continued day and night all along our lines, but no general assault was ever made. The fall of Fort McAllister enabled the Federal fleet to enter the river and thus establish Sherman's communication with the outside world. While Sherman was hesitating and wasting time over at Hilton Head arranging with General Foster for reinforcements of men and heavy guns with which to contend with our little army of about 5,000, while he already had more than ten to one, we were keeping up the fight all along the line and at the same time kept a detail working night and day constructing a pontoon bridge across the river. This was accomplished by collecting such small flat boats as could be found along the river and arranging them in line, using ear wheels as anchors. The heavy timbers about the wharf were utilized as stringers from one boat to another, and then using planks from buildings, which were torn down for the purpose, as a flooring, by laying them across these.

The boats, being of various sizes and shapes and of unequal supporting power, made a very uneven surface, and the flooring being of a variety of lengths and thickness, still further increased a tendency to slide to the low places and otherwise get out of place, especially as it was entirely unsecured. In addition to the pontoon bridge, it was necessary to construct a long stretch of roadway across an impassable swamp and bog between the river and roads traversing the rice farms. This was done effectually by the liberal use of rice straw and



sheaf rice which was secured in abundance at a near by rice mill.

Extract from a communication of General Sherman to Geneneral Grant 16 December:

"I think Hardee, in Savannah, has good artillerists, some 5,000 or 6,000 infantry, and it may be a mongrel mass of 8,000 to 10,000 militia and frgments."

Extract from General Hardee's reply to General Sherman's demand for the "unconditional surrender of the city" on 17 December:

"Your demand for the surrender of Savannah and its dependent forts is refused. With respect to the threats conveyed in the closing paragraph of your letter, of what may be expected in case your demand is not complied with, I have to say that I have hitherto conducted the military operation intrusted to my direetion in strict accordance with the rules of civilized warfare, and I should deeply regret the adoption of any course by you that may force me to deviate from them in future."

Extract from communication of General Sherman to General Grant 18 December:

"I wrote you at length by Colonel Babcock on the 16th instant. As I therein explained my purpose, yesterday I made demand on General Hardee for the surrender of the city of Savannah, and to-day received his answer refusing. \* \* \* I should like very much indeed to take Savannah before coming to you; but, as I wrote you before, I will do nothing rash or hasty, and will embark for the James river as soon as General Easton, who has gone to Port Royal for that purpose, reports to me that he has an appropriate number of vessels for the transportation of the contemplated force. \* \* \* I do sincerely believe that the whole United States, North and South, would rejoice to have this army turned loose on South Carolina to devastate that State, in the manner we have done Georgia."

On 19 December, General McLaws, in whose division the



Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment belonged, received the following communication from General Hardee:

"GENERAL:—Lieutenant-General Hardee directs me to say that the pontoon is completed, and he desires that you will see that your wagons containing cooking utensils and baggage are sent over and on to Hardeeville at daylight in the morning.

Respectfully, General,

"Your obedient servant,

"D. H. POOL,

"Assistant Adjutant General."

About 10 o'clock on the night of 19 December, the writer received instruction to report at once to General McLaws at his headquarters at the Telfair House. On reaching there I was informed that all arrangements had been made for the withdrawal of our troops from the lines during the night, and received instructions to report promptly at 12 o'clock to take charge of the wagon train of our command, proceed at once to the city, break open the cars in which our baggage was stored and secure all important papers, etc., but not attempt to carry out any private baggage. Shortly after day of the 20th, this work had been accomplished and we commenced to cross the bridge. As we were the first to cross we succeeded without accident or the loss of a single team, but the other commands did not fare so well. The loose planks forming the floor were constantly slipping down to the low places, causing great gaps in the floor, at which the mules would take fright and shying to either side, would get on to the projecting planks and topple over into the river. Several teams were lost in this way. After we crossed the swamp and struck the road across the rice field we were in full view of the enemy, who had occupied the South Carolina side of the river for the purpose of cutting off our only line of retreat. General Wheeler had been instructed by General Hardee to keep this line open at any cost, and on the day before had been reinforced with troops and artillery for this purpose. A fierce fight was raging at the time between the two contending forces, each bent on the possession of the road, which was of vital importance to us. We had a splendid



view of the fight as we were passing over the long stretch of level and perfectly open rice field.

We reached Hardeeville safely that evening, but spent a restless and anxious night. Orders had been issued and arrangements made for the army to cross the pontoon bridge early on the morning of the 20th, but in fact it did not cross until twenty-four hours later. After the wagon trains had crossed over and the troops were ready to commence crossing, the bridge broke loose and swung down the river, necessitating a delay of a day and night before it could be replaced. The army crossed over safely on the morning of 21 December, and reached Hardeeville that day, where we had been for twenty-four hours without hearing a word in explanation of the cause of the delay.

The official reports of 20 December showed "the effective strength of Sherman's army" to be 60,598, not including the strong forces of General Foster at Port Royal, Hilton Head, and Coosawhatchie and a large fleet co-operating. And yet General Hardee, with his "8,000 or 10,000 militia and fragments," as General Sherman puts it, held this large and splendidly equipped army and fleet at bay for nearly two weeks and withdrew unmolested and was well into South Carolina before it was even discovered that he had abandoned his line several miles beyond Savannah. General Sherman, who was still at Port Royal arranging with General Foster for more troops and guns, did not reach the city until the 22d, more than twenty-four hours after General Hardee had safely withdrawn his entire forces.

On 26 December, McLaws' Division left Hardeeville for Pocataligo, and on the march was compelled to diverge from the main road in order to avoid the fire from the batteries and gunboats near Coosawhatchie, as they had complete range of the road at this point. On reaching Pocataligo the Fiftieth Regiment occupied the extreme advance position at a small stream beyond "Old Pocataligo." General L. S. Baker, who up to this time had commanded our brigade, was relieved from active duty on account of intense suffering caused by his wounded arm. He had the confidence, love, and esteem of every officer and man in the brigade, as did



also the young men of his staff. The leave-taking was sad and affecting as they bid a final adieu to officers and privates alike. From this time the brigade was commanded by Colonel Washington M. Hardy.

On the second day after reaching Pocataligo the writer, who was on duty on the advanced picket line, received a request from Colonel Hardy to report at once to his headquarters. On arrival he was informed that General McLaws had requested that he select and send to him for instructions, an officer who would undertake to enter General Foster's lines that night for the purpose of ascertaining the exact location and approximate strength of his forces. After explaining his purposes and indicating just what information he desired, his final instructions were: "Go and never return until you can make this report."

I selected ten men from my own company, and by night had completed all necessary arrangements. An old negro, who had spent his past life on the island below and was thoroughly acquainted with the country, and who had "run away from the Yankees," and was now living near our camp, gave me a full description of the country and cheerfully consented to pilot me by a private foot path leading through a swamp to the peninsula formed by Tullifuinny creek and Coosawhatchie river upon which Gen. Foster's main forces were camped. The main road was strongly picketed right up to our lines, but by taking this by-way through the swamps when we reached the open country we were well to the rear of the pickets. The old negro now pleaded pitifully to be allowed to return to his home and his wife. He gave me an honest and truthful description of all the surroundings, after which I sent a man back with him to pass him through our line. The streams were full of gunboats and transports. In making a circuit of the camps we kept close to the water so as to avoid the pickets. We spent the entire night in making the circuit, counting camp fires, locating the troops and vessels, and returned safely, reaching our lines at daybreak next morning. I made a full report to the commanding officer, for which I and the men with me received his thanks.

On 14 January, 1865, a sudden and undiscovered move-



ment of the enemy from the island below, around our left flank, came very near cutting off the only line of retreat of the Fiftieth Regiment and Tenth Battalion at "Old Pocataligo." There was considerable confusion and excitement for some time, as the enemy seemed to confront us in whatever direction we turned. We finally succeeded in finding a way out and by keeping up a running fight safely crossed the Salkehatchie river at River's Bridge. During the next few days the enemy concentrated a heavy force along the opposite side of the river between River's and Buford's bridges, and made repeated attempts to throw their pontoon bridge across the river and break through McLaws' line. The heavy rains had caused the river to overflow and the low-lands were flooded for miles in some places. This made it very difficult to reach a point from which the movements of the enemy on the opposite side could be observed. Between the 16th and 20th we had been forced to move back three times to escape the flood.

#### SALKEHATCHIE.

On 20 January, 1865, Company I, of the Fiftieth Regiment, commanded by Captain John B. Eaves, was ordered to move down to a high point of the river bank, which was ascertained to be not under water, for the purpose of watching and reporting movements of the enemy. Captain Eaves received his orders from Colonel Hardy, commanding the North Carolina Brigade, and at the same time General McLaws had ordered Colonel Fieer, with his Georgia Brigade, to another point on the river for a like purpose. The river flats were heavily timbered and all under water, at the same time a dense fog prevailed. As a consequence of these conditions the troops lost their bearings and the two commands met while wading in water waist deep, and each supposing the other to be the enemy who had succeeded in crossing the river, opened fire. The fight was kept up for about two hours. Captain Eaves reported to Colonel Hardy, asking for reinforcements and a fresh supply of ammunition, as his was nearly exhausted. Colonel Fieer was reporting to General McLaws and asking for help; each side was being rein-



forced as rapidly as possible. Captain Eaves had lost several of his men, and Lieut. W. M. Corbitt had taken one of their guns and was leading the men forward, firing from behind trees as they advanced. With his gun raised in the act of shooting he was himself shot dead by one of Wheeler's men who happened to be with Colonel Ficer at the time. About this time K. J. Carpenter and Gaither Trout, of Captain Eaves' company, had approached near enough to discover that Colonel Ficer's men were Confederates, and before the reinforcements called for had reached either side, this sad and distressing affair had ended. The loss in Colonel Ficer's command was considerable. When our dead and wounded were brought in and we learned the facts about this terrible mistake, there was sadness and weeping. The gallant young Corbitt was a general favorite in the regiment, the men always delighting to serve under him. While he was quiet, kind and tender as a woman, he did not know the meaning of the word fear when duty called him. He was brave, perhaps, it may be too brave. His remains were sent to his heart-broken, widowed mother in Rutherford county.

On 30 January there was a general movement up the river, and on the night of 1 February, after marching until midnight, and just after halting and building campfires, the Fiftieth Regiment was ordered to resume the march and proceed twelve miles further up the river to Buford's Bridge. We reached the point at daybreak of the 2d and proceeded at once to make all necessary preparation for the rapid burning of the bridge upon the first approach of the enemy, having been instructed to guard and keep it open as long as possible for the benefit of refugees from the opposite side of the river. Early on the morning of the 3d heavy firing was heard from down the river, lasting for about two hours, when it suddenly and entirely ceased. We concluded that the enemy, in attempting to effect the crossing on their pontoons, had been driven back and that they would now attempt to cross at Buford's Bridge. We advanced our picket lines beyond the river and anxiously awaited the approach of the enemy, as well as news from our troops below. The entire day passed and we neither saw nor heard from either. Between sunset and dark a



young lad came riding into our camp with the news that General McLaws' lines had been broken and our entire forces driven back that morning. He stated that General McLaws started a courier with the information that we were entirely cut off from the command and to take care of ourselves the best we could, but that he was captured. This boy made his way through the lines and found us at this late hour. He was not a moment too soon, for as we hurriedly marched out on one side of the little village, the enemy's cavalry was entering the other side. We were favored by the dark night and a succession of impassable swamps through which the single road had been constructed which made it possible, with a small force to guard the passes against cavalry. A Lieutenant and about ten men belonging to General Wheeler's command were with us doing courier and picket duty. When we commenced the retreat this officer told us to keep moving and he would guarantee to hold them in check and allow us to escape during the night. He was able to do this by taking advantage of the narrow ridges between the succession of swamps. On reaching one of these he would dismount his men, and when the head of the column approached in the road, open fire. This would check their movement, as the character of the country was such that they could not leave the road. After remaining as long as he deemed it safe and expedient, he would mount his men and select another stand. The gallant young Tennesseean faithfully carried out his pledge to us, but at the cost of his own life, for at a late hour during the night, he was shot dead in the saddle and his horse overtook us on the road with rider lying upon his neck dead. He was taken off and buried beside the road some distance from where he received the fatal shot. After marching all night and the next day, we struck the railroad at Bamburg. We found the station deserted, but the telegraph office was open and the instruments in place. We tried the wires to Charleston and found that the line had not yet been cut. General Hardee informed us that the last train was expected over the road that night with the remnant of Hood's army, and if it succeeded in reaching our station, to take possession of the train and run through to Charleston if possible. We had only a short while



to wait, but instead of going through to Charleston, on reaching Branchville, we found our command, McLaws' division, camped beside the railroad, and we dismounted and were once more at home, much to their surprise, as we had been reported and given up as lost.

We now made a stand and fortified our position on the Edisto river, but as usual the enemy, with his overwhelming force of both infantry and cavalry, flanked our position, forcing us to retire. We moved by way of Ridgeville, and on the 25th the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion, under Colonel Hardy, occupied Florence, where all the rolling stock of the railroad south had been collected, and also a large quantity of cotton stored. The other portion of Hardee's army was now concentrated at Cheraw. Our brigade reached this place on 3 March as it was being evacuated by General Hardee, and just in time to cross the river. General Sherman writing to General Gilmore in reference to the destruction of the vast amount of rolling stock between Sumterville and Florence, uses the following language: "I don't feel disposed to be over-generous, and should not hesitate to burn Charleston, Savannah and Wilmington, or either of them, if the garrison were needed. Those cars and locomotives should be destroyed, if to do it costs you 500 men."

This language, coupled with that used in his letter to General Grant, written from Savannah 28 December, 1864, in which he expresses the desire "to have this army turned loose on the State of South Carolina to devastate that State as it has the State of Georgia," reveals the character of the man, and sufficiently accounts for the wanton destruction of property, devastation and ruin which followed in the wake of his army.

The history of this campaign, which ought to go down in history as a disgrace to the civilization of the American Nation, can be written in few words. The record of each day from first to last was but the repetition of the day before, when we could look back and see the homes of helpless women and children ascending in smoke, while they were turned out in the cold of mid-winter to starve and freeze. Since time



has removed much of the bitterness which then existed between the two sections, General Sherman's friends have endeavored to defend his conduct and refute the charges made at the time, but the fact that the "record" is against him still remains.

On the part of the troops of General Hardee's little army, the campaign through Georgia and South Carolina, embracing the entire winter of 1864-'65 was a severe and trying one, but there was no complaint or murmuring, and all seemed in the best of spirits. We were poorly clothed, and lightly fed, as we were compelled to subsist on the country through which we passed, and this was poorly supplied except with rice, until we reached the high-lands. Here the people were disposed to share the last mite with our soldiers. Whenever they were advised of our coming in time, the good women would have food in abundance prepared, and they would bring out large trays as we were passing, speaking words of comfort and cheer to us at the same time. Many of the men were entirely without shoes during January and February. This was owing to the fact that we were compelled to leave our baggage and supplies at Savannah for the lack of transportation, and we had been so situated since that none could reach us.

On 3 March, 1865, we crossed the State line at Cheraw and were once more on the soil of our native State. We looked back in sadness at the desolation wrought in our sister State, and our hearts were overflowing with sympathy for the thousands of now homeless ones who had been so kind and generous to us. Now we must look forward to a like condition which was in store for our own people.

General Joseph E. Johnston, on 6 March, assumed command of all the forces in North Carolina. It was thought that General Sherman was heading for Charlotte, N. C., and General Hardee had instructions to watch his movements and keep in his front, while Wheeler, Hampton and Butler with the cavalry, harrassed his flanks and rear to prevent "burning" and to be in position to promptly report any change of movement. While General Hardee was on the march from Cheraw to Rockingham, N. C., General Sherman suddenly



changed his course in the direction of Fayetteville, N.C. General Johnston promptly informed General Hardee, but the courier failed to deliver the message and in consequence we continued the march for a whole day in the opposite direction, reaching Rockingham, where we camped for the night. At this point the second dispatch was received from General Johnston and we immediately turned in the direction of Fayetteville and attempted, by forced march by day and by night, to regain the time lost. We reached Fayetteville and crossed the river before making a stand. The enemy occupied the town on 11 March and destroyed the old United States arsenal and burned the business portion of the town.

## AVERASBORO.

On 15 March we occupied a position on the Averasboro road, leading from Fayetteville to Smithfield and Raleigh, near Averasboro. As the enemy had retired from our front the day before, we were ordered to make ourselves comfortable and enjoy a day of rest. During the day we learned that the enemy were advancing in large force and driving our cavalry before them. A hurried disposition of the troops was made. Colonel Rhett with his South Carolina Brigade, occupied the advance position where the Smith's Ferry road intersects the Averasboro road near Smith's house. Elliott's Brigade occupied a fortified position behind a swamp 200 yards to the rear and General McLaws' the main line of defence about 600 yards to the rear of the first line. As soon as proper disposition of the troops was completed, Colonel Rhett was directed by General Hardee in person to advance his skirmishers. They were soon heavily engaged by the enemy, and Colonel Rhett venturing too far to the front, and mistaking a small party of the enemy for his own men, was taken prisoner. The command of this brigade now devolved upon Colonel Butler, of the First South Carolina Infantry. Nothing more than a lively and prolonged skirmish developed during the 15th. At 7 o'clock on the morning of the 16th the enemy made a vigorous attack on our position with infantry and artillery. Their infantry made repeated attempts to carry our position, but were always repulsed with heavy



loss. After about four hours' fighting, at 11 o'clock, they made a vigorous attack upon the left of the line, at the same time massing on and overlapping the right, forcing retirement on the second line occupied by Colonel Elliott. Repeated attacks were made on this line, but in each case they were gallantly repulsed.

About 1 o'clock they moved a heavy force in the direction of the Black river, completely flanking and exposing to a severe cross-fire the left wing. This necessitated retirement on the main line held by General McLaws. General Taliaferro, with his force, which had been engaged up to this time, occupied position on both sides of the main road, General McLaws the left, and General Wheeler with his dismounted cavalry, the right of the main line. Rhett's Brigade, which had suffered so severely, was sent to the rear and held in reserve. Every attempt to carry this line was a complete failure and after night the enemy withdrew and commenced to fortify his position. We left our lines in possession of a picket of Wheeler's men and moved in direction of Smithfield. The Federal loss, as officially reported in this fight, was 682. The Confederate loss is not stated, but it was very heavy in Rhett's Brigade.

It was now learned that Sherman's army was crossing the Black river at several points. His persistent attempt to open the Averasboro road seemed to indicate that his objective point was Raleigh, but this movement across the Black river made it uncertain as to whether he would move on Raleigh or Goldsboro, and General Hardee, in order to be in position to turn in either direction, moved to the intersection of the roads near Elevation Church, in Johnston county, reaching that point on the night of the 17th. At 12 o'clock on the night of the 17th General Hampton, who was at the front near Bentonville, received a request from General Johnston, who was then at Smithfield, about sixteen miles away, for full information as to the location of the various commands of Sherman's army, and his views as to the advisability of attacking the enemy. General Hampton reported at once that the Fourteenth Corps was in his immediate front; the Twentieth Corps was on the same road, five or



six miles in the rear; while the two other Corps, Logan's and Blair's, were on a parallel road some miles to the south, and at the place where he was camped was an admirable one for the contemplated attack. He also reported that he would delay the enemy as much as possible to gain time for the concentration of his forces at this point. In a few hours he received a reply from General Johnston stating that he would move at once, and directing him to hold the position if possible. Early on the morning of the 18th General Hampton moved his cavalry forward until he met the enemy, and kept up a lively skirmish, slowly falling back, until in the afternoon he had reached the position previously selected for the battle. As it was of vital importance that this position should be held until the infantry could reach them, he dismounted his men and took the risk of sending his batteries to a commanding position far to the right of his line, and entirely unsupported, and made a bold and successful stand.

#### BENTONVILLE.

After personally superintending the placing of the guns and as he was mounting his horse to ride back to his line on the road, he overheard the following remark from one of the men at the guns, as he laughingly addressed his companions: "Old Hampton is playing a game of bluff, and if he don't mind Sherman will call him." General Johnston reached Bentonville during the night of the 18th with a portion of the troops from Smithfield. General Hardee, who had been informed of the plan of attack, left the camp at Elevation early in the morning of the 18th, but after a hard day's march we camped that night at Snead's house, five miles from Bentonville, and about eight miles from the extreme part of the line of battle. We made an early start on the morning of the 19th, but had not reached the position assigned us before the enemy had made a bold assault on General Hoke's position on the road. After a desperate struggle they were repulsed and driven from the field in confusion. At this critical moment a mistake occurred which perhaps entirely changed the results of the battle. General Hampton refers to it in his report of the battle, and General Johnston confirms his statements of



facts and conclusion. I quote from "Johnston's narrative": "The enemy attacked Hoke's Division vigorously, especially it's left, so vigorously that General Bragg apprehended that Hoke, although slightly entrenched, would be driven from his position. He therefore applied urgently for strong reinforcements. General Hardee, the head of whose column was then near, was directed, most injudiciously, to send his leading division, McLaws', to the assistance of the troops as sailed."

General Hampton in his account of the battle, says: "Hoke repulsed the attack made on him fully and handsomely. Had Hardee been in the position originally assigned him at the time Hoke struck the enemy, and could his command and Stuart's have been thrown on the flanks of the Federal forces, I think that the Fourteenth Corps would have been driven back in disorder on the Twentieth, which was moving up to it's support." General Hampton, in his account of the part taken by General Hardee's command, quotes from General Johnston as follows:

"The Confederates passed over the hundred yards of space between the two lines in quick time and in excellent order, and the remaining distance in double-quick, without pausing to fire until their near approach had driven the enemy from the shelter of their entrenchments, in full retreat, to their second line. After firing a few rounds the Confederates again pressed forward, and when they were near the second intrenchment, now manned by both lines of Federal troops, Lieutenant-General Hardee, after commanding the double-quick, led the charge, and with knightly gallantry, dashed over the enemy's breastworks on horseback in front of his men. Some distance in the rear there was a very thick wood of young pines, into which the Federal troops were pursued, and in which they rallied and renewed the fight. But the Confederates continued to advance, driving the enemy back slowly. Night coming on prevented the further advance of the Confederates who, elated with victory, were now anxious to continue the pursuit of the fleeing enemy."

The close of the first day of this hotly contested battle found the Confederates victorious at every point, not only



holding their own lines, but at many points they rested for the night in full possession of the fortified position of the enemy. About midday of the 20th the other two corps of the enemy which had been moving on the Fayetteville and Goldsboro road, crossed to the Averasboro road and appeared in full force on our left, which was entirely unprotected from Hoke's position on the road to Mill creek below. This necessitated changing Hoke's front to left and parallel to the road. McLaw's Division was now shifted to Hoke's left, with the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion forming the extreme left of our line. This left considerable space between our left and Mill creek, thus exposing the left wing, which was overlapped. This was occupied only by a very thin skirmish line of our cavalry. These newly arrived forces assaulted our line from Hoke's right to McLaw's left repeatedly during the afternoon of the 20th, but were handsomely repulsed in every instance. On the morning of the 21st the fighting was resumed along Hoke's and McLaw's front. As there was no demonstration on our right, General Taliaferro threw forward a skirmish line in his front and ascertained that the Federal left had been withdrawn, and the combined attacks were directed against the center occupied by Hoke and the left by McLaw and our cavalry. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon our left being hard pressed and overlapped, General Taliaferro was ordered from the extreme right to our support. About the same time it was learned that the Federal Seventeenth Corps had succeeded in breaking through the thin skirmish line on our left and was in rear of our line and near the only bridge which spanned Mill creek at Bentonville. General Hardee was moving Cumming's Georgia Brigade to the left to protect this gap at the time, and discovering the enemy, ordered Colonel Henderson, commanding the brigade, to attack the head of the column; at the same time discovering the Eighth Texas Cavalry approaching, he ordered them to charge the left flank, he leading the charge in person.

General Hampton at the same time struck the right flank with Young's Brigade, commanded by Colonel Wright, while General Wheeler attacked the rear of the Federal column.



some distance away. The rout of the enemy was complete and they were soon driven back beyond our lines. As they retreated in confusion the slaughter was terrible. Our losses in the affair were insignificant as to number. A son of General Hardee, a youth of only 16 years, who had arrived only two hours before, was killed while riding in the charge of the Eighth Texas Cavalry, led by his father. The firing, which had been extremely heavy up to this time, ceased upon the return of the Seventeenth Corps to its position in line, and there was no other attempt made to carry any part of our line. General Hampton states that the Confederate forces engaged in this affair did not exceed three hundred. While General McLaw held the extreme left of our lines and the enemy were endeavoring to turn our flank the Fiftieth North Carolina Regiment and Tenth North Carolina Battalion of Colonel Hardy's Brigade, in a single charge and in about five minutes time sustained a loss of about one-third of their number. In this case the enemy were lying in line three columns deep and reserved their fire until our troops were near them struggling through a dense swamp. At the first volley every man fell to the ground and Colonel Wortham and Lieutenant Lane, of the Fiftieth, and Lieutenant Powell, of the Tenth Battalion, crawled out of the thicket and reported to General McLaw for duty, stating that the entire brigade was killed or wounded. Colonel Hardy, by his boldness and daring, saved the command from utter destruction. Dressed in a suit of sky blue broadcloth and broad-brimmed slouch hat, he might easily be taken for a Federal officer. He was in front of his men leading the charge, and at the first volley he rushed forward with his hat in one hand and his sword in the other, and pacing up and down in front of and within a few feet of the Federal lines, ordered them to cease firing, as they were firing on their own men. He continued this for some time, although their own officers were ordering them to fire. They were utterly confused and before the firing was resumed all of our men who were able had crawled out of the swamp and made their escape, and Colonel Hardy deliberately walked off without a scratch.

On the night of the 21st the enemy kept up a heavy picket



fire along our front while withdrawing their troops in the direction of Goldsboro. At midnight our troops were withdrawn and crossing the creek at Bentonville, moved on the 22d toward Smithfield. In the battle four companies of the Fiftieth Regiment, C and D of Johnston, E of Wayne and H of Harnett, were near their homes and many of the men, who had not seen their homes and families for many months, marched by them and tarried for only a few minutes, went into the fight, the guns of which could be distinctly heard by their loved ones, and again without stopping, marched by these same homes with Johnston's army on its final retreat, proving their faith and loyalty to the "Lost Cause" to the last.

The Fiftieth Regiment before leaving this State for Georgia in November, 1864, was recruited from the camp of instruction at Raleigh to something over 900, and now mustered less than half that number, the others being lost from various causes during the severe and trying campaign through which they had passed.

The Confederate forces in this battle were about 17,000 infantry, the Wheeler and Hampton Cavalry and a few light field batteries, while Sherman's army, as officially reported a few days after the battle, numbered more than 81,000.

The Federal reports place their losses at 1,646 and that of the Confederates at 2,606, but General Johnston in his account of this battle, places the Federal loss at more than 4,000. Our army moved to Smithfield and thence to a point a few miles north of the present town of Selma and went into camp to await Sherman's next move, whether by way of Raleigh or the more direct route by Weldon. The men of our command were supplied with clothing, not having had a change since leaving their baggage in Savannah on 20 December, 1864, nor had they slept under shelter since leaving Tarboro in November preceding. At the reorganization of Johnston's army the Fiftieth Regiment and Tenth Battalion were assigned to Kirkland's Brigade, Hoke's Division, and what had constituted Baker's and Hardy's Brigade was disbanded.



## RETREAT AND SURRENDER.

On 10 April we received information that General Sherman had commenced to move his troops from Goldsboro in the direction of Raleigh. Our army commenced to fall back and on the 11th we camped a few miles east of the city of Raleigh on the present site of the town of Garner, entering the city early on the morning of the 12th. Our rear guard left Raleigh that night and a day or two later we heard the news of General Lee's surrender. On 18 April, 1865, at the Bennett house, four miles west of Durham, a conference was held between Generals Johnston and Sherman, and terms of capitulation agreed on and signed. These terms were more favorable to us, even, than were accorded to General Lee by General Grant.

Upon reaching Washington, President Lincoln having been assassinated in the meantime, they were rejected and General Johnston being so informed, was again on the defensive. We resumed the march, passing through Chapel Hill and halting at a point near Greensboro where the final terms were agreed upon 26 April. The army was paroled 2 and 3 May.

In crossing the Haw river several of our men were drowned by leaving the ford to reach some fish traps a short distance below and being caught by the swift current and swept down into the deep water below. On reaching Alamance Creek, we had a novel, and in some respects, amusing experience. On account of heavy rains the stream was much swollen and the current very strong. General Cheatham's command was moving in front of General Hoke's Division and on attempting to ford the stream several men were swept down by the current, whereupon the others absolutely refused to move. This halted the entire column, and as the enemy's cavalry was closely pressing our rear, the situation was becoming critical. General Cheatham rode to the front and learning the cause of the halt, ordered the men to go forward, but, emphasizing their determination with some pretty lively swearing, they doggedly refused to move, whereupon General Cheatham seized the nearest man and into the stream they went. After



floundering in the water awhile he came out and, after repeating the process for a few times, the men raised a shout and proceeded to cross. Three wagons, one loaded with "hardtack," one with guns, and one with bacon, capsized and were swept down the river. Some lively diving for the bacon followed, but I guess the guns are still rusting in the bottom of the creek. I am sure none of them were disturbed on that occasion. General Hoke, becoming restless and impatient at the delay, adopted a means of transportation which proved at least the resources of a fertile brain. The water was just running over the sandy banks of the stream and selecting a suitable place a short distance above the ford, he moved the head of his column to this point, directed one man to seize his horse's tail, and another to grasp this man's shoulder, and another and another until he had a long line, swam his horse across the narrow stream and discharging his cargo safely on the opposite bank, would quickly return for another. The rapidity with which the men were carried over was astonishing. I don't know what the final result might have been had we not received information that a short distance up the stream at Ruffin's Mill was a broad and shallow ford below the mill, at which we could easily and safely cross.

Following the announcement of the second "armistice" were several days of anxious waiting. There was a very large element of both officers and men who were opposed to a surrender and many were leaving in small bands with the understanding that they would afterwards meet at some rallying point to be agreed upon.

When the final announcement was made that the army was to be surrendered, the scenes were pathetic; strong, brave men were seen to weep like children. Officers everywhere were giving farewell addresses to the brave men who had faithfully and loyally followed their leaders and endured hardships and privations without a murmur.

If General Lee had been able to hold out until his army and General Johnston's could have been united as had been agreed upon, and both hurled against Sherman and then against Grant, the result might have been quite different. Would it have been for the best interest of our country and



our race? While no true Confederate soldier has any apology to offer for his course, there is a wide diversity of opinion as to the correct answer to the above question.

#### THE ROSTER.

Roster of officers of the Fiftieth Regiment North Carolina Troops given in the order of succession as shown by dates of commission:

**COLONELS:** M. D. Craton, J. A. Washington, George Wortham.

**LIEUTENANT-COLONELS:** J. A. Washington, George Wortham, John C. Van Hook.

**MAJORS:** George Wortham, John C. Van Hook, H. J. Ryals.

**ADJUTANTS:** W. H. Borden, Jesse W. Edmondson.

**SURGEONS:** Walter Duffy, Francis W. Potter, John D. Patton.

**QUARTERMASTERS:** E. B. Borden, E. W. Adams.

**COMMISSARY:** E. S. Parker.

**CHAPLAINS:** Dr. R. S. Moran, Thomas B. Haughton.

**SERGEANT-MAJORS:** Jesse W. Edmondson, John H. Green.

#### CAPTAINS.

**COMPANY A—Person County**—John C. Van Hook, James A. Burch.

**COMPANY B—Robeson County**—E. C. Atkinson.

**COMPANY C—Johnston County**—R. D. Lumsford, Thos. R. Youngblood.

**COMPANY D—Johnston County**—H. J. Ryals, W. B. Best.

**COMPANY E—Wayne County**—J. B. Griswold, P. L. Burwell, W. T. Gardner.

**COMPANY F—Moore County**—J. A. O. Kelley.

**COMPANY G—Rutherford County**—G. W. Andrews.

**COMPANY H—Harnett County**—Joseph H. Atkinson.

**COMPANY I—Rutherford County**—John B. Evans.



COMPANY K—*Rutherford County*—Samuel Wilkins, G. B. Ford.

## FIRST LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A—James A. Burch, W. T. Blalock.

COMPANY B—Atlas Atkinson.

COMPANY C—Thomas R. Youngblood, Jesse T. Ellington.

COMPANY D—W. B. Best, J. J. Penny.

COMPANY E—W. T. Gardener, W. H. Borden.

COMPANY F—Alexander Bolin.

COMPANY G—John A. Morrison.

COMPANY H—John P. McLean.

COMPANY I—W. M. Corbitt.

COMPANY K—J. B. Ford, James A. Miller.

## SECOND LIEUTENANTS.

COMPANY A—W. T. Blalock, R. D. Ramsey, Albert O'Bryant.

COMPANY B—R. P. Collins, W. B. Walters, W. B. Jenkins.

COMPANY C—G. W. Watson, William Lane, J. C. Ellington, R. H. Yelvington (Ensign).

COMPANY D—William M. Adams, Young J. Lee, J. J. Penny.

COMPANY E—W. H. Borden, George Griswold, W. L. Edwards, George T. Jones.

COMPANY F—Malcom McWatson, James Dalrymple.

COMPANY G—R. F. Logan, S. D. Hampton.

COMPANY H—John Brantly, David S. Byrd, B. F. Brantly, A. L. Parker.

COMPANY I—S. E. Bostick, Jesse Hellard.

COMPANY K—P. B. Ford, L. P. Wilkins.

The writer acknowledges his indebtedness to Sergeant K. J. Carpenter, of Company I, for the use of a diary kept by him and still preserved. This was found to be exceedingly valuable in fixing dates not otherwise obtainable.

All "historical events" treated in the foregoing sketch

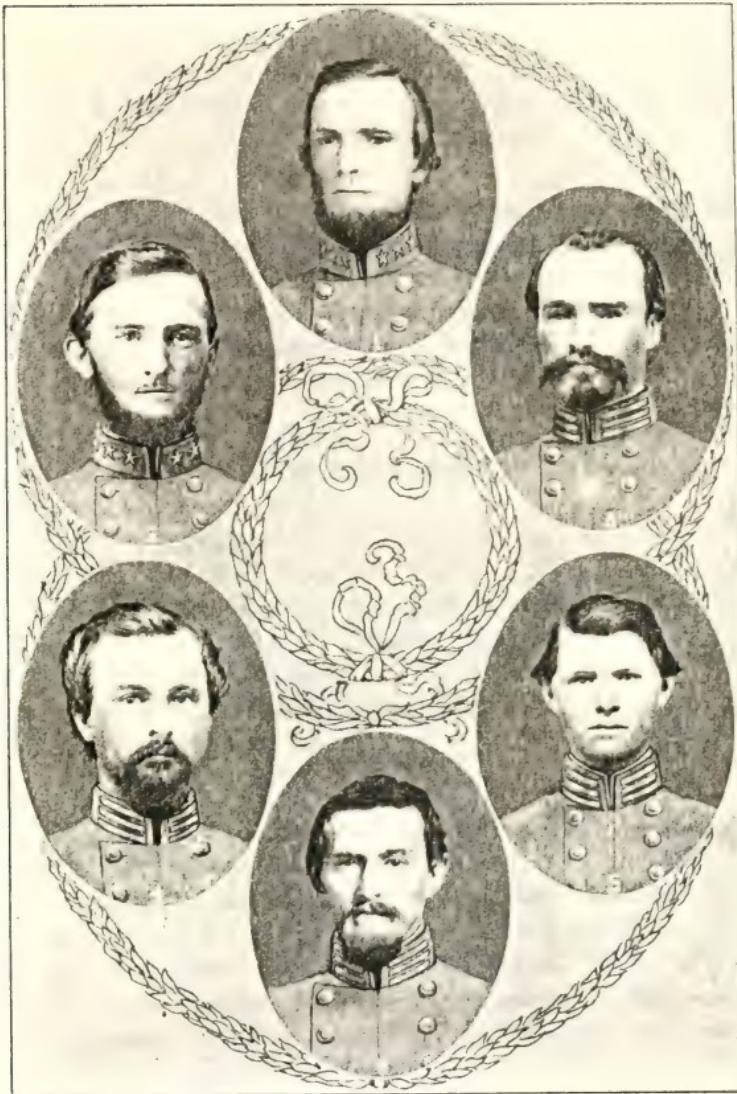


were verified by a careful search of "*The Official Records of United States and Confederate Armies,*" and may be relied on as strictly authentic.

J. C. ELLINGTON.

RALEIGH, N. C.,  
26 April, 1901.





FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

- |                                        |                                      |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Jno. L. Cantwell, Colonel           | 4. George Sloan, Captain, Co. I.     |
| 2. Hector McKethan, Colonel.           | 5. W. F. Murphy, Captain, Co. K.     |
| 3. Robert J. McEachern, Captain, Co. D | 6. H. C. Rockwell, Captain, A. Q. M. |



# FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

---

BY A. A. MCKETHAN, SECOND LIEUTENANT COMPANY B.

---

The Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment could well be called a Cape Fear Regiment, as the ten companies composing the command came from the counties of Cumberland, Sampson, Duplin, Columbus, Robeson and New Hanover.

The regiment was organized at Wilmington, N. C., 13 April, 1862, with the following officers, viz.:

JOHN L. CANTWELL, Colonel.

WILLIAM A. ALLEN, Lieutenant-Colonel.

HECTOR MCKETHAN, Major.

J. R. LATTA, Adjutant.

ALEXANDER ELLIOTT, Sergeant-Major.

H. C. ROCKWELL, Captain and Quartermaster.

WILLIAM MCKENZIE, Quartermaster Sergeant.

DR. S. B. MORRISEY, Surgeon.

DR. JAMES MCGEE, Assistant Surgeon.

A. T. ROBINSON, Hospital Steward.

REV. J. B. ALFORD, Chaplain.

The regiment went into camp near Wilmington, spending the Summer at various camps near that city and at Smithville (now Southport), excepting companies D and K, which were detached and employed in building the iron-clad fort on the river a few miles below Wilmington. From Wilmington we were ordered in August to Kinston, N. C., part of the command being employed on picket duty at Core Creek, about eighteen miles distant.

On 1 October, the Eighth, Thirty-first, Fifty-first and Sixty-first North Carolina Regiments were organized into a brigade with Thomas L. Clingman as Brigadier-General. About this time Colonel Cantwell resigned, and Lieutenant-Colonel Allen assumed command, and we were employed



doing picket duty, and on various scouting expeditions to points near New Bern.

About 1 December we returned to Wilmington, but soon afterwards were ordered to Goldsboro, and were under fire for the first time near that place (Neuse River Bridge), as we engaged the enemy on 17 December, the regiment taking an active part. Our men behaved with conspicuous gallantry and forced the enemy to retire before them. The regiment suffered a loss of about fifty in killed and wounded in this engagement, Lieutenant Solomon Boykin, of Company K, being among the killed. After this engagement we returned to Wilmington for winter quarters.

Colonel Allen resigned and the following changes were made in our officers: Hector McKethan, Colonel; Captain Caleb B. Hobson, of Company B, Lieutenant-Colonel; Captain J. R. McDonald, of Company D, Major; Chaplain, Colin Shaw, vice J. B. Alford, resigned.

About 18 February, 1863, we were ordered to Charleston, S. C., and thence to Savannah, Ga., spending only a few days at the latter point when we were again ordered to Charleston and camped on James Island. At this place we suffered greatly from sickness and scanty and unwholesome rations. On 1 May we returned to Wilmington, going into camp at Topsail Sound. A few days later Companies B, D, E and H were detached and sent to Magnolia under the command of Major McDonald.

On 1 July, a raiding party of the enemy from New Bern tapped the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad at Warsaw and this detail hurried to that point, causing a hasty retreat of the enemy in the direction of New Bern, and capturing some of their stragglers.

#### BATTERY WAGNER.

About this time the enemy began active operations against Charleston, S. C., and on 10 July Clingman's Brigade was ordered to that point, and on the 12th the Fifty-first Regiment was sent to Morris' Island as a garrison for Battery Wagner, where we were almost continuously exposed to the sharpshooting and cannonading of the enemy until the 18th,



suffering almost beyond endurance from heat and great scarcity of water and rations, to say nothing of the inferior quality of the same, and from the terrible shelling which was only equaled during the war at Fort Fisher, the average being twenty-eight shells per minute by actual count from sunrise to 7 p. m. Battery Wagner was a field work of sand, turf, and palmetto logs, built across Morris' Island, extending from the beach on the east to Vincent Creek on the west, about 200 yards. From north to south it varied from 20 to 75 yards. On the space to the west were built wooden quarters for officers and men, and bomb-proofs capable of holding from 800 to 1,000 men. There were also bomb-proof magazines and heavy traverses.

On 18 July, the armament consisted of one 10-inch Columbiad, one 32-pound rifle, one 42-pounder, two 32-pound Carronades, two Naval Shell guns, one 8-inch sea-coast Howitzer, four smooth-bore 32-pounders, one 10-inch sea-coast Mortar, making in all thirteen pieces. Of these only one was of much effect against the monitors, and the Federal land batteries were beyond the reach of the other guns, so that we had little to do but submit to the hail of iron sent upon us by the superior and longer range guns of the enemy from sunrise until sunset.

The garrison at this time consisted of part of the Thirty-first North Carolina, Lieutenant-Colonel Knight commanding, which had been sent over on 17 July; the Fifty-first North Carolina, Colonel Hector McKethan; a Charleston battalion, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Gaillard, with Tatum's and Adams' companies of the First South Carolina Regulars, acting as artillery; Buckner's and Dixon's companies of the Sixty-third Georgia Heavy Artillery, and DePass' Battery, in all about 1,700 men.

The Charleston Battalion and the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment were assigned to the defense of the parapets in the order named, from the right along the south front. The four companies of the Thirty-first North Carolina Regiment extended along the sea face from the Fifty-first; the balance of the Thirty-first was held in reserve at Fort Gregg. Two companies of the Charleston Battalion were outside of the



works, guarding the left gorge and sallyport. Two of Captain DePass' field pieces were also outside.

During the bombardment we had concentrated upon our little band forty-four guns and mortars from the land batteries of the enemy, distant from 1,200 to 2,000 yards, and the heavy guns from the iron-sides, five monitors and five gunboats, say about fifty guns, making a total of ninety-four guns. The sand being our only protection, fortunately one shell would fill up the hole made by the last, or we would have been annihilated. Our only guns that could reach the enemy had been dismounted by their fire, and our smaller ones we had been compelled to dismount in order to protect, so that we might use when the assault should be made. During the day the garrison was protected as much as possible by the bomb-proofs, only those necessary to guard and work the guns being required to remain exposed. This accounts for the small loss sustained during the day, but at a given signal each man was expected to report at his station in the works, the fire being so rapid and deadly that it would have been impossible to attempt anything like military formation. About dusk 18 July, 1863, the long expected signal was given and the Fifty-first North Carolina as one man, sprang to its post, encouraged and led by the officers.

The advancing column of the enemy consisted of the First Brigade, made up of six regiments and one battalion, supported by Putnam's Brigade of five regiments, with Stevenson's Brigade, of four regiments, held as a reserve.

The enemy advanced in column of regiments, led by Shaw's Fifty-fourth Massachusetts, a picked negro regiment, between sunset and dusk with empty guns and orders to use their bayonets. Time had not been given us to mount our guns, which as before stated, we had dismounted for protection, so that the assault was met solely by our infantry, not a cannon being fired; but so murderous was our fire that the advancing columns broke and rushed to the rear through the ranks of their own support, causing confusion and delay. Colonel Shaw, who was hardly more than a boy, fell dead on the top of our breastworks, in advance of his men, struck with three mortal wounds. His followers broke and fled in



wild terror. A most handsome monument has been erected in Boston to perpetuate his memory.

About an hour later a second assault was made. By this time we had mounted our guns which we opened on them at short range, and our infantry again poured their deadly fire into their ranks, causing a second break with even greater loss than the first. A third and final assault was made about 10 o'clock, and notwithstanding a cross-fire was concentrated upon them, a lodgment was made behind the bomb-proof and magazine manned by the four companies of the Thirty-first North Carolina, but to hold only for a short time. Their commander was killed, and the Thirty-second Georgia Regiment arriving at this time was sent along the parapet, and to the top of the magazine. In this way their rear was reached, and the assailants of a few minutes before found themselves assailed and throwing down their arms, surrendered and put an end to the day's fighting.

Brigadier-General Taliaferro was in immediate command of Morris' Island during the day. The position of the Fifty-first was such that it bore the brunt of the assault, and its members were therefore the most active participants. The Confederate loss during the day was 175, of which the Fifty-first suffered 34 killed and 40 wounded, the following officers being among the number: Lieutenant Giles W. Thompson, of Company E, killed; Lieutenants Edward Southerland, W. H. Littlejohn, of Company A, and Lieutenant J. D. Malloy, of Company D, wounded. The enemy is said to have lost 2,000, 800 of whom were buried in front of the fort next morning. This great slaughter shows how desperately our men, maddened and infuriated at the sight of negro troops, fought. The next morning we were relieved and sent to Sullivan's Island, the officers and men being complimented by General Beauregard for the manner in which they had behaved. A writer from another State referring to this engagement, used the following language: "The Fifty-first North Carolina brilliantly sustained the honor of their State and were highly commended, especially the field officers, Col-

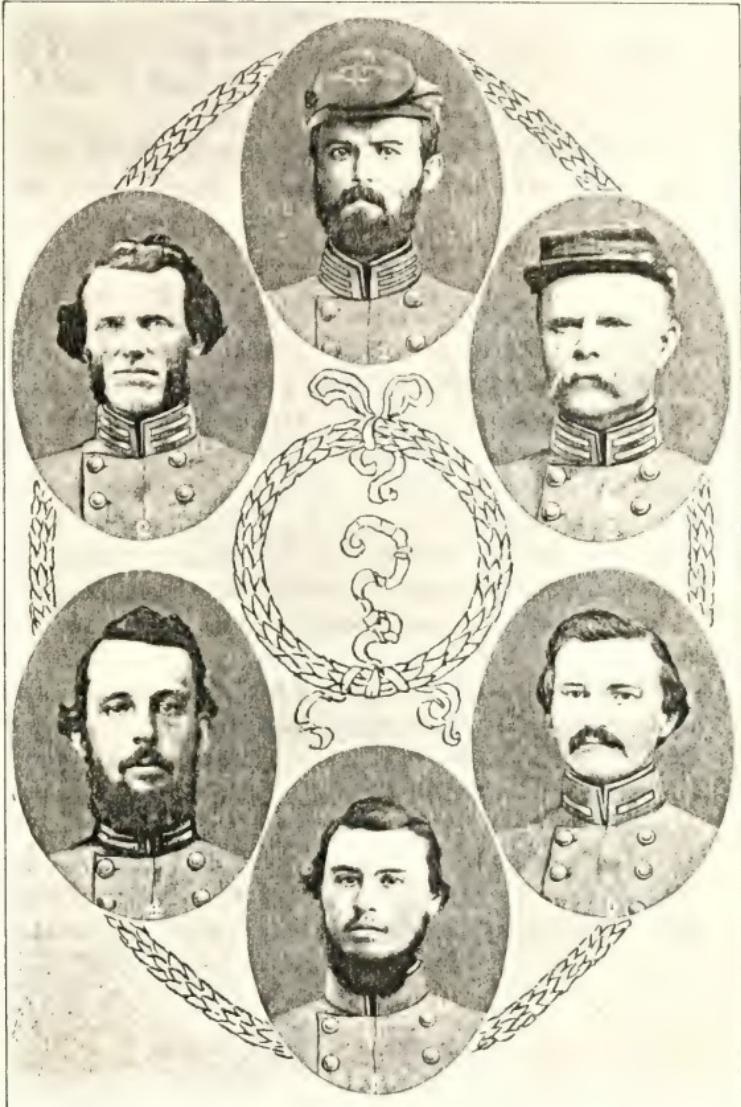


onel Hector McKethan, Lieutenant-Colonel C. B. Hobson, and Major J. R. McDonald."

The following incident is vouched for by Lieutenant J. A. McArthur, of Company I, Fifty-first North Carolina, now a resident of Cumberland county: The day of the assault Lieutenant McArthur was the officer of the day, and as such, had a guard of sixty-five men detailed from the different commands on the Island. In the third and last assault when the enemy secured a lodgment near the bomb-proof, he was ordered by General Taliaferro, in command of the post, to go with his guard to the relief of that part of the line. As Lieutenant McArthur, led by one of the men with a torch ascended the bomb-proof, the enemy began to fire upon them, and the fire was promptly returned as they advanced, but as they neared the enemy an Irishman from one of the Charleston companies in McArthur's detail, appealed to him to have the firing cease, as he had recognized the voice of his brother in the ranks of the enemy, which turned out to be true, for when they surrendered a few minutes afterwards the brother was found to be among the prisoners. Next morning the prisoners were formed to be sent to Charleston, when our Irishman appeared the second time begging that his brother should not be sent to prison, and when told that it could not be helped, as he had been captured with the others, he then proposed that his brother be permitted to enter the ranks by his side, and in this way the prisoner was transformed to a Confederate soldier.

The enemy now concluded that the only way to capture Wagner was by slow siege, we doing our share of the garrisoning while this was going on. On 24 November we returned to North Carolina, going to Tarboro by rail, and marching to Williamston, where assigned to duty at Foster's Mill, in Martin county. On 13 December we returned to Tarboro, where we remained till 5 January, 1864, going thence to Petersburg, Va., and occupied Camp Hill near that place. Later in January, 1864, we returned to North Carolina, marching on New Bern and engaging in a sharp skirmish at Bachelor's Creek, driving the enemy from their position and pushing them into New Bern. We then returned to Petersburg, Va.,





#### FIFTY-FIRST REGIMENT.

- |                                         |                                         |
|-----------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| 1. Samuel W. Maultsby, Captain, Co. H   | 4. E. T. McKethan, 1st Lieut., Co. K.   |
| 2. Joseph A. McArthur, 1st Lt., Co. I   | 5. Alexander Elliott, 2d Lieut., Co. K. |
| 3. Hector McEachern, 1st Lieut., Co. D. | 6. Stephen J. Cobb, Private, Co. D.     |



and about 1 April were ordered to Ivor Station and marched on Suffolk, driving the enemy's pickets to a point beyond that town. About 1 May, General Butler landed a strong force at City Point, Va., and we returned to Petersburg and marched to Dunlop's Farm, about four miles distant in the direction of Richmond. Here we met and skirmished with the enemy for several days.

#### PETERSBURG.

On 1<sup>st</sup> May we marched to Drewry's Bluff and occupied the works previously built. Butler followed us towards Richmond, the plan being to draw him from his base and attack him from front and rear. On 16 May, having been reinforced, we were ordered by General Beauregard to mount the works and charge the enemy. This we did over ground strewn with fallen trees, the limbs of which had been sharpened as an additional protection for the works, but we pressed forward carrying line after line of the enemy until we had them in full retreat, and had the forces from Petersburg cooperated in the same manner we would have captured Butler's entire command. Our loss in this engagement was very heavy, amounting to ten officers and 150 men: Captain Willis H. Pope, of Company E, and Lieutenant J. B. McCallum, of Company D, being killed; Lieutenants W. J. Southerland, of Company A, Hector McEachern of Company D, Jacob A. Evans of Company C, J. A. McArthur of Company I, and Captain Samuel W. Maultsby of Company H, being among the wounded; Captain W. F. Murphy of Company K, Lieutenants J. D. Malloy of Company D, and J. A. McArthur of Company I, were captured.

#### SECOND COLD HARBOR.

On the 18th and 19th we again skirmished with the enemy, sustaining considerable loss. We then marched to Cold Harbor and skirmished with the enemy on 31 May. On 1 June the battle of Cold Harbor was fought. Here we were charged by line after line of the enemy, each line coming within a few yards of us, but our fire was so murderous they could not live under it; but notwithstanding we killed thousands of



them, fresh lines were thrown at us until finally a lodgment was secured in a branch supposed to be impassable, and we were flanked and compelled to retire. Having driven the enemy from our front, the order to retire was not understood by part of our men and they were cut off, but not willing to give up, they, together with Lieut. Col. Jno. R. Murchison and part of his, the Eighth North Carolina Regiment, continued the fight till entirely surrounded, not only with live, but also dead yankees. Our losses during the two days were 194 (11 officers and 183 men), Captain Robert J. McEachern, of Company D, and Lieutenant Alexander Elliott, of Company K, being killed; Captain George Sloan, of Company I, Lieutenant G. P. Higley, of Company F, wounded; and Major J. R. McDonald, together with the wounded, were captured. We remained at Cold Harbor for several days and then marched to Malvern Hill, thence to Drewry's Bluff, and then to Petersburg, reaching the latter point in time to prevent Butler from occupying the city.

17 JUNE, 1864.

On 16 and 17 June the enemy charged our line and we repulsed them, inflicting considerable loss, but on the 17th, they succeeded in breaking through the line at a point held by Wise's Virginia Brigade, and at once began to pour a deadly fire on our flank. Promptly five companies of the Fifty-first, under the command of Colonel McKethan, filed to the rear, Ransom's Brigade, under command of Colonel W. J. Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth North Carolina, being hastily thrown in the same position on the right of the break, and at the signal these two commands changed front and rushed forward with fixed bayonets and soon recaptured the lost ground, but at a fearful loss, Colonel McKethan being among the seriously wounded. In this contest the bayonet and butts of guns were freely used, as there was not time to load and fire. The position was such that the five companies of the Fifty-first and the Thirty-fifth North Carolina of Ransom's Brigade occupying the centre and being the assailants, suffered the greatest losses. But for



the prompt action of these commands the enemy would certainly have marched into Petersburg on 17 June, 1864.

We remained in the works in front of Petersburg for months under fire every day, and it has been established by actual measurements since the close of the war that at times there was but sixty-three yards between our line of works and that of the enemy, while only thirty-five yards separated our pickets, which should give a pretty accurate idea of the danger and hardships under which we passed the summer of 1864. On 19 August we were called upon to meet a raiding party operating on the Wilmington & Weldon Railroad south of Petersburg. Here we met the enemy and after a running fight of many miles forced them into their lines. This was a regular woods scramble, it being impossible to preserve anything like a line of battle on account of the density of the woods; the result was that we captured a large number of prisoners, and suffered considerable loss ourselves, some of our men being captured and recaptured several times. General Clingman was wounded in this engagement, and the brigade lost the services of this gallant soldier till near the close of the war, the command of the brigade devolving on Colonel McKethan of the Fifty-first.

#### FORT HARRISON.

We were next taken to the north side of the James river and on 30 September assaulted Fort Harrison. This point had been taken by the enemy from our people, and being considered a point of importance, was at once strengthened and very heavily garrisoned. To have attempted its recapture under such circumstances was a mistake, and as carried out a terrible blunder on the part of some one, the assaulting parties going in, in detail and being cut down in turn by the deadly fire of the enemy. Our officers on the ground, particularly Colonel McKethan, the brigade commander, seeing the impossibility of success and the heavy loss that we must sustain, protested against making the assault, but being ordered by superior officers to go forward, nobly offered themselves and their commands as sacrifices for their country. At the command the Fifty-first rushed forward with the other



regiments of the brigade, preserving their alignment until the stockade was reached, which they found impossible to pass. To retreat was death, so the only chance was to throw down their guns and pull up these obstructions, which the men at once attempted, but a double line armed with repeating rifles posted in front of the works, and a deadly fire from the garrison in the fort, said to have been several lines deep, and the concentration of all the artillery upon them, made the position untenable and the task impossible, so that the few left were forced to seek shelter offered by two old buildings near the works. Never was an assault made more gallantly or against greater odds. The Light Brigade at Balaklava did no more. "Some one had blundered," but it was a soldier's duty to obey. Our loss was seven officers and ninety-seven men, Lieutenant-Colonel Hobson being among the killed, Lieutenant F. S. Currie, of Company D, and Lieutenant J. A. Meares, of Company H, wounded, and others, whose names cannot now be recalled. To Sergeant-Major W. D. McMillan (Dr. McMillan, of Wilmington), who was seriously wounded in this assault, I am indebted for the following figures, viz.:

"The brigade went into this engagement with 857 guns, and in ten or fifteen minutes lost 587." I am unable to give the strength of the Fifty-first at this particular time, but as the brigade contained 857 and was composed of four regiments, the Fifty-first could not at this time have contained many over 200.

To give some idea how the Fifty-first suffered during the four and one-half months from 15 May to 1 October, 1864. On 15 May we had 1,100 officers and men, going into the charge of 16 May with 800 men ready for duty (a detail was made from the regiment on the 15th, and did not participate in this engagement). On 1 October we had reduced to 145 men, many of the companies being without commissioned officers, and in some cases in command of a corporal.

Our casualties aggregated over 1,000, as some were wounded several times. Companies D and I each suffered a loss of more than 100 men to the company. Clingman's Brigade, under the command of Colonel McKethan, was then placed



in the line of works protecting Richmond, our left resting on the Darbytown road, where we remained until December, doing picket duty and engaging in one or two feints against the enemy to draw their attention from Petersburg.

#### WILMINGTON.

On 24 December we received marching orders and proceeded to Richmond on our way to North Carolina, having been called on account of Butler's threatening Fort Fisher. On reaching Wilmington we went into camp at Camp Lamb, spending about one week, when we changed our camp to a point near Green's mill pond, where we remained until the final attack on Fort Fisher. On 12 January, 1865, our division (General Robert F. Hoke's) was mustered at camp for division review for the benefit of a large number from the city, and after marching and counter marching for the greater portion of the day we returned to our quarters for rest, but were not given this, as the "long roll" called us to arms during the night and we were hurried towards Fisher. A march however, had been stolen on our people, as a heavy force had been landed by the enemy and cut us off from the fort.

Why we should have been stopped in Wilmington, thirty miles from Fort Fisher, I have never understood. Had General Hoke and his division been put in supporting distance of Fisher, the enemy could not have made their landing, and without this the capture of Fisher was, in my opinion, impossible.

After the fall of Fort Fisher we made a line across the peninsula and threw up works, our right resting on the Cape Fear river near Sugar Loaf, and our left on the ocean near what is now known as Carolina Beach. From this point we fell back to within a few miles of Wilmington, skirmishing with the enemy as they followed. We then evacuated Wilmington, crossing North East river and marching to Rockfish in Duplin county.

#### BATTLE OF SOUTHWEST CREEK.

From this point we were taken by rail to Kinston and engaged in three days fighting, 7, 8 and 9 March, 1865, near



that placee, driving the enemy several miles, capturing and killing many with but small loss to our side. The change from Rockfish to Kinston carried us through Magnolia, where the company which I then commanded was raised, and the homes of many of the men could be seen from the cars. I was given orders for that reason to put my command in an ordinary box car, such as was used in those days for transporting soldiers, and to get on top myself with a good man and allow none of the men to get off as we passed through the section in which they lived. We had not proceeded far when the engine stopping at a tank for water, I discovered two of my best men on the ground near the car. I spoke to them and demanded an explanation of their violation of orders, when one of them, pointing to a small house a few hundred yards distant, said that the lady standing in the door was his sister; that he was going to stop and see her, but would be on next day. To permit this was a violation of orders on my part as well as that of the soldiers, but knowing that the enemy was closing in behind us and this would perhaps be their last chancee to see their loved ones, and having confidence in the men, I did not have the heart to stop them, whatever the consequences to myself might be, and in this way I lost the greater part of my company before reaching Kinston, and in the first day's fight the First Sergeant and myself represented the company; but true men as they were, all reported for duty that night. This is mentioned to illustrate the true spirit and patriotism of the southern soldier; the cause was almost lost and he knew it, and immedately before him he could picture his fields laid in waste, his home plundered and his family exposed and suffering, yet even to the last roll call, he answered to his country's summons at the post of danger and duty.

#### BENTONVILLE.

The advance of the enemy from Wilmington and the near approach of Sherman's army from Fayetteville, caused our withdrawal from Kinston and rendering the evacuation of Goldsboro necessary we were, therefore, ordered to Bentonville, where we met and checked Sherman. The first



day we fought facing Fayetteville and with our backs on Goldsboro, but we were soon flanked and compelled to face about. Several attempts from the direction of Goldsboro were made to dislodge us, but failed; still the vast forces under Sherman finally forced us to retire to escape being surrounded and our communications cut off. This we did in good order, marching to Smithfield, where we remained several days. The enemy however, soon began to advance and on 10 April we began to retire before them towards Raleigh, through which city we marched 12 April just ahead of Sherman. From Raleigh we went to Chapel Hill, finally halting at Bush Hill, N. C., where we surrendered with Johnston's army and were paroled 2 May, 1865, to return to our homes.

Thus ends the history of the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment. The regiment was composed, rank and file, of men and officers of whom any country on earth might well be proud. Many, as was the case with our Colonel and a number of others, saw the sun of the South rise in glory at Bethel, and set in its blood-red sheen at Bentonville. In this time many a loved and chivalric comrade passed from us on his long and sad furlough. Thirty-six years have passed and Time, with his cruel scythe, has cut down most of those who were left; to the memory of those that have passed before and since, officers and men, I dedicate this feeble tribute.

In closing, I desire to say that in the preparation of this very imperfect sketch, I have been compelled to do so without data, as our official papers were lost during the latter days of the war. But by the aid of Adjutant J. R. Latta, of New Hanover; Stephen J. Cobb, of Company D (Captain Company F, Second North Carolina Volunteers, Spanish-American War); and H. L. Hall, of Company I, and others who were fortunate enough to escape the terrible struggle, I am under obligations for much information, and in particular as to the casualties. It was my wish to give a full list of the casualties of the regiment, but I found it impossible to do this even of the commissioned officers in the different engagements in which the regiment participated. I attach herewith a roster of the commissioned officers from the organiza-



tion to the surrender, and with the aid of others, I have attempted to give from memory opposite each name such information as I have been able to obtain. While this roster is not perfectly correct it is as near so as can be made thirty-six years after the close of the war.

I also insert statistics of enlistments in Companies D and I from organization, and of the casualties in each of said companies. The casualties in these two companies fairly represent the losses in the eight others, and the loss of officers as shown by the roster will convey some idea of the losses sustained by the Fifty-first from 17 December, 1862, to 21 March, 1865.

#### ROSTER OF THE FIFTY-FIRST NORTH CAROLINA REGIMENT.

**COMPANY A**—Captain J. L. Cantwell, promoted to Colonel on organization, resigned; Captain Walker. Lieutenant Edward Southerland, promoted to Captain, wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863, again wounded in 1864; Lieutenant W. J. Southerland severely wounded 16 May, 1864, and never returned to service; Lieutenant W. H. Littlejohn wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863; Lieutenant Reuben J. T. Hawse promoted from First Sergeant, lost a leg at Fort Harrison.

**COMPANY B**—Captain Caleb B. Hobson, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, killed at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864. Lieutenant W. R. Bell, promoted to Captain, wounded and retired; Lieutenant J. E. Swinson, resigned during fall or winter of 1862; Lieutenant Thomas J. Herring, promoted to Captain, seriously wounded; Lieutenant Jesse T. Smith, promoted from Sergeant, captured and retained in prison till close of the war; Lieutenant C. L. Cowles, promoted from ranks to Sergeant-Major and Lieutenant; Lieutenant A. A. McKethan, promoted from ranks, wounded at Petersburg 17 June, 1864.

**COMPANY C**—Captain W. A. Allen, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel on organization, resigned. Lieutenant Robert James, wounded and retired; Lieutenant S. M. Stanford, promoted to Captain, resigned in 1864; Lieutenant E. L. Watson, promoted to Captain, surrendered at Bush Hill, N.



C.; Lieutenant H. V. Houston; Lieutenant J. G. Branch, resigned in 1863; Lieutenant A. M. Sullivan, promoted from Sergeant, wounded at Kinston 1865.

COMPANY D—Captain J. R. McDonald, promoted to Major, captured at Cold Harbor. Lieutenant R. J. McEachern, promoted to Captain, killed at Cold Harbor; Lieutenant J. D. Malloy, promoted to Captain, wounded at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863, captured at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant J. B. McCallum, killed at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Hector McEachern, wounded and captured at Drewry's Bluff; Lieutenant F. S. Currie, wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant W. R. Boone, promoted from ranks, captured August 1864.

COMPANY E—Captain W. P. Moore, resigned in Fall of 1862. Lieutenant Willis H. Pope, promoted to Captain, killed at Drewry's Bluff 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant A. J. Ashley, promoted to Captain, died of wounds; Lieutenant J. P. Pitman, promoted to First Lieutenant, captured 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant F. F. Floyd, captured 10 June, 1864; Lieutenant W. A. Bullock, captured 19 August, 1864; Lieutenant Giles W. Thompson, killed at Battery Wagner 18 July, 1863.

COMPANY F—Captain —. —. Walters, resigned during spring of 1863; Captain W. S. Norment, transferred from the Eighteenth Regiment, severely wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864. Lieutenant A. C. Fulmore; Lieutenant G. P. Higley, captured at Cold Harbor; Lieutenant J. W. Hartman, wounded, don't remember place or date.

COMPANY G—Captain J. W. Lippitt, pulled through safe, commanded the regiment at the surrender at Bush Hill, N. C. Lieutenant S. R. Chinnis, resigned during the winter of 1862 or 1863; Lieutenant Yopp; Lieutenant Jacob A. Evans, wounded 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant T. B. Lippitt, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Ben. A. Cowan, pulled through safe.

COMPANY H—Captain J. R. Kelly, resigned in 1862. Lieutenant S. W. Maultsby, promoted to Captain, severely wounded 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Lemon, resigned in 1862; Lieutenant Jacob Bamberger; Lieutenant J. A.



Meares, wounded at Fort Harrison 30 September, 1864; Lieutenant A. M. Thompson, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Jordan Hughes.

COMPANY I—Captain Hector McKethan, elected Major on organization, promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel and afterwards to Colonel, wounded 17 June, 1864. Lieutenant George Sloan, promoted to Captain, slightly wounded 16 May, 1864, captured 1 June, 1864; Lieutenant J. A. McArthur, wounded and captured 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant C. T. Guy, promoted from Sergeant, pulled through safe; Lieutenant J. H. Taylor, promoted to Adjutant last year of the war.

COMPANY K—Captain J. B. Underwood, resigned in 1863. Lieutenant W. F. Murphy, promoted to Captain, captured 16 May, 1864; Lieutenant Solomon Boykin, killed at Neuse river bridge 17 December, 1862; Lieutenant E. T. McKethan, transferred to General Hoke's staff, and afterwards assigned to light duty on account of loss of health; Lieutenant Alexander Elliott, killed at Cold Harbor 1 June, 1864; Lieutenant J. J. Tew, pulled through safe; Lieutenant Eli Dudley, wounded, but time and place not remembered.

I am indebted to comrades Private Stephen J. Cobb, of Company D, (Captain of Company F, Second North Carolina Volunteers Spanish-American War), and to Sergeant D. G. McLellan, of Company I, for the following statistics in their respective companies:

#### COMPANY D.

Total enlistments, 151. Killed: Officers 1, men 10, total 11. Died of wounds: Officers 1, men 10; total 11. Wounded: Officers 3, men 58; total 61. Captured: Officers 3, men 20; total 23. Total, officers 8, men 98; grand total, 106. Of the twenty enlisted men reported as captured, thirteen died in prison.

#### COMPANY I.

Killed: Officers 0, non-commissioned officers 2, men 43; total, 45. Wounded: Officers 2, non-commissioned officers 3, men 48; total, 53. Captured: Officers 2, non-commissioned officers 3, men 24; total, 29. Total, officers 4, non-commissioned officers 8, men 115; grand total, 127.



This company sustained a loss of twenty-nine men in the charge on 16 May, 1864, exclusive of the few captured who were not wounded.

The enemy overrun and captured our picket line just before the charge and our loss in prisoners was due to that fact. They were not lost in the assault.

A. A. MCKETHAN.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,  
26 April, 1901.





FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT.

1. Wm. W. Carmichael, 1st Lt., Co. F.      2. Leroy S. Elliott, Private, Co. K.



## FIFTY-SECOND REGIMENT.

---

By JOHN H. ROBINSON, ADJUTANT.

---

The Fifty-second Regiment of North Carolina Troops was organized at Camp Mangum (camp of instruction), near Raleigh, on 22 April, 1862, and was composed of ten companies of infantry, as follows:

COMPANY A—*From Cabarrus County*—Captain, George A. Propst; First Lieutenant, John M. Alexander; Second Lieutenant, Phillip A. Correll, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, Jas. A. Black; First Sergeant, Jas. M. Cook; Second Sergeant, Joseph C. Hill; Third Sergeant, Alexander F. Hurley; Fourth Sergeant, John W. Felter; Fifth Sergeant, Leroy W. Pope; First Corporal, George C. Blume; Second Corporal, George H. Brown; Third Corporal, Richard F. Cook; Fourth Corporal, George A. Misenheimer; and 100 privates.

COMPANY B—*From Randolph County*—Captain, James F. Foulkes; First Lieutenant, Jesse K. Kyle; Second Lieutenant, John H. Robinson, Jr.; Second Lieutenant, W. E. Kyle. The officers of this company were all from Fayetteville. First Sergeant, Calvin J. Rush; Second Sergeant, Lindsay C. Hardister; Third Sergeant, Calvin B. Lewis; Fourth Sergeant, Alvin Bingham; Fifth Sergeant, William N. Glasgow; First Corporal, Reuben C. Fesmire; Second Corporal, Reuben Lowdermilk; Third Corporal, Alpheus Galliharn; Fourth Corporal, George W. Cooper; and 123 privates.

COMPANY C—*From Gates and Chowan Counties*—Captain, Julian Gilliam; First Lieutenant, George Gilliam; Second Lieutenant, John Gatling, Junior; Second Lieutenant, J. N. Harrell; First Sergeant, Job Hofler; Second Sergeant, James J. Floyd; Third Sergeant, David W. Parker; Fourth Sergeant, Caleb M. Hayes; First Corporal, Richard Arnold; Second Corporal, William O. Hofler; Third



Corporal, Peterson Hofler; Fourth Corporal, Thomas J. Monroe; and 93 privates.

COMPANY D—*From Stokes County*—Captain, Leonidas R. Gibson; First Lieutenant, Isaac Nelson; Second Lieutenant, Samuel H. Rierson; First Sergeant, A. C. Myers; Second Sergeant, John H. Nelson; Third Sergeant, D. P. Tuttle; Fourth Sergeant, Phillip A. James; Fifth Sergeant, J. F. Landers; First Corporal, John M. Alle; Second Corporal, J. W. Tuttle; Third Corporal, Charles M. Williams; and 80 privates.

COMPANY E—*From Richmond County*—Captain, Benjamin F. Little; First Lieutenant, Milton S. Austin; Second Lieutenant, M. B. McDonald; Junior Second Lieutenant, Thos. R. Baldwin; First Sergeant, John W. Ewing; Second Sergeant, John H. Nichols; Third Sergeant, Thomas R. Capel; Fourth Sergeant, Isaac Gateley; Fifth Sergeant, R. F. Gibson; First Corporal, S. C. Crouch; Second Corporal, D. O. Gray; Third Corporal, William Kennedy; Fourth Corporal, John F. Woods; and 120 privates.

COMPANY F—*From Wilkes County*—Captain, Marcus A. Parks; First Lieutenant, Nathaniel A. Foster; Second Lieutenant, William W. Carmichael; Junior Second Lieutenant, J. J. Parlier; First Sergeant, Joseph G. Hall; Second Sergeant E. R. Vannoy; Third Sergeant, William H. Foster, Fourth Sergeant, James P. Warren; Fifth Sergeant, Charles Carlton; First Corporal, James P. Gilreath; Second Corporal, Daniel Wilcox; Third Corporal, Orrin J. Harris; Fourth Corporal, Zenah A. Harris; and 169 privates.

COMPANY G—*From Lincoln County*—Captain, Joseph B. Shelton; First Lieutenant, James M. Kincaid; Second Lieutenant, J. D. Wells; Junior Second Lieutenant, Daniel M. Asbury; First Sergeant, William D. Thompson; Second Sergeant, John W. Lilly; Third Sergeant, Frederick Linebarger; Fourth Sergeant, Thomas B. Thompson; Fifth Sergeant, John F. Little; First Corporal, Moses H. Caldwell; Second Corporal, Albert M. Nixon; Third Corporal, W. G. P. Houston; Fourth Corporal, William Little; and 116 privates.

COMPANY H—*From Lincoln County*—Captain, Eric Er-



son; First Lieutenant, William A. Summerson; Second Lieutenant, Lawson A. Dellinger; Junior Second Lieutenant, William R. Arents; First Sergeant, James A. Patterson; Second Sergeant, Peter S. Beal; Third Sergeant, Ephraim Garrison; Fourth Sergeant, John C. McCall; Fifth Sergeant, Samuel H. Randleman; First Corporal, Lafayette Loftin; Second Corporal, John C. Goodson; Third Corporal, John C. Dellinger; Fourth Corporal, Richard McCorkle; and 125 privates.

COMPANY I—*From Stanly County*—Captain, George C. McCain; First Lieutenant, James D. Hearne; Second Lieutenant, Samuel S. Lilly; Junior Second Lieutenant, Willis Randall; First Sergeant, B. K. Crowell; Second Sergeant, James M. McCorkle; Third Sergeant, George P. Parker; Fourth Sergeant, H. Clay Turner; Fifth Sergeant, Reuben Harris; First Corporal, D. D. Rogers; Second Corporal, Benjamin P. Austin; Third Corporal, William A. Smith; Fourth Corporal, Wm. D. A. Mason; and 112 privates.

COMPANY K—*From Forsyth County*—Captain, Julius C. Blackburn; First Lieutenant, Junius W. Goslin; Second Lieutenant, Romulus M. Cox; Junior Second Lieutenant, Virgil H. Walker; First Sergeant, John W. Beck; Second Sergeant, John M. Crews; Third Sergeant, Gideon E. Clayton; Fourth Sergeant, William P. Dawson; First Corporal, James R. Ingram; Second Corporal, Lauriston F. Elliot; Third Corporal, Thomas R. Davis; Fourth Corporal, Ephraim B. Terry; and 100 privates.

These companies were organized as the Fifty-second North Carolina Regiment on 22 April, 1862, the following field officers being elected:

JAMES K. MARSHALL, Colonel.

MARCUS A. PARKS, Lieutenant-Colonel.

JOHN Q. RICHARDSON, Major.

Subsequently the following Staff was appointed:

JOHN GATLING, Adjutant.

JAMES M. McCORKLE, Assistant Quartermaster.

GEORGE H. COKE, Assistant Commissary.

JAMES F. FOULKES, Surgeon.



WILLIAM H. LILLY, Assistant Surgeon.

H. CLAY TURNER, Sergeant Major.

WALTER R. RUSSELL, Quartermaster Sergeant.

W. F. BROOKSHIRE, Commissary Sergeant.

E. J. DEBERRY, Hospital Steward.

J. R. PEPPER, Ordnance Sergeant.

MUSICIANS, Charles DeCamp, J. H. C. Pearce, R. F. Warren and W. H. Shaw.

Captain Marcus A. Parks, of Company F, having been promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, all of the officers of this company were advanced one grade, and Sergeant Joseph G. Hall was promoted to the Second Lieutenancy to fill the vacancy.

Upon the completion of the organization of the regiment, it was assigned to Brigadier-General J. G. Martin's Brigade. About 1 June the regiment was moved from the camp of instruction by rail to a point in Lenoir county on the railroad, near where the village of LaGrange now stands, and went into camp.

We named this encampment "Camp Black Jack," and here we remained about a week or ten days, engaged in drilling and performing other camp duties. At the expiration of that time the command was moved nearer Kinston, where we had more suitable ground, and this encampment was called "Camp Johnston," at which point the regiment remained, drilling daily, until the 16th, when it was ordered to do picket duty about five miles below Kinston. The writer and a Lieutenant being detailed to remain at camp and care for the sick (of whom there were quite a number at that time, suffering with measles and colds), and guard the camp, did not participate in this, the first duty performed by the regiment in the field. The regiment continued in the discharge of this duty until relieved by other troops on the 24th, when it returned to camp and resumed its regular routine duties, with daily drillings of the officers as well as the men.

On the afternoon of 30 June, orders were received to cook all the rations on hand and be ready to move at an hour's notice, whereupon all was bustle in the camp and the orders were promptly complied with. The regiment moved late in



the afternoon, taking the cars to Kinston, and thence marching about five miles below the town on the road leading to New Bern, to meet a column of the enemy advancing in our direction. Night coming on, the regiment bivouacked by the roadside, but the enemy, having received information of our movements, retraced his steps in the direction of New Bern, and, in consequence, General Martin sent a courier during the night to Colonel Marshall, ordering him to return to camp; accordingly the regiment began its march early next morning and reached camp in the forenoon of 1 July. Resting this day, we resumed our drillings on the 2d and continued our routine work until the afternoon of the 5th, when orders were received to cook three days' rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice. These orders having been promptly and cheerfully complied with, we were kept in suspense until Tuesday evening, the 8th, when we boarded the train for the half-way station on the Petersburg & Richmond Railroad, reaching that point about daylight Friday morning, the 11th, having been delayed *en route* by an express train derailed on the track ahead of us Tuesday night, and awaited transportation at Petersburg. We camped temporarily at that point until the 14th, on which date we marched to Drewry's Bluff, going regularly into camp at this place, and naming our encampment "Camp Campbell." Here we were engaged in work upon fortifications, drilling and the various duties of the camp.

Captain James F. Foulkes, of Company B, having resigned in order to accept his commission as Surgeon of the regiment, on 2 July the officers of this company were each promoted one grade and on 21 July, Sergeant Lindsay C. Hardister was promoted to Second Lieutenant. The regiment continued at this camp until the morning of 20 August, when we broke camp at daylight and marched to Petersburg, Va., to await orders. Here we went into camp about two miles east of the city and called this encampment "Camp French."

On 22 August, Lieutenant Lindsay C. Hardister, of Company B, died in his tent at Camp Campbell, after an illness of a few days. About the 26th, the regiment was trans-



ferred to General J. Johnston Pettigrew's Brigade. On the 28th Captain Joseph B. Shelton, of Company G, resigned, and the officers of this company were each promoted one grade, and Corporal R. B. B. Houston was promoted to Second Lieutenant of this company. On 28 October, James W. Huske was transferred from Captain James McNeill's company of cavalry to Company B, and promoted to Second Lieutenant to fill a vacancy caused by the death of Lieutenant Hardister.

The regiment remained at Camp French, doing work on fortifications, drilling, etc., etc., until 2 November, when it was moved to the vicinity of Franklin, Va., on the Black Water river, reaching this point on the following evening. We were placed at Joyner's Ford on picket duty and remained there until 15 November, when we moved and went into camp at Black Creek Church, Southampton county, Va., which we reached during the afternoon of the same day. While occupying this camp we were engaged in picketing the Blackwater at several points.

On the 18th the enemy advanced with a force of cavalry and infantry and made an attempt to cross the river at Joyner's Ford, which point was held by a detail of an officer and twenty men. The attack was first made by a body of cavalry, which was driven back by our picket. They were reinforced by a body of infantry and made a second attack, in which they were successful in forcing a passage, our men retreating; not, however, until a messenger had been sent to Colonel Marshall, informing him of the attack and the necessary retreat of his men. Immediately upon the receipt of this information the Colonel moved at once with his regiment to the support of his men, marching about three miles. When in the neighborhood of the ford, he was told that a body of about 300 cavalry had crossed the river, and was occupying the camp which we had left on the 15th. The regiment was hurried forward, and on reaching a position which commanded a view of the grounds, said to be held by the enemy, was halted. No enemy was to be seen, although they could be distinctly heard giving commands. Skirmishers were thrown forward and advanced, but the enemy declined an



engagement and recrossed the river. Having re-established our picket post at Joyner's Ford and strengthened it, the regiment returned to camp.

After crossing the river the enemy's cavalry moved in the direction of Franklin; and, reaching a point from which they could shell the town, amused themselves with this cowardly occupation for an hour or more, the only result of which was the wounding of two men of the Eleventh North Carolina Regiment stationed there.

On the 26th, Captain George A. Propst, of Company A, having resigned, the officers of this company were promoted one grade each. Lieutenants P. A. Correll and James A. Black having resigned, Sergeants James A. Cook and J. C. Hill were promoted to fill the vacancies.

The regiment continued to do picket duty along the Blackwater river, in the vicinity of Franklin, until 16 December. About 1 November, Captain James M. McCorkle resigned the office of Assistant Quartermaster, and Adjutant John Gatling was appointed to this office. In consequence of this appointment the office of Adjutant was vacant and Lieutenant John H. Robinson, of Company B, was promoted to this position.

On 16 December the regiment was ordered to proceed immediately to Goldsboro, N. C., and in obedience to this order we took the cars at Franklin and reached Goldsboro some time after midnight, and reported to General G. W. Smith, who was in command of this department. The Colonel was ordered to report with his regiment to General Thomas L. Clingman, who commanded on the south side of the Neuse river. The regiment was at once conveyed by train across the river and reported as instructed. General Clingman ordered that the men should rest where they had quit the train, at a point on the Wilmington & Weldon road, about one-half mile from the railroad bridge over the Neuse River, and at the intersection of the county road and railroad.

#### BATTLE OF GOLDSBORO.

About sunrise on the morning of the 17th scouts came in and reported the enemy advancing from the direction of Kin-



ston along the county road in heavy force. Our regiment was at once formed in line of battle, parallel with the railroad and across the county road. Holding this position for the space of, probably, half an hour, the enemy still advancing, Colonel Marshall was ordered to proceed to the railroad bridge and hold it all hazard. He moved his regiment rapidly along the railroad track by the left flank, and immediately upon arriving at the bridge, placed his command to the best advantage for carrying out his orders. Shortly after the regiment was in position the enemy advanced upon us in heavy force. One column approached the bridge on the east side of the railroad and up the river bank, attacking our left companies with great vigor. Another approached up the railroad track, and as it approached, threw out a force on the west side of the railroad. The regiment fought with great spirit and very gallantly, but the force was so vastly superior in number that the left of the regiment was driven back and the enemy advancing, reached the bridge and applied the torch. It being constructed of inflammable material, was soon in a light blaze and burned rapidly. In the meantime the right of the regiment was hotly engaged, and no support having been sent to our relief, and the column spoken of having been thrown out on the west or upper side of the railroad having advanced so far as to greatly endanger our successful retreat, the regiment was moved rapidly up the bank of the river in the direction of the county bridge, half a mile or more above. During our retreat the Fifty-first North Carolina Regiment, which now, when it was too late, had been ordered to our support, mistaking us for the enemy, poured a volley from one company into us, not doing any damage, however, as they fired across an angle formed by two fences and shot too high. At this point the regiment halted.

The enemy, apparently satisfied for the time with having accomplished the destruction of the bridge, fell back and took position on a commanding hill on the east, or lower side of the railroad, about five or six hundred yards from the site of the bridge. Hoping to dislodge the enemy, an attack was made upon his lines during the afternoon.



General Clingman formed his infantry line, composed of the Fifty-first and Fifty-second North Carolina Regiments, under the immediate command of Colonel Marshall, in a skirt of woods on the west of the railroad, and about 500 yards from it. While in this position we were subjected to a very heavy shelling from the enemy's battery of four guns. Leaving his infantry in line as stated, General Clingman moved with two guns of Starr's North Carolina Battery by the county road to attack the enemy in flank, with directions to Colonel Marshall to move at once upon the enemy's line so soon as he should open fire upon him. While the infantry line was awaiting developments by Starr's guns, General Evans, of South Carolina, rode up behind the infantry line, and, inquiring what troops they were, ordered an immediate advance. When he was informed of General Clingman's plan of attack, and suggestion was made to him that a movement before Starr had reached his position would disconcert all of General Clingman's plans and result in disaster, he replied: "I rank Clingman; move forward at once; I will support you with the Holecombe Legion." Of course, commands must be obeyed, and the infantry moved out at double-quick, under a galling fire from the battery, and reached the railroad embankment, under cover of which it halted just long enough to reform its line.

Moving again quickly over the railroad, a high rail fence was encountered which had to be climbed in the face of a heavy discharge from the battery of grape and canister. Meanwhile Starr's guns had not yet come into position, but, fortunately, he opened fire directly after the infantry had crossed the railroad, and drew the fire of a portion of the enemy's battery, the line still advancing; but in a very few moments all saw the hopelessness of the attempt to drive the enemy, and an order was issued to fall back, and for all who could to save themselves by precipitate retreat.

Under General Clingman's plan of attack there was a possibility of successfully dislodging the enemy. Under General Evans' order the attack was simply reckless disregard of the lives of his troops. The Adjutant of the Fifty-second Regiment, in his report of the fight, made on the morning of



the 18th, reported 8 killed on the field, 58 wounded and 13 missing. Of the latter, subsequent reports show some of them to have been killed. The regiment was camped in the vicinity of Goldsboro until about the 23d, when it returned to its camp on the Blackwater near Franklin, Va.

On the 25th orders were received to cook three days' rations and be prepared to move at daylight on the 26th. Accordingly rations were prepared and at dawn on the 26th we crossed the river, entering the enemy's territory on a foraging expedition. We remained for five days and procured a considerable quantity of forage, and this having been successfully accomplished, General Roger A. Pryor, in whose command we were serving temporarily, concluded to go in search of the enemy. Marching all day, we arrived at Windsor Station, on the Seaboard Railroad, about night, and finding the place occupied by two companies of the enemy's cavalry, we opened on them with artillery, when they made a hasty retreat. The command rested here for the night, and at daylight next morning we resumed our march, reaching camp at midday 1 January, 1863.

On the afternoon of the 3d we broke camp on the Blackwater and marched to Garysburg, N. C., where we took cars and reached Rocky Mount on the night of the 5th at 11:30 o'clock, and rejoined General Pettigrew, to the delight of the entire regiment. On the 26th we struck our tents and moved to Magnolia, reaching that point on the evening of the same day.

We pitched our camp near the town, where we were engaged in drilling daily, when the weather permitted, and during our sojourn here underwent a rigid inspection by the inspecting officer of the brigade.

On the morning of 13 February the regiment took up its line of march in the direction of Greenville, and on the 16th, while in bivouac ten miles from Goldsboro, orders were received to remain where we were and await further orders. On the 17th we were directed to return to Goldsboro, which place we reached the same day, and went into camp about two miles from the town. While here we were engaged in drilling every day. March 9th we broke camp and the regiment, to-



gether with other troops, started on a march for the purpose of making an attack upon the enemy at New Bern. The regiment arrived near the town at daybreak on the morning of the 13th and supported our artillery, which opened fire upon the enemy at sunrise. An artillery duel was fought nearly all day without any satisfactory result, when the troops were withdrawn, falling back to a position about three miles from the town, where we rested until 12 o'clock that night.

WASHINGTON, N. C.

About this hour we resumed our line of march and halted nine miles from the town at daylight next morning. In this position we remained until 3 o'clock in the afternoon, when the line of march was again taken up and continued day and night, with occasional short rests, until the 17th, on which date we went into camp near the town of Greenville. On the 18th we were again on the march and arrived at Tranter's Creek, about eight miles from Washington, on the 19th. Remaining here for a day or two we returned to our camp near Greenville on or about the 23d. Resting here, we received orders on the 28th to be ready to move in one hour. Marching on this day, we reached a point on the Pamlico river, seven miles below the town of Washington, on Sunday, March 29th. Here we erected a heavy earthwork on a bluff on the river bank and called it Fort Hill, in honor of General D. H. Hill, who commanded the expedition. The Federal troops occupying the town of Washington were reported to be running short of both ammunition and rations, and Fort Hill was erected for the purpose of commanding the river and preventing communication between the transports and gunboats in the river below and the garrison of the town. Our battery was composed of guns of light calibre, all field pieces and not able to cope with the gunboats in the river below, which gave the fort heavy shellings each day. They were suspicious of us, however, for occasionally two Whitworth guns would be sent down from the battery near the town, and while they were in battery, we would open on them at long range, and on several occasions inflicted considerable damage. When these guns were withdrawn, the gunboats would ap-



proach quite near and open on the fort without eliciting any reply. This puzzled them, and they were timid and would not venture the passage of the fort.

On 7 April, in obedience to orders, Colonel Marshall, with six companies of his regiment, moved at daylight to meet a force of the enemy, reported to be moving on our rear from New Bern. When about three miles from the fort the battalion was halted to await orders. Remaining until night, it was learned that the enemy had returned in the direction of New Bern and the command returned to the fort.

On the 10th the enemy advanced from New Bern in force by the Blount's Mill road, and the regiment was moved out to meet them and check the advance. Forming line of battle at Blount's Mill, we awaited their attack, and after a skirmish of about two hours duration they retired in flight, felling trees across the road to retard pursuit. About the 13th or 14th the boats in the river mustered courage to attempt the passage of the fort. Steaming boldly up, one of them made a successful passage, as we had none but the field guns in the battery, and although we fired upon her repeatedly in her passing, the damage, if any, was of a trifling nature.

The fort having failed eventually in accomplishing the object for which it had been constructed, was evacuated on the 15th and all the troops below drawn in nearer to the town.

On the 18th orders were received to move in the direction of Kinston, *via* Hookerton, which latter place we reached on the 19th, where we remained, awaiting orders until the 25th. Captain Julian Gilliam, of Company C, having resigned 1 April, 1863, First Lieutenant George Gilliam was promoted to Captain and Second Lieutenant John C. Warren to First Lieutenant. Lieutenant John Gatling had previously been promoted to Adjutant, and 1 November, 1862, to Captain and Acting Quartermaster.

On the 25th the regiment marched to Kinston and remained there until 2 May, when we took the train for Virginia, reaching Taylorsville, near Hanover Junetion, on the 14th and going into camp. The regiment was divided for some time during our stay at this point; three companies were



held in camp, five were detached for duty at the railroad bridge over the South Anna river on the Central Railroad, engaged in building fortifications, and two were doing picket duty at the Richmond & Fredericksburg Railroad. When not engaged in building fortifications and doing picket duty, the regiment was drilled daily, and it was in the finest condition when we began our march to join the Army of Northern Virginia.

About 1 June Pettigrew's Brigade was assigned to duty in Major-General Harry Heth's Division of General A. P. Hill's Corps. On 6 June the brigade was ordered to proceed to Hamilton's Crossing, and we marched until late on Sunday evening, the 7th, when we were directed to strike the railroad and take the cars. Obeying this order, we were conveyed by rail the remainder of the distance and reached the Crossing at 4 o'clock Monday morning, the 8th. Upon arrival, we were placed in position on the Rappahannock river, about six miles below Fredericksburg, where we remained in line of battle until 10 June, when the regiment was ordered to proceed to Hanover Junction to relieve General Corse, of Pickett's Division. Reaching the railroad depot, we awaited transportation for several hours. Fortunately, before cars could be furnished the order was countermanded and the regiment directed to report to General Pettigrew, which was done on the same night, when we resumed our place in the line of battle along the river.

#### GETTYSBURG CAMPAIGN.

On 14 June we left the lines in front of Fredericksburg and started on the ever memorable Gettysburg campaign. By easy marches we reached Culpepper Court House on the 17th. Continuing the march on the 18th, passing through Berryville, Charlestown, and other villages, we reached Shepherdstown on the 23d, and on the 24th waded the Potomac at this point, thence proceeding leisurely towards Gettysburg, passing through the battlefield of Sharpsburg, crossing the Antietam river on the stone bridge, on through Chambersburg, Pa., and halting on the 29th at Cashtown, a village at the foot of the mountains on the Baltimore and Chambersburg pike, and



distant about six miles northwest from Gettysburg. Here we rested until the morning of 1 July. On the evening of the 29th Company B, Fifty-second Regiment, under command of First Lieutenant W. E. Kyle, was detailed to picket the Emmettsburg road at a village called Millertown, about five miles to the right of our camp, and during the night had a skirmish with a picket post held by the enemy's cavalry. During the night of the 30th the company was withdrawn and reported at camp.

Early on the morning of 1 July we moved in the direction of Gettysburg. Archer's Brigade of Heth's Division, leading the advance, encountered a heavy force, commanded by General Buford, of the enemy's cavalry, on the Chambersburg road about one mile from Gettysburg, and was at once engaged; the cavalry, pressing Archer very hard, and skilfully using their artillery, checked his advance, when Pettigrew's Brigade, the Fifty-second holding the right of his line, was rapidly advanced to his support. By a vigorous attack we succeeded in forcing Buford's line back in the direction of the town, when, being reinforced by a heavy infantry column, they in turn checked Heth's advance. By this time Pettigrew's Brigade had reached Willoughby's Run, westward from the town and halted; lying here under a heavy shelling from the enemy's guns, and greatly annoyed by their sharpshooters, who occupied, at this time, the second story of a brick building immediately in front of our line, we awaited the arrival of Anderson's Division of Hill's Corps which was moving up to strengthen the lines.

About noon we advanced and Pettigrew's Brigade encountered the enemy in an open field when a most desperate fight ensued. I have already stated that Colonel Marshall's regiment held the right of Pettigrew's line, and as we advanced through the open field our right flank was menaced by a body of the enemy's cavalry, seeking an opportunity to charge our lines. While on the advance and under heavy fire Colonel Marshall formed his regiment in square to guard against attack from this body, and at the same time deployed Company B, under command of Lieutenant W. E. Kyle, to protect his flank. This gallant officer succeeded in holding the cavalry



in check and finally drove them from our flank. This maneuver was executed by the regiment as promptly and accurately as if it had been upon its drill grounds. The fighting continued with unabated fury until sundown, when we had gradually, but steadily, driven the enemy's lines back upon the town, but at a tremendous cost of valuable lives. About this time—sundown or nearly so—General Pender was sent to our relief, and passing over our lines took up the fight and drove the enemy into and through the town, halting only when commanded to do so, and thus ended the first day's fight so far as the Fifty-second Regiment was concerned.

The losses in the brigade were appalling, and those of the Fifty-second Regiment very heavy. Here the gallant Captain McCain, of Company I, fell dead, pierced by a minie ball, while leading his company in the thickest of the fight. About the same time the young and chivalrous Captain Blackburn, of Company K, fell dead at the head of his company while leading his men to victory. In addition to this great loss many valuable officers were wounded and the loss in the ranks was very heavy. At this time, over thirty-seven years having elapsed, and without access to records, I am unable to state the casualties with accuracy.

On the second day our regiment was not engaged. A greater portion of the forenoon of the 3d was consumed in perfecting the arrangements for the assault on Cemetery Hill. General Lee was concentrating his batteries along the brow of Seminary Ridge, and by noon had massed 145 cannon to open the attack. To reply to these guns the enemy, who were able to see what was going on in our lines, had crowned Cemetery Hill, according to report, with 80 cannon. On this day Heth's Division was under command of General Pettigrew, General Heth having received a disabling wound the day before.

Pettigrew's Brigade was commanded by Colonel Marshall, and the Fifty-second Regiment was under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Parks. The column of attack was lying under the crest of the ridge in rear of our guns. Pettigrew's Brigade occupied the position in line immediately to the left of Archer, who joined the left of Kemper's Brigade of Pick-



ett's Division, which occupied the right of the column of attack. Between 1 and 2 o'clock in the afternoon our guns opened upon the enemy's batteries and elicited a prompt and spirited reply. This artillery duel was continued for the space of about two hours without intermission, and the roar of the guns and bursting of shell were frightful to hear and dreadful to contemplate. A slackening of the enemy's fire was taken advantage of to advance the column of attack. In obedience to orders the line moved gallantly and steadily forward under fire of our guns until it reached a point beyond which it was unsafe to fire over our heads. Steadily the advance was made, and as steadily and coolly met with a murderous fire from the enemy's cannon, charged with grape, shrapnel and canister. Still the line advanced, and at every step our comrades fell on every side, killed or wounded. Still we advanced under the incessant discharge of the cannon, assisted by the infantry's rifles, and had almost attained success, when by the overpowering force and almost impregnable position of the enemy, our lines were forced back, and then the slaughter was terrific. We fell back to the point from which the attack was made, rallying all whom it was possible to reach, and reforming our shattered lines.

In this fatal charge our losses were very heavy. The gallant Marshall, pierced through the body while leading his brigade to the attack, fell from his horse, dead, within a very short distance of the enemy's lines. In his death our cause sustained a very great loss. Of his rank the Confederate Army had few equals and no superiors. His regiment was greatly attached to him; his uniform courtesy, coupled with great firmness and rigid discipline in camp, as well as on the march, had won the entire confidence of his men, and all mourned him as a brother lost. Lieutenant-Colonel Parks was shot through both thighs, and fell into the hands of the enemy, and our brave and dashing Major Richardson sealed, with his life, his devotion to the cause he loved so well, and for the advancement of whose success he had striven so zealously. He was instantly killed by a rifle ball while leading the left wing of



his regiment. Of the line officers, but few escaped wounds or capture.

The regiment was commanded on the 4th by Captain Nathaniel A. Foster, of Company F, the Junior Captain engaged in the fight. The Adjutant of the regiment reported the losses in the engagements of the first and third days as 33 killed on the field, 114 wounded and 169 missing. Of this latter, nearly all of whom fell into the enemy's hands, it is fair to presume many were wounded.

We held our lines during the night of the 3d and the day of the 4th, strengthening them with temporary works, and expecting an attack by the Federal army. As no advance was made by the enemy, General Lee began to retire in the direction of the Potomac on the night of the 4th. In consequence of the death of our field officers on the 3d, Captain B. F. Little, of Company F, was commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain Eric Erson, of Company H, was commissioned Major, the officers of Companies E and H were each promoted one grade, as were also the officers of Companies I and K, in consequence of the death of Captains McCain and Blackburn. On account of the bad roads and caution observed on retiring, we did not reach Hagerstown, Md., until the 10th. Finding the waters of the Potomac so much swollen from recent heavy rains as to make fording impracticable, and General Lee's pontoon bridge partially destroyed, we halted at this place. On the morning of the 11th our regiment went into line of battle about three miles from the town, expecting General Meade would attack us as soon as he had come up. We held this line until the night of the 13th, with occasional skirmishing between the picket lines. During this halt the pontoon bridge had been repaired so as to be available, and was thrown across the Potomac at Falling Waters. The rain had been falling nearly every day since we began to fall back from Gettysburg, and consequently the roads were in a horrible condition. During the 13th wagon trains were put in motion to cross the river, and at night the troops from our portion of the line were withdrawn and marched for the pontoon bridge, but the roads were so cut up by the heavy wagon



trains and the artillery as to make them almost impassable, and our march was necessarily slow.

#### FALLING WATERS.

To Pettigrew's Brigade had been assigned the responsible duty of protecting the rear of the army while crossing the river. The march had been so retarded by the difficulty of getting the artillery and the wagon trains forward that we did not reach our position until 10 o'clock Tuesday morning, 14 July. General Pettigrew chose a hill by the roadside, and between one and two miles from the river, for his position. There he formed his line and ordered a rest, whereupon the men threw themselves upon the ground, and in a few moments many of them, responding to the call of exhausted nature, were sound asleep. We had been followed by a large body of cavalry which had not yet the temerity to attack us. While resting, as stated, awaiting the crossing of that portion of the army which had not yet succeeded in reaching the pontoon, a squad of Federal cavalry, numbering about fifty men, passing through a skirt of woods in our rear, behind which was massed a division, advanced upon us at a trot with sabres drawn and rode over us before we could check them. In explanation of this fact it should be stated that a regiment of our cavalry had passed us going to the rear a short time before for the purpose of crossing the river at Williamsport above, but we thought they were between us and the enemy.

As the cavalry body approached, the men were waked up and called to arms, but some of the superior officers, mistaking them for our own men, ordered the men not to fire, and it was not until they were upon us that the error was seen; then the bursting of caps with the occasional discharge of a rifle, was heard, and the enemy began to reap the reward of his rashness. Having ridden over our lines, they were now using their pistols with deadly effect, when our rifles began to explode and in a few moments all of the squad save five or six who made their escape, were either killed, wounded or prisoners, not however, before General Pettigrew had been mortally wounded by one of the party. The exposure to rain, to which we had been subjected for so many days, had left the



rifles of our men in such bad condition that but few would fire at first, and to this fact is attributed the losses we sustained—had the guns of our men exploded when first tried, not a man of the attacking party would have been left to tell the tale, and valuable lives would have been saved. This engagement caused a general advance on the part of the enemy, and that portion of General A. P. Hill's Corps not yet over the river was hurried to the support of Pettigrew. We formed line of battle to meet the advance, though all of our artillery having passed the river, we had none in line; but skirmishing with the enemy and fighting and falling back, we held them in check until the whole army had crossed, with all of the wagons and artillery, save two pieces, the horses drawing which had become so exhausted as to be unable to move them, and before fresh horses could be procured the rear of the army had passed them. The whole army thus crossed the river successfully in the face of a large body of the enemy. The loss in our regiment, however, was considerable, its commanding officer, Captain Nathaniel A. Foster, being among the number captured.

Upon crossing into Virginia we took up our line of march, passing through Martinsburg to Bunker Hill where we rested several days. Resuming our line of march, passing through Winchester, we crossed the Shenandoah river at Front Royal, and thence marched by way of Flint Hill to Culpepper Court House, which place we reached on the 25th, and went into camp about one mile from the town. Resting until Monday morning, 3 August, we moved towards Orange Court House, reaching the vicinity of the town on the 5th, and there went into camp. About 10 August Colonel William Kirkland, of the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, was promoted to Brigadier-General and ordered to assume command of our brigade, and henceforth it was known as Kirkland's Brigade.

#### BRISTOE STATION.

We remained in our camp near Orange Court House until about 20 September, doing picket duty and drilling daily. On the 20th the regiment was moved to Rapidan Station and placed in position, together with the remainder of the brigade,



to meet an expected advancee of General Meade's army. On 8 October, 1863, we left our line at Rapidan Station with a view of flanking the enemy and giving him battle at Culpepper Court House, but we were not successful in bringing on this fight. The enemy, learning of General Lee's movements, began to fall back towards Centreville, we following in hot pursuit. On the 13th the Corps of A. P. Hill had reached Warrenton, Va., and on the morning of the 14th we moved out from Warrenton along the turnpike road to New Baltimore, where we wheeled to the right in pursuit of General French, who was just ahead and retreating very rapidly, as was evidenced by the beaten tracks on both sides of the road over which his troops had passed. Reaching the hills to the westward and just above Bristoe Station in the afternoon, we saw the rear of his column in the valley just beyond Broad Run river. He had escaped us, but we were destined for a fight.

About the time of our reaching Bristoe Station the advance of Warren's Corps, whom General Ewell was following up the railroad, made its appearance and Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades were formed for immediate attack. The two brigades, under cover of artillery, gallantly advanced against overwhelming numbers posted behind the railroad embankment. Everything was moving smoothly until we had reached point blank range, when the infantry posted behind the railroad, opened a withering fire upon our lines which halted and were forced to fall back. The Fifty-second and Eleventh Regiments moved steadily forward and succeeded in driving the enemy immediately in their front, next to the railroad bridge, from their position. About the time we had gained the road in our front, a section of artillery passed rapidly over the river, and, crossing the railroad track, unlimbered, preparatory to giving us a raking enfilading shelling. Looking for our support on the right, we were dismayed to see the enemy to our right and rear, in possession of the field and part of our artillery. The command was at once given to fall back and we retreated rapidly and successfully. The Fifty-second Regiment, whose losses were comparatively few on this occasion, had three killed on the field, twenty-one



wounded and forty-two missing. General Kirkland was wounded and conveyed from the field. In view of the fact that General A. P. Hill had an entire army corps within half a mile, and the remainder of Heth's with all of Wilcox's Division, were spectators, the lack of timely reinforcements was strange, to say the least of it.\*

#### MINE RUN.

We bivouacked upon the battlefield during the night of the 14th, and the following morning fell back to Rappahannock Station, destroying the railroad as we retreated, tearing up the rails which we heated over burning piles of cross ties and twisted so as to render them useless for the time being. Upon arrival at Rappahannock Station we at once entered upon picket duty, engaged in drilling and other incidental camp duty until 7 November. About 11 o'clock Saturday night, the 7th, we received orders to cook rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice. At the time we supposed the army would make another advance, but instead we fell back to a line on the Rapidan river. During Sunday, the 8th, we were in line of battle throughout the day, expecting an attack, but were not engaged. On the 9th we were ordered on picket duty at Peyton's Ford, where we remained until the 13th, on which day we received orders to cook two days' rations and be ready to move at a moment's notice, but did not receive marching orders until the 29th. On this date we left camp at 4 o'clock in the morning, and, proceeding by the Orange Court House and Fredericksburg road to a point near Vidierville, we came up with our cavalry engaged in a skirmish with the enemy. Our skirmishers were deployed and thrown forward, engaging the enemy until nightfall, and we held this line during the night. The remainder of the army having arrived during the night, General Lee formed his line of battle at Mine Run. On the morning of the 30th the enemy opened his artillery on portions of the Confederate line, and we confidently expected an attack. It seems, however,

\* When General Lee arrived on the scene of A. P. Hill's bloody blunder his pointed rebuke was "nothing remains to be done. General Hill, except to bury your unfortunate dead."—ED.



that upon an inspection of General Lee's lines General Meade recognized the position to be impregnable, and, declining battle, retired behind the Rapidan on the night of 1 December.

Our regiment remained at this point until Thursday, 3 December, when we returned to Camp Marshall, our winter quarters, near Orange Court House, where we remained employed in drilling and general camp duty until 3 February, 1864, on which day our regiment was ordered on picket duty on the Rapidan river. On the 20th General Kirkland, having recovered from his wound received at Bristoe Station, returned to camp and again took command of his brigade.

During the month of March Governor Vance paid a visit to the North Carolina troops in the Army of Northern Virginia and made addresses to the several brigades. He had an appointment to speak to Cooke's and Kirkland's Brigades, jointly, on the 29th, but on account of the very bad weather our commands were deprived of the pleasure of hearing him. The regiment, having been in winter quarters since 3 February, on 27 April vacated the cabins and moved to an encampment one mile distant. As sickness prevailed to a great extent about this time, the change was made as a sanitary measure with good results.

#### THE WILDERNESS.

On 4 May our regiment broke camp and marched by the Orange Court House and Fredericksburg plank road, reaching Vidiersville, near which it rested for the night. On the 5th it continued to march in the direction of Fredericksburg, and early in the afternoon reached a point at which the plank road is intersected by what is known as the Brock road; and here General Hill, finding the enemy in his front, formed his line of battle extending across the Plank road. About this time the Fifty-second Regiment was ordered to retrace its steps for the purpose of protecting our wagon train, which was reported to be threatened by the enemy's cavalry. Accordingly, we proceeded to execute this command, and, having gone as far as Parker's store, about four miles to the rear, were informed that its services were not required. Immediately it faced about and returned to join its brigade. In the



meantime the battle had begun, and as we approached the lines we were met by great numbers of our men wounded and seeking the rear for shelter and relief. These men were wounded in every conceivable manner—some slightly, others severely and not a few mortally. Nothing daunted by this spectacle, the gallant old Fifty-second moved rapidly forward and took its position in the brigade, and at once became hotly engaged. The ground over which we were fighting was covered with dense undergrowth, and the enemy could scarcely be seen, in many places, one hundred yards in our front. From the time we joined the brigade, which must have been about 5 o'clock in the afternoon, until nightfall there was one continuous roll of musketry, when night coming on put a stop to the battle for this day. The regiment spent the night upon the ground on which it had ceased to fight in the evening, and the exhausted men sought what rest they could.

From the nature of the ground over which the battle had raged, our lines had become very much disarranged, and in many places there was no connection with our troops to the right or left. Longstreet, it was known, was marching to relieve Hill's Corps, and was expected to be up by 12 o'clock that night. Possibly for this reason the inexcusable blunder of not re-establishing our lines during the night of the 5th was made.

Longstreet was delayed and did not reach us at the expected time, and sunrise of the 6th found us fighting under these great disadvantages. The enemy having penetrated our lines at one of these gaps, opened fire upon the Fifty-second Regiment from the rear. Finding we were flanked we began to fall back, fighting as we retreated. By this time the whole line to the right of the plank road was being forced back and the safety of the army for a time was greatly endangered. Longstreet with his gallant men reached the field about this time; rapidly forming his line, he met the advancing lines of the enemy, checked them, and in a few moments was rapidly driving them back upon their own lines, and thus re-establishing those of General Hill.



## SPOTTSYLVANIA TO PETERSBURG.

Our regiment remained in line of battle in the Wilderness until the evening of the 8th, when we were marched to Spottsylvania Court House, which place we reached on the morning of the 9th and were assigned to a position in the line to the left of the court house where we began immediately to intrench ourselves. Here we remained in line of battle, fighting at intervals and constantly exposed to heavy shelling from the enemy's battery. Our losses since the 5th had been heavy—Captain Kyle and Lieutenant Huske wounded among numbers of others, and on the 11th Captain Leonidas R. Gibson, of Company I, was killed. In consequence of his death the officers of this company were each promoted one grade.

General Grant had again taken up his movement to the left, and on the 22d we were withdrawn from our lines and moved rapidly in the direction of Hanover Junction. Crossing the North Anna river our regiment was placed in line on the south side of the river about two miles from the junction. General Warren having crossed the river at Jericho Ford on the 23d, was met by Hill's Corps near Noel's Station and after a spirited engagement was forced to halt for the day.

After this the regiment resumed its place in the line of battle, where it remained until the 31st, when it was moved in the direction of Gaines' Mill, which point it reached about noon on 1 June. Here we were placed in line, but not engaged until the 2d, when we participated in a heavy skirmish with the enemy. In this fight General Kirkland was again wounded, receiving a rifle ball through the thigh, and was taken from the field. In consequence, Colonel George H. Faribault, of the Forty-seventh Regiment, was in command of the brigade. On the afternoon of 3 June Heth's Division, occupying the left of General Early's line, (he was commanding A. P. Hill's Corps at this time), was twice most vigorously attacked, but the enemy was handsomely repulsed with considerable loss. The Fifty-second Regiment sustained its part of these attacks with its accustomed coolness and spirit. On 5 June, for the first time since leaving Orange Court House, Heth's Division was resting, awaiting or-



ders. Worn down with fighting, and constant marching to meet the enemy's advance, the men greatly enjoyed this much needed repose.

## PETERSBURG.

On the evening of the 9th, the regiment was ordered to proceed to Bottom's Bridge, on the Chickahominy river, for picket duty, and on the evening of the 10th was ordered to join the brigade in the line on the following morning. From here we moved to White Oak Swamp, reaching that point on the 14th, where we remained, doing picket duty until the 18th, when we marched for Petersburg, Va., reaching the neighborhood of that city on the night of the 18th, after a dusty and very fatiguing march. We were placed in line of battle on the south side of Appomattox river. About the 25th the regiment was taken from the trenches and marched about four miles north of the city and assigned the duty of guarding the bridges on the turnpike and railroad over Old Town creek. In the latter part of July, Colonel William MacRae, of the Fifteenth North Carolina Regiment, was made Brigadier-General, and ordered to assume command of the brigade. Henceforward, we were known as MacRae's Brigade. We remained in the vicinity of Petersburg until Wednesday, 27 July, when we marched to Chatlin's Bluff, reaching that point Thursday morning after a very tiresome tramp.

On the afternoon of the 28th our skirmish lines were heavily engaged for an hour or two, and we expected an attack upon our lines, which did not take place. We remained here in line until the 30th, when we received orders to move at once to the south side of the James river. We marched a distance of about ten miles to Rice's Turnout on the Richmond & Petersburg Railroad, and at that point took the cars to Petersburg, and occupied our position in the intrenchments. At this point we remained until 2 August, when we were moved further to the left and placed in reserve. On the 9th we relieved General Cooke in the trenches, our line at this point not exceeding 200 yards distance from the enemy's lines, and our sharpshooters, as well as those of the en-



emy, kept up a constant firing both night and day. We held this line until the 13th, when we, in turn, were relieved, and camped temporarily in rear of our lines until the 18th, when we were moved outside the lines to a point about two and one-half miles southwest from Petersburg, and one mile east of the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad, where we had been sent to confront General Warren, who was pressing for the railroad. In the afternoon we made a sudden and vigorous attack upon Warren's left and drove him back about one mile, when our command was withdrawn. By the evening of the 20th the enemy had succeeded in gaining possession of the railroad and intrenched himself at a point about one mile south of Vaughn's house, at what we called the Yellow Tavern, located on the railroad about four miles south from Petersburg. On the night of the 20th we were withdrawn from the trenches and again moved to the south of the city to attack the enemy, who now held the railroad. Reporting to General Heth, whom we found at Vaughn's house, before day on the 21st, we were soon in line, and advanced our sharp shooters to clear the front, and after a pretty sharp skirmish they drove the enemy's picket lines in. Under Pegram's guns, we advanced to the attack; and, after having driven in two lines of the enemy who fell back under cover of their batteries, we were halted in a skirt of woods about half way between Pegram's guns in our rear and the enemy's batteries in our front, and between the two we were subjected to a furious shelling. The column sent to attack the enemy in flank failing to come up, we held our lines until night, when we were withdrawn and retired within our lines of intrenchments. On the 24th we moved out to our works and marched for Reams Station, halting at night near Armstrong's Mills, about eight miles southeast of the city. Early on the morning of the 25th we resumed the march and halted at a point about three miles from Reams Station.

#### REAMS STATION.

About 2 o'clock an attack had been made upon the enemy by a part of General A. P. Hill's command, which was driven back with loss, after which the North Carolina



Brigades of Lane, Cooke and MacRae were ordered up, taking position in the enemy's front. Advancing steadily and rapidly under the fire of Pegram's guns, we captured the whole line, not, however, before the enemy were driven off in a hand-to-hand encounter in the works, in which in a few instances clubbed rifles were used. In this fight our losses were necessarily heavy. We captured seven stands of colors, 2,000 prisoners and nine pieces of artillery. (See General Lee's letter to the Secretary of War, 26 August, 1864.) The enemy having been driven from the railroad, fell back to their own line, and at nightfall our troops fell back to Petersburg.

On reaching the city we were placed in line, the right of our brigade resting on the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad. Here we were engaged in throwing up a new line of works in front of those at that time occupied. At this employment we continued until 16 September, when we were moved to a point about half a mile south of the Boydton plank road, and about three miles southwest of the city, where we were employed in constructing rifle-pits until the 20th. On this day we were moved about one mile further south of the Boydton road and engaged in constructing works of a more elaborate character until the 29th, when we were ordered to Petersburg to supply the places in the line of troops who had been sent north of the James. We reached the city on the same day and awaited orders. On the 30th we were ordered to counter-march and take position on the right of the line. During the time we had been withdrawn, the enemy advanced and had taken a portion of the rifle pits and a heavy earthwork (Fort MacRae) which we had constructed and held on the Squirrel Level road. Attempting to move thence in the direction of the Boydton plank road, he was met by Heth's Division, and after a sharp and spirited attack, was driven back on his lines. MacRae's Brigade now took position in the line further to the right and was engaged daily in throwing up earthworks and drilling until the morning of 27 October.

#### BURGESS' MILLS.

The enemy having driven in our cavalry holding the right of the line, and penetrating to the Boydton plank road at a



point known as Burgess' Mills, about six miles southwest of Petersburg, MacRae's Brigade, together with other troops, was sent to their support. Finding the enemy in heavy force on the west side of Hatcher's Run, and south of the plank road, we crossed the run some distance below, and immediately after crossing advanced our corps of sharpshooters, who at once encountered the enemy's skirmish line, which was rapidly forced back upon the Federal line of battle. In the meantime our line of battle had been formed. With a yell we charged the enemy's lines, which were broken by the impetuosity of our attack, and were driven rapidly before us. Having driven the enemy for nearly a mile, and finding no support advancing to our assistance, the enemy being in great number on both our right and left flank, General MacRae was forced to call a halt and fall back on our lines. In this engagement the loss of officers and men was heavy. Among the former was Lieutenant James W. Huske, of Company B, Fifty-second Regiment, who fell, pierced through the body with a minie ball while gallantly leading the left wing of the regiment in this charge. He had on this occasion, as on all others, behaved with conspicuous gallantry. He died upon the field, and in his death the regiment lost one of its most valuable officers, and his company a kind and considerate friend. Fighting until nearly dark our lines were drawn back and reformed, where we awaited an expected attack, but apparently the enemy had been sufficiently punished, as they withdrew under cover of night, leaving their killed and wounded on the field. A Major-General said in the hearing of this writer, next morning, that he counted 286 dead and 145 so severely wounded as to be unable to help themselves.

On the 29th MacRae's Brigade returned to the lines near Hart's house, whence it had been taken, and was employed in changing our lines, building a new line of works and tearing down the old ones. At this point we erected cabins and went into winter quarters. Occupied in working on fortifications, drilling and the ordinary camp duties, we were not called upon to move until 9 December, 1864, when the brigade started upon a tramp in pursuit of a party of the en-



emy's troops engaged in an effort to destroy the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad. We did not get a fight, but were successful in driving them back within their own lines, after which we returned to our camp, reaching it on the 14th. From this date until 5 February, 1865, we remained in our winter quarters, doing picket duty, drilling and performing such other duty as is incident to camp life.

#### HATCHER'S RUN.

On the 5th MacRae's Brigade, accompanied by other troops, moved out to intercept a column of the enemy moving by the Vaughn road, in the direction of the South Side Railroad, which had reached a point near Armstrong's Mill, on the left bank of Hatcher's Run. Finding the enemy strongly intrenched, we made a demonstration against them which was repulsed with some loss. We were withdrawn after dark and returned to our quarters. On the 7th we were ordered under arms at daylight expecting to attack the enemy, but on account of a very heavy sleet and snowstorm, did not move. On the night of 31 March we were moved to the right and occupied a position in our lines on the right of the Boydton plank road beyond Hatcher's Run, which we held until the night of 2 April, when we began our retreat by a road leading from Five Forks to Southerland Station, closely pursued by the enemy. Reaching Southerland Station on the morning of the 3d, we were so closely pressed as to find it necessary to fight. We therefore selected a position on the brow of a slight hill in an open field and rapidly fortified our line, as well as we could, with bayonets used to break the earth, and such other means as were at command. Before we had succeeded in doing any considerable work the enemy charged our line. His advance was met with a well-delivered and telling volley from our rifles (we had no artillery) and they were driven back with heavy loss. A second attack with strengthened lines was made and again they retreated with greater loss. A third and much heavier column was hurled against our little band; and, after fighting with great desperation, being flanked on our left, we were driven from our lines and



retreated in the direction of the Appomattox river with but little, if any, organization.

Since the war a Federal General told General MacGowan, of South Carolina who, being the ranking officer present on this occasion, commanded our line, that this was the most gallantly defended line of any within his knowledge during the war; that we had killed and wounded more of their men than we numbered. Following the course of the river by the nearest accessible road, and often through the woods, crossing Namozine and Deep creeks, we joined General Lee at Good's Bridge and proceeded thence to Amelia Court House, reaching this point on the 4th and halting for rest and rations. Here General Lee expected to ration his army, having ordered supplies to meet him at this point. In this hope, however, he was greatly disappointed. The authorities at Richmond, in the panic caused by the expected evacuation of the lines around Richmond and Petersburg, ordered the trains to proceed, without stopping, to the capital, for the purpose of moving the government's effects, which they did, carrying with them almost the last hope of the army in the shape of its subsistence, there to be destroyed, or fall into the hands of the enemy.

We rested here during the 4th and 5th sending out foraging parties for supplies, which resulted in—nothing. The troops had now been forty-eight hours without regular rations and the prospect was disheartening. On the night of the 5th we left Amelia Court House, marching westwardly by way of Deatonsville, thence towards Farmville. Approaching High Bridge over the Appomattox river, we encountered a body of cavalry disputing our passage. MacRae's Brigade charged, driving them off and capturing General Gregg, after which we continued the retreat, and crossing the river over the bridge, bivouacked for the night. On the morning of the 7th the retreat was continued. Reaching a commanding position about five miles north from Farmville, a line of battle was formed and fortifications quickly erected. Here we rested until night, when the retreat was continued in the direction of Lynchburg, and by the night of the 8th the army had reached the vicinity of Appomattox Court House.



On the 9th an advance was begun but, finding the enemy in possession of our only line of retreat, the army was halted pending negotiations for the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia. On the 12th, in accordance with the terms agreed upon, the Fifty-second Regiment, together with the remainder of what had been the noble Army of Northern Virginia, marched to a point designated by the commissioners appointed for that purpose, and stacked their arms, deposited their furled banners, gave their parole and took up their line of march for those homes they had fought so bravely to defend through four long years of blood, hardships and toil.

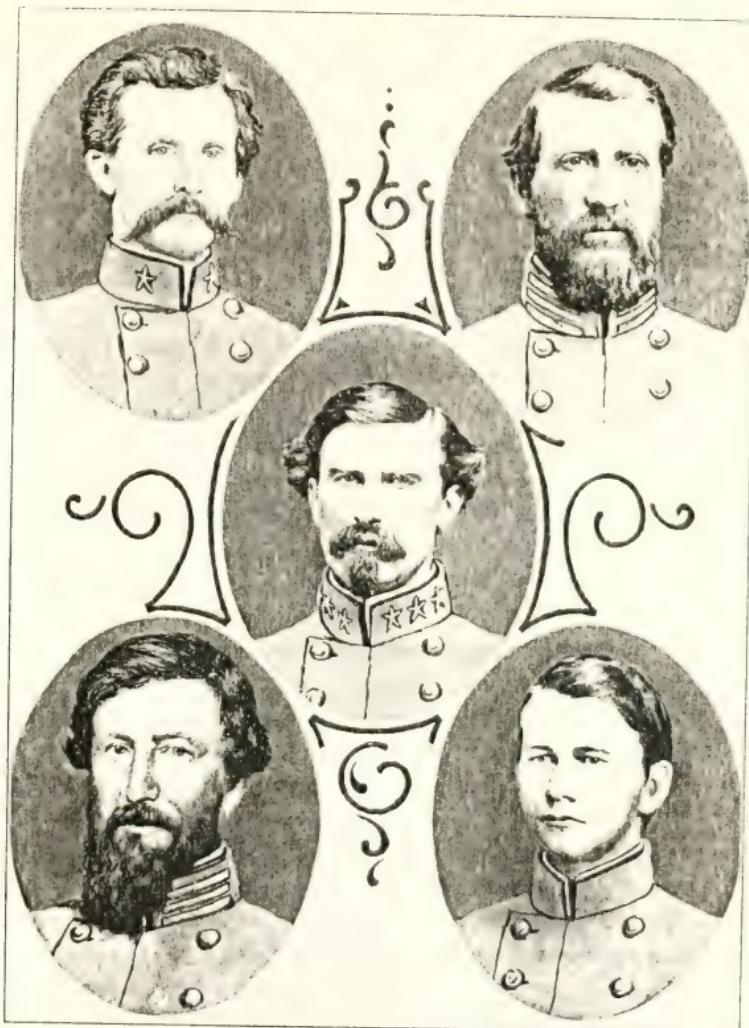
NOTE:—After the regiment had been assigned to a brigade I have not, in many instances, been able to speak of it as a separate command, but it is to be understood that in all cases where the movements of the brigade are spoken of, the Fifty-second Regiment participated.

Having no access to records, I have not been able to note casualties with accuracy as to detail, except, in a few cases, where my information is derived from letters written to my wife at the time.

JOHN H. ROBINSON.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,  
9 April, 1901.





FIFTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

1. James T. Morehead, Colonel.
2. James J. Iredell, Major.  
(Killed at Spottsylvania.)
3. J. F. Eller, Captain, Co. K.
4. J. Harvey White, Captain, Co. B.
5. James Webb Burwell, Private, Co. B.



## FIFTY-THIRD REGIMENT.

BY COLONEL JAMES T. MOREHEAD.

---

The duty assigned to me to write a sketch—not a history—of the Fifty-third North Carolina Infantry, I undertook to discharge, with pleasure, but I did not realize until I began how great the difficulty would be, with no records and the conflicting recollections of surviving comrades as to events and persons. It may be and no doubt it is true, that I have not been accurate as to the personnel of the officers of the regiment, as to the dates of commissions, death and wounds, and if any injustice by omission or commission is done, I assure my living comrades and friends of such as have crossed over the river, that no one regrets more than I the lack of reliable data to rectify any mistakes.

The limited length of this sketch of course, forbids my entering into the details of casualties among over one thousand men who at different dates composed the rank and file.

The characteristics of this regiment were common to North Carolina troops. Obedience to and reverence for law and authority, for which the State has been so long known, in my opinion, constitute the basis of soldierly qualities for which her soldiers will be famous in history.

This regiment was like other North Carolina regiments; it was never known to shirk a duty; never refused to advance when ordered; never known to retire without command. In June, after its organization, it was ordered to Richmond and during the seven days contest it was on duty on the south side of the James. The greater part of its first year of service was spent in Eastern North Carolina and it received its first baptism of fire as a regiment at Washington, N. C., in Gen. D. H. Hill's winter campaign of 1862 and 1863. A few days after the battle of Chancellorsville it became a part of the Army of Northern Virginia, and as a part of Daniel's Brigade, was attached to the Second Corps, with which it



marched and fought from Fredericksburg to Appomattox, and participated in more than twenty general engagements, including Gettysburg, the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Washington City, Kernstown, Snicker's Ford, Winchester, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek, Hare's Hill, Petersburg, and in numerous combats and smaller affairs, in some of which the conflict was more hotly contested than in the greater battles. Daniel's Brigade was composed of the Thirty-second, Forty-third, Forty-fifth and Fifty-third North Carolina Regiments, and Second North Carolina Battalion. After General Daniel's death, General Bryan Grimes became Brigadier-General. The histories of the other regiments in the brigade necessarily outline the chief incidents in the career of the Fifty-third and make it unnecessary to give its battles and marches in detail.

I select two special instances of its coolness and discipline: One was on the first day of the battle of Gettysburg. This regiment had hastened from Carlisle, Pa., its steps quickened by the report of big guns on the morning of 1 July. Immediately upon its arrival at Gettysburg it was thrown into line and advanced to the assault with the brigade. Soon it was ascertained that there was not room between the brigade on the left and the one on the right, and this regiment was dropped out of the line, which closed up in its front and for some time it had to stand under shot and shell in an open field without being able to return the fire until the brigade on the left, having given away, it moved to the left, took its place and drove the enemy into the town.

In this trying situation, and there could have been none more trying, except a retreat under fire, the regiment manoeuvred as upon parade and drill, and its behavior on this occasion was greatly commended by the brigade and division commanders.

Another instance: At the battle of Winchester, 19 September, 1864, after hours of desperate fighting, when all the troops on the right and left had abandoned the contest and retired from the field, this regiment, alone, continued to fight the foe until ordered to retreat, which it did, across an open field for several hundred yards (the enemy advancing ten to one in numbers) in perfect order, and at intervals, when or-



dered, halting, facing about and delivering its fire almost in the faces of the pursuers. Not a man broke ranks or quickened his steps. As is well known to every soldier, a retreat under fire is the severest test of discipline and courage.

At the battle of Winchester, to prevent the enemy from discovering the gap on the left, I had deployed the greater part of my regiment as skirmishers, and this thin line successfully held five times its numbers at bay, until the failure of promised support to arrive, and all of Early's army on our left had been driven from the field. It was known to every man in the regiment that the enemy was getting rapidly in our rear, and that there was imminent danger that we would be cut off and surrounded, but until ordered so to do, not a man left his position, and the regiment then retreated across the field in the manner above told.

Experience and observation have taught that one of the results of organization and discipline is, that when soldiers retire or retreat in face of the enemy by order, they will halt, but if they "break" without order, it is difficult to rally and reform them. An incident of this battle illustrates this. The temporary works of the enemy above referred to were constructed just beneath the brow of the hill or slope up which the regiment was charging at a run and was not observed until we were within a few feet of them. When the men had reached nearly the top of the slope, to their astonishment they saw behind the work a third line of the enemy and such of the other two lines as could be prevailed on to stop, outnumbering us four or five to one. Our men imminently faced about and started for the shelter of a wooded hill from and through which they had just driven the enemy. Seeing the condition and thinking of the fact above stated, I at once ordered a retreat, had the officers to repeat the order, seemingly so superfluous, and directed the regiment to halt as soon as the woods were reached. When I reached the woods, I had the satisfaction of seeing the regiment reformed and "ready for business" as if nothing had happened to dampen their ardor.

I select these out of many instances, which particularly distinguished this regiment, because of the trying situations.



After the regiment was assigned to Daniel's Brigade, it participated in the battles of Gettysburg, three days, and at Mine Run and fought more or less from 5 May, 1864, to 30 May at the Wilderness under fire every day. It was in the famous Horse Shoe at Spottsylvania Court House, during the terrible days of 9, 10, 11 and 12 May, losing its Major, James Johnston Iredell, killed, Col. Owens wounded, several of its Captains and Lieutenants and scores of its men killed and wounded. It was brought out of the Horse Shoe to straighten the lines after the assault of the 12th under command of a Captain, its only remaining field officer, its Lieutenant-Colonel being in command of the brigade, the Brigadier-General (Daniel) and every other officer in the brigade senior in commission, having been killed or wounded. On 30 May it was engaged in the battle at Bethesda church, and on the next day was withdrawn from the front preparatory to its march to the Valley of Virginia.

On 5 or 6 May, 1864, the sharpshooters of this regiment were much annoyed by one of the Federal sharpshooters who had a long range rifle and who had climbed up a tall tree from which he could pick off our men, though sheltered by stump and stones, himself out of range of our guns. Private Leon, of Company B (Mecklenburg), concluded that "this thing had to be stopped," and taking advantage of every knoll, hollow and stump, he crawled near enough for his rifle to reach, took a "pop" at this disturber of the peace and he came tumbling down. Upon running up to his victim, Leon discovered him to be a Canadian Indian, and clutching his scalp-lock, dragged him to our line of sharpshooters.

The regiment was at Lynchburg when the pursuit of Hunter began, marched with General Early to Washington, D. C., was one of the regiments left to support the picket line under the walls of Washington, while the rest of the corps made good its retreat to the valley—the Nineteenth and Sixth Corps of the Federal army having been poured into the city for its defense. While supporting the pickets, this regiment became involved in one of the hottest conflicts in its experience, but succeeded in holding its position, repulsing and driving the



enemy back to the earthworks, which defended the city. At midnight it received orders to retire in perfect silence, and to the surprise of all when we reached the position on the hills near the city, where we had left the corps, it was ascertained that the corps had left the night before, twenty-four hours—and we marched the whole night and a greater part of the next day before we caught up with the rear guards. Early's ruse, as usual, had succeeded in deceiving the enemy.

This regiment participated in all of the battles in the Valley in 1864, and in numerous combats and skirmishes. In this Valley Campaign the regiment lost its gallant Colonel Owens, who was killed at Snicker's Ford, near Snicker's Gap, in August, 1864. He had been absent since 10 May, disabled by wounds at Spottsylvania Court House; had returned just as the regiment was eating dinner, and almost while we were congratulating him on his safe return, we received notice that the enemy had crossed the river at Snicker's Ford. The order to "fall in" was given, we marched to the river, and drove the enemy across, after a short, but severe conflict. The firing had ceased, excepting now and then a dropping shot, when Colonel Owens was killed by one of these stray shots. He was a good officer, brave, humane, social, popular with both men and officers. He was succeeded by the writer as Colonel. At Winchester, on 19 September, 1864, Adjutant Osborne was killed. Two years ago Color Sergeant Taylor, of Company E, Surry county, who has resided in Utah since 1866, visited me. He received a ball in his hip from which wound he still limps and in talking about his own wound, he told me as we were charging the third Federal line at Winchester, having broken the first two, and when near the temporary breastwork of the enemy, he received the shot which disabled him for life, and that as he fell, young Osborne picked up the flag waving it, ran forward, cheering on the men and was killed within 20 feet of the Color Sergeant. He was an efficient officer and daring soldier, I suppose not older than 20 years. Lieutenant W. R. Murray, of Company A, than whom there was not a better officer or braver soldier in the "Old Guard" of Napoleon, acted as Adjutant after the death of Osborne till the surrender at Appomattox.



As stated before, Major Iredell, a true gentleman and brave soldier, was killed at Spottsylvania Court House. Captain John W. Rierson succeeded him. At Winchester, finding that there was a gap of two or three hundred yards between my left and the troops on the left, and that the enemy had discovered and were preparing to take advantage of it, I directed Major Rierson to find General Grimes on the right of the division, (General Rodes had been killed in the beginning of the action), and apprise him of the situation. After some time he returned, saluted and reported, the fighting being very heavy all the time, when I discovered that Major Rierson was shot through the neck, which wound was received before he found General Grimes, but he nevertheless performed the duty, returned and reported, and did not then go to the rear until I directed him to do so. This gallant officer was killed when the enemy broke over our lines at Petersburg, a few days before Appomattox. He was entitled to his commission as Lieutenant-Colonel from the date of the battle of Snicker's Ford, but I do not know that he received it.

This was a volunteer regiment, enlisted in the latter part of the winter and first part of the spring of 1862, and was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, the first week in May, 1862, and assigned to Daniel's Brigade, (Rodes' Division). William A. Owens, of Mecklenburg county, was elected Colonel; James T. Morehead, Jr., of Guilford county, Lieutenant-Colonel, and James Johnston Iredell, of Wake county, Major.

Colonel Owens had already been in the service more than one year, having served as Captain in the First (Bethel) Regiment, and at the time of his election was Lieutenant-Colonel of the Eleventh Regiment.

Lieutenant-Colonel Morehead had also been in the service the preceding year, having entered the same in April, 1861, as Lieutenant of the "Guilford Grays," (afterwards Company B, of the Twenty-seventh Regiment), and at the time of his election was a Captain in the Forty-fifth Regiment.

William B. Osborne, of Mecklenburg county, was appointed Adjutant and John M. Springs, of Mecklenburg, was appointed Captain and Assistant Quartermaster. He re-



signed in the fall of 1862 and was succeeded by Captain John B. Burwell. J. F. Long was appointed Surgeon; Lauriston H. Hill, of Stokes county, Assistant Surgeon, and promoted Surgeon in 1863. William Hill, of Mecklenburg, was appointed Captain, A. C. S. In 1863 Charles Gresham, of Virginia, was assigned to duty with this regiment as Assistant Surgeon. James H. Colton, of Randolph county, was appointed Chaplain; J. H. Owens, Sergeant Major (promoted Second Lieutenant of Company I and killed); R. B. Burwell, Quartermaster Sergeant; J. C. Palmer, Commissary Sergeant; R. S. Barnett, Ordnance Sergeant. Upon the promotion of J. H. Owens, Aaron Katz, of Company B, succeeded him as Sergeant-Major, and upon his being captured, Robert A. Fleming, of Company A, was Sergeant-Major.

COMPANY A was from Guilford county. A. P. McDaniel was its first Captain, commissioned 25 February, 1862, and upon his retirement in 1863, Lieutenant J. M. Sutton was promoted Captain and wounded at Bethesda Church and on 21 September, 1864, in the Valley, and captured at Petersburg; P. W. Hateriek (killed at Gettysburg), First Lieutenant; J. M. Sutton, Second Lieutenant; W. L. Fleming, promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant in August, 1863; William R. Murray, promoted from ranks to Second and First Lieutenant in 1863; J. W. Scott, promoted Second Lieutenant from Sergeant (chief of regimental corps of sharpshooters).

COMPANY B was from Mecklenburg county and its first Captain was J. Harvey White, commissioned 1 March, 1862, killed at Spottsylvania Court House in May, 1864. Samuel E. Belk, First Lieutenant; John M. Springs, Second Lieutenant, promoted Assistant Quartermaster; William M. Matthews, Second Lieutenant, promoted from First Sergeant; M. E. Alexander, promoted Second Lieutenant from Second Sergeant. Lieutenants Belk, Matthews and Alexander were wounded at Gettysburg.

COMPANY C was from Johnston, Chatham and Wake, mostly from Johnston. Its first Captain was John Leach, commissioned 28 February, 1862; was succeeded as Captain



by J. C. Richardson (wounded at Petersburg), commissioned 17 April, 1863, both from Johnston county; George T. Leach, of Chatham, commissioned First Lieutenant 7 March, 1862; John H. Tomlinson, of Johnston county, commissioned Second Lieutenant in April, 1862, resigned and succeeded by E. Tomlinson in 1862; S. R. Horn, of Johnston county, was commissioned Second Lieutenant 21 July, 1862.

COMPANY D was from Guilford, Cumberland, Forsyth, Stokes, Bladen and Surry. David Scott, Jr., of Guilford county, was commissioned Captain 1 March, 1862, resigned and was succeeded 15 May, 1863, by Alexander Ray, of Cumberland county, promoted from First Lieutenant and killed at Petersburg, April 1865. Alexander Ray was commissioned First Lieutenant 1 March, 1862; Madison L. Efland, of Guilford county, commissioned Second Lieutenant 1 March, 1862, promoted First Lieutenant 15 May, 1863, and wounded; A. H. Westmoreland, of Stokes county, was promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant; W. N. Westmoreland, Stokes county, was promoted from the ranks to Second Lieutenant in 1863.

COMPANY E was from Surry county. J. C. Norman was commissioned Captain on 8 March, 1862, resigned the following December and was succeeded by First Lieutenant Robert A. Hill, killed in 1864, succeeded in turn as Captain by First Lieutenant B. W. Minter; Samuel Walker was commissioned Second Lieutenant 8 March, 1862, promoted to First Lieutenant December, 1862, and resigned; B. W. Minter, Second Lieutenant, promoted First Lieutenant and Captain; Henry Hines, Second Lieutenant, in 1862; Logan Bemer, promoted from Corporal to Second Lieutenant, wounded and captured in 1864; James A. Hill, Second Lieutenant, captured in 1864.

COMPANY F was from Alamance and Chatham. G. M. G. Albright was commissioned Captain 5 May, 1862, killed July, 1863, at Gettysburg, and was succeeded by A. G. Albright, promoted from First Lieutenant (wounded at Fisher's Hill, 1864); Jesse M. Holt, First Lieutenant, 16 July, 1863, promoted from Second Lieutenant, (killed at Winchester, 1864); Brauson Lambe, commissioned in 1864, promoted



from Second Lieutenant; John J. Webster, commissioned Second Lieutenant May, 1862, and resigned; S. J. Albright, commissioned Second Lieutenant in 1862 and killed at Spottsylvania Court House in 1864.

COMPANY F was from Stokes. G. W. Clarke was commissioned Captain on 20 March, 1862, and resigned May, 1862; was succeeded by John W. Rierson, promoted from Second Lieutenant and who was in 1863 promoted to Major, wounded at Winchester and killed at Petersburg, April, 1865. He was in time succeeded as Captain by H. H. Campbell, promoted from First Lieutenant and killed at Winchester. G. B. Moore was commissioned First Lieutenant in March, 1862, resigned in June; John W. Rierson, commissioned Second Lieutenant March, 1862; W. H. McKinney was promoted from the ranks in May, 1862, to second Lieutenant, and wounded at Winchester; C. F. Hall, promoted from ranks to Second Lieutenant, mortally wounded at Gettysburg; W. F. Campbell, promoted First Lieutenant and wounded at Washington, D. C.

COMPANY H was from Stokes county. Captain Spottswood B. Taylor was commissioned on 20 March, 1862, resigned on account of health in November, 1863, and was succeeded by John E. Miller, promoted from Second Lieutenant, who was wounded at Snicker's Ford and captured September, 1864; Thomas S. Burnett, commissioned First Lieutenant 20 March, 1862, and killed in 1863; Charles A. McGhee, First Lieutenant, November, 1862, wounded at Gettysburg 3 July, 1863, and captured; Alexander M. King, Second Lieutenant, March, 1862; J. Henry Owens, promoted Second Lieutenant from Sergeant-Major, December, 1862, and killed; Alexander Boyles, promoted First Lieutenant.

COMPANY I was from Union county. E. A. Jerome was commissioned Captain 20 March, 1862, and resigned in June following, and was succeeded by Thomas E. Ashcraft, promoted from First Lieutenant; John D. Cuthbertson, commissioned Second Lieutenant 20 March, 1862, promoted First Lieutenant; Joshua Lee, commissioned Second Lieutenant 20 March, 1862; James E. Green, promoted from the ranks,



Second Lieutenant 24 June, 1862; A. T. Marsh, promoted from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant 19 May, 1864.

COMPANY K was from Wilkes county. William J. Miller was commissioned Captain 20 March, 1862, killed at Gettysburg 1 July, 1863, and was succeeded by Jesse F. Eller, promoted from Second Lieutenant; Thomas C. Miller, promoted from Second Lieutenant to First Lieutenant 1 July, 1863; Thomas C. Miller, commissioned Second Lieutenant in August, 1862.

This regiment lost in killed its first Colonel, who was twice wounded; both of its Majors, one of them, Rierson, several times wounded and its Adjutant. Its surviving Colonel was wounded three times, at Gettysburg, Fisher's Hill and in the assault upon the Federal lines at Hare's Hill on 25 March, 1865, in which last engagement he was captured within the enemy's works.

As it is, I have only the approximately correct report of the losses of one of the companies of the regiment, and that only in one battle, but I think the losses of the other companies may be fairly estimated from the losses of this one.

Company B lost at Gettysburg out of about 65 men, 8 killed and 22 wounded, and of the four officers, three were wounded.

I meet many of these scarred and now grizzly veterans of the companies from Alamance, Guilford, Stokes and Surry at my courts in these counties, and hear sometimes from those from the other counties, and with very few exceptions they have shown themselves to be as good citizens as they were gallant soldiers. They illustrate that "peace hath her victories no less renowned than war."

The regiment reduced to a handful of men shared the fortunes of the historic retreat and surrendered at Appomattox, being then commanded by Captain Thomas E. Ashcraft, the brigade being commanded by Colonel David G. Coward. General Grimes having been made a Major-General, commanded the division.

I cannot close this sketch without acknowledging my indebtedness to Captain Sutton and Private J. Montgomery, of Company A; L. Leon, of Company B, who kindly furnished



me with copy of a diary kept by him from organization of the regiment up to 5 May, 1864, when he was captured; Captain Albright, of Company F; Captain S. B. Taylor, of Company H, and Lieutenant W. F. Campbell, of Company G, for valuable information; and I hope that the publication of the sketches of the North Carolina regiments will excite interest enough among the old soldiers to give us further dates and incidents. I wish I could write a history of my regiment which would do the officers and men full credit for their patriotism and services.

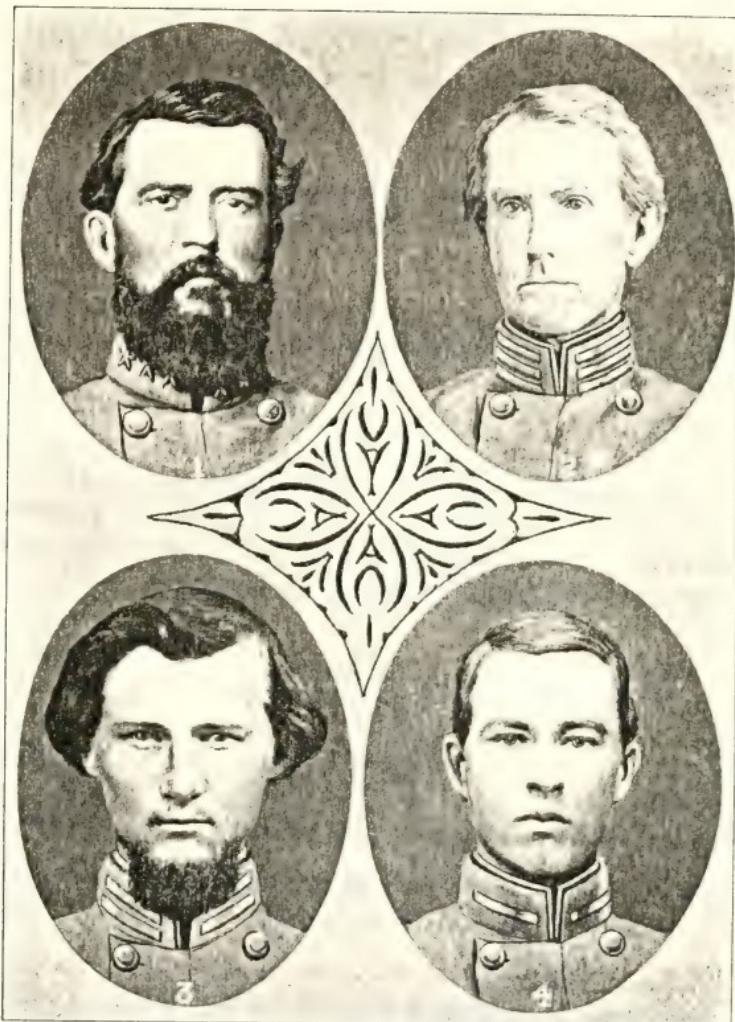
The patriotism and heroism of these soldiers were illustrated by the patient and uncomplaining endurance of the forced march, the short rations, the hardships of winter camps and campaigns as much as by their fighting qualities. Posterity will hesitate to decide which is most worthy of admiration.

JAMES T. MOREHEAD,

GREENSBORO, N. C.,

9 APRIL, 1901.





#### FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

1. K. M. Murchison, Colonel.
2. Rev. John Paris, Chaplain.
3. J. Marshall Williams, 1st Lieut., Co. C.
4. R. A. Russell, 2d Lieut., Co. E.



# FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT.

---

BY J. MARSHALL WILLIAMS, FIRST LIEUTENANT COMPANY C.

This regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, N. C., on 10 May, 1862, and was composed of ten companies of infantry, viz.:

COMPANY A—*Rowan County*—Captain Anderson Ellis.

COMPANY B—*Burke County*—Captain, J. C. S. McDowell.

COMPANY C—*Cumberland County*—Captain, K. M. Murchison.

COMPANY D—*Northampton County*—Captain, J. A. Rogers.

COMPANY E—*Iredell County*—Captain, —. —. Parker.

COMPANY F—*Guildford County*—Captain, —. —. Watlington.

COMPANY G—*Wilkes County*—Captain, A. H. Martin.

COMPANY H—*Yadkin County*—Captain, D. S. Cockerham.

COMPANY I—*Columbus County*—Captain, W. B. Hampton.

COMPANY K—*Granville County*—Captain, S. J. Parham.

Each company containing its full quota of men, it proceeded to elect Field Officers, which resulted as follows:

CAPTAIN J. C. S. McDOWELL, of Company B, Colonel.

CAPTAIN K. M. MURCHISON, of Company C, Lieutenant-Colonel.

CAPTAIN A. ELLIS, of Company A, Major.

Subsequently the following Staff was appointed:

LIEUTENANT W. C. McDANIEL, Adjutant, of Company C.

D. R. MURCHISON, Quartermaster.

E. G. GREENLEE, Surgeon.



W. H. TATE, Assistant Surgeon.

REV. JOHN PARIS, Chaplain.

ROBERT G. RUSSELL, Sergeant-Major.

E. G. BRODIE, Ordnance Sergeant.

J. J. FORNEY, Quartermaster Sergeant.

Thus it will be seen that this regiment was composed of ten companies from different parts of the State. Though high up in numbers, it was made up of good material; many of its officers and men had formerly belonged to the First Volunteers or "Bethel," Seventh and Eighth North Carolina Regiments.

Upon the completion of its organization this regiment was sent to the coast of North Carolina, and after three months service on picket duty, and other duties incident to camp life, it was ordered to the Army of Northern Virginia, and was temporarily placed in Law's Brigade, with the Sixth, Twenty-first and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments, which constituted a part of Hood's Division. Soon after it was assigned to this command, the first battle of Fredericksburg came off.

#### FREDERICKSBURG.

Here we "fleshed our maiden sword," and at once covered ourselves with glory. On 13 December, 1862, this regiment, with the Fifty-seventh, being new regiments, were detached and ordered to drive the enemy from a railroad cut, from which they had driven our troops in the early part of the day. At 5 o'clock p. m. this memorable charge was made in the most gallant manner in the presence of some of our prominent generals, and to use the language of General Hood, our commander, "They pursued the broken enemy across the railroad for a mile into the plains. Although scourged by a galling flank fire, it was not until repeated messengers had been sent to repress their ardor that they were recalled. I verily believe the mad fellows would have gone on in spite of me and the enemy together; and as they returned, some of them were seen weeping with vexation because they had been dragged from the bleeding haunches of



the foe, and exclaiming: "It is because he has no confidence in Carolinians! If we had been some of his Texans he would have let us go on and got some glory." Our loss in this battle was comparatively light, considering the deadly work we were engaged in, but we left some brave men on the field, which served to remind us that in our next it might be our lot to fill a soldier's grave. After this battle we went into winter quarters on the Rappahannock river, and in a short time the campaign of 1863 was opened. We were then transferred to General Robert F. Hoke's Brigade, which was composed of the Sixth, Twenty-first, Fifty-fourth and Fifty-seventh North Carolina Regiments and assigned to Early's Division, Jackson's Corps. We took part in some of Jackson's strategic movements around Chancellorsville, and were engaged in several "brushes" which were very common at that time. On 3 May our division alone, was sent back to Fredericksburg, a distance of sixteen miles, and took position on Marye's Heights to prevent a flank movement on General Lee, then at Chancellorsville. On the following day Sedgwick's Corps, with other troops, crossed the river, and swept us from our position. Soon Rode's Division came to our assistance, and after a bloody struggle we regained our former position, and the enemy were driven back across the river. Many of our brave men fell in this battle. It was here that our much-lamented Colonel, J. C. S. McDowell, fell mortally wounded, and on the 8th yielded up his life, "as a holocaust to his country's need." His remains were then taken by a dear friend to Richmond, and placed in the capital by the side of the immortal Jackson, who had "crossed over the river" at the same time. After the death of Colonel McDowell, Lieutenant-Colonel Kenneth M. Murchison was made a full Colonel, and Captain James A. Rogers, of Company D, was made Major, vice Ellis promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel. Soon we joined the main army, then at Chancellorsville, and were assigned to Ewell's Corps, and with the army took up a line of march for Culpepper Court House. From thence we moved northward, passed Little Washington, and moving with the utmost rapidity we soon entered the Valley.



## IN THE VALLEY.

Upon reaching Front Royal, Rodes' Division of our Corps was detached and sent to Berryville, when our division (Early's) with Johnson's, were sent to Winchester. On reaching the vicinity of Winchester our sharpshooters became engaged, and soon drove the enemy into one of their advanced forts, which was very strong. A line of battle was soon formed, and all preparation made for an immediate attack. General Ewell finding it a difficult matter to procure a suitable position for his artillery on the hills commanding the town, spent the day in posting his batteries.

The town was strongly fortified, and it was thought that Milroy, with a garrison of 6,000 men, would make a desperate effort to hold it. General Ewell at once resolved to storm the works, and with all the artillery from the two divisions opened a galling fire upon their works, and in three hours' time the Federal guns were silenced. At 6 o'clock p. m., Hays' Brigade of our division, made a most gallant charge and carried their redoubts by storm, capturing and killing a good portion of the garrison. Night coming on, Milroy, with a handful of his men, deserted their command and fled in wild confusion and reached Harper's Ferry in safety.

In this engagement 2,000 prisoners, equally as many horses, and a vast amount of commissary stores were captured. On 18 June our regiment, then numbering 400 men, was ordered to take these prisoners to Staunton, a distance of 100 miles, and rejoin the army then in Maryland, at a specified time. The Fifty-fourth was thus deprived of a share in the battle of Gettysburg in which the rest of the brigade participated. With as little delay as possible we started en route for Staunton, marching eighteen miles a day, and guarding prisoners at night. On 3 July, 1863, we returned to Winchester, and in conjunction with a Virginia regiment, were ordered to guard an ordnance train to the army, then in Pennsylvania. Upon reaching Williamsport it was ascertained that the enemy was making some demonstrations in our front, and we were at once ordered by General Imboden, who was then in command, to take position and repel any



attack that might be made upon our wagon train, which had arrived there, but could not cross on account of the high stage of the water in the Potomac.

On the morning of the 6th a strong force of cavalry and artillery advanced on the Hagerstown and Boonsboro roads. Our force being small, four companies under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Ellis, were detached to support our only battery, and the remainder of the regiment deployed as sharpshooters, so as to check any advance of the enemy that might be made on the Boonsboro road. At 5 o'clock p. m. the enemy advanced their artillery, which was followed by dismounted cavalry, and a fierce little battle ensued, which lasted for an hour, when they retreated. In this fight 25 were killed and wounded from our regiment, and a good number from the regiment that had joined us.

General Imboden guarded our flanks, while Colonel Murchison maneuvered this little army with much coolness, and soon won the unbounded confidence of his men in his military skill and their admiration for his personal bravery.

#### RETREAT FROM GETTYSBURG.

On 8 July we again joined the main army at Hagerstown, Md., and with it we again crossed the Potomac. Marching continuously we reached Rapidan Station, and went into camp for a short rest, which was so much needed. From this camp heavy cannonading could be heard in our rear, and we were frequently annoyed by the cavalry dashes on our rear guard. After our rest we moved on Somerville Ford, to check a column of cavalry from crossing; but after a feeble demonstration, they withdrew to Raccoon Ford to reinforce some troops already there, and confronting Johnson's Division. We were hurried to that point and assisted in driving them back.

From here we moved to Orange Court House, and after being reviewed by General Lee, we went into camp and were held in reserve for two days. Colonel Murchison, after a short absence, joined us at this place, and took command of the regiment. In a short time we were sent out on picket



and captured a good lot of prisoners that had been cut off from their commands.

We then moved on to Madison Court House, and in approaching Rappidan river, had a fierce encounter with the enemy's cavalry, which was soon driven back. We then continued our march in the direction of Culpepper Court House, and upon arriving there had a rest of two days, awaiting some troops to come up. On the 12th we resumed our march for Warrenton Springs and rested for the night. The next morning we crossed the river, and found many dead Yankees and horses where General Stuart had fought them the day before. He was then driving them in the direction of Rappahannock Station. Our whole army then began destroying the railroad for some distance, and after this work was accomplished we went on to Rappahannock Station and went into camp. The next day we moved to Brandy Station, and in passing through an open space of fields, we were subjected to a severe enfilading fire, from the horse artillery, which caused some confusion; but they were soon driven off, and we then moved on quietly and bivouacked near Brandy Station.

On 1 November, 1863, we moved our camp two miles west of Brandy Station on the railroad, and much to our surprise, we were ordered to build winter quarters; and what rejoicing there was in the anticipation of a long rest and a cessation of hostilities. Those of us who possessed a talent for making ourselves comfortable soon had good cabins, and as every officer was priding himself upon having the "best," a sudden change in our life of quietude and social enjoyment came over the spirit of our dreams.

#### RAPPAHANNOCK BRIDGE.

On the evening of the 15th our brigade was called out and hurried to the river to reinforce Hays' Brigade of our division, then on picket, and threatened by a heavy force. Just at dark we reached the river, and were hurried across on pontoon bridges, and took position behind some works that had been built to defend the passage of the river. It was thought by General Early that a successful resistance could



be made, or if forced to withdraw, it could be done under the batteries from the south side. In a short time Sedgwick's Corps with the assistance of Russell's and Upton's Brigades from the Fifth Corps, took possession of our bridge and the two brigades after some desperate fighting, were overpowered and compelled to surrender.

Out of the 2,000 men engaged and so recklessly exposed, 1,750 were captured and 150 killed and wounded. Those who escaped only reached the south side by swimming the river. From our regiment only three commissioned officers escaped, viz., Lieutenants Edward Smith, Fitzgerald, and the writer of this sketch, who was then carried fifteen miles at night, through a mist of rain and snow, in an unconscious condition, before a change of clothing could be had. Those that were captured were taken to Johnson's Island, Ohio, and were held until after the war.

If the writer is not mistaken, General Hoke was at this time home on a wounded furlough, and upon hearing of this dreadful disaster, came on and obtained permission to take the remnant of his brigade to Kinston, N. C., to be recruited by conscripts, and his old men then at home on sick and wounded furloughs. The Twenty-first North Carolina of our brigade was absent at the time, being on detached service in North Carolina, and thus escaped capture. The conscripts soon began to pour in from Raleigh, and for three weeks we were engaged in the monotonous business of preparing these men for more active service.

#### NEW BERN.

General Hoke, not yet entirely well of his wounds, became restless and obtained permission to "tackle" New Bern. On 30 January, 1864, we moved in that direction, by the Dover road, and were reinforced by Clingman's and Corse's Brigades. Upon reaching Core creek our sharpshooters were thrown out and soon became engaged with the enemy, when they were driven back to Bachelor's creek, where they were well fortified and made a stubborn resistance. Our artillery was soon in position, and a deadly assault was made upon



their works, when they fled in much confusion to New Bern, leaving behind several pieces of artillery and a good many prisoners. In this battle our loss in killed and wounded was heavy. Among the killed was Colonel Shaw, of the Eighth North Carolina. We then moved on to New Bern, and finding heavy reinforcements pouring into the city from Plymouth and other points, it was not deemed advisable to make the attack just at this time, and our little army withdrew; but not until much damage had been done to the enemy. We then returned quietly to Kinston, and remained there, drilling conscripts which were daily coming in until 13 April, when our brigade moved in the direction of Goldsboro, Clingman's and Corse's going in a different direction. This movement somewhat puzzled us, as we knew not "what was up" until we reached Plymouth, when some changes were made in our commands.

#### CAPTURE OF PLYMOUTH.

The Forty-third North Carolina and Twenty-first Georgia Regiments were temporarily attached to our brigades. Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia, being senior officer, took command of our brigade (General Hoke commanding the whole army). In the first charge on one of the advanced forts, which was very strong, Colonel Mercer was killed, and his men seeing no chance of getting in under this galling fire, began to waver, when Lieutenant-Colonel W. G. Lewis, of the Forty-third, promptly taking in the critical situation, assumed command, and began to rally the men behind a bluff in a few yards of the fort. He at once sent for two pieces of artillery, which soon battered down one corner of the fort, and we went in without the loss of a man. This movement evidently saved the life of many a brave man.

From this time Colonel Lewis was in command of our brigade and was soon made Brigadier-General for his heroic conduct on this occasion.

We then moved on the town, and after a feeble demonstration by the enemy it was surrendered 20 April, 1864, with 2,500 prisoners, 100,000 pounds of bacon, 1,000 barrels of flour and a vast amount of other stores. Among these prison-



ers 22 had formerly belonged to our army, and had gone over to the enemy and taken up arms against us. These prisoners were sent to Kinston, given a fair trial by court-martial, convicted of high treason, and duly executed by our brigade.\*

After this we went to Washington, N. C. The enemy soon fled destroying a vast amount of stores. At this place we remained several days in perfect quietude. We then moved back to New Bern, where General Hoke expected to add another gem to the diadem of his military fame, but alas! General Lee could no longer do without him and we were hurried to Virginia.

#### BUTLER'S ADVANCE ON PETERSBURG.

Arriving at Weldon, N. C., it was ascertained that the enemy had torn up the railroad and burnt two of our bridges, and we were compelled to march fourteen miles and take the cars again. On 9 May at 6 o'clock p. m., we arrived at Petersburg just in time to save the city. Butler at that time was in possession of the outer works of the city, and had demanded its surrender on the following morning. As soon as we could get in position he was attacked in the most vigorous manner, and soon fled in wild confusion to Drewry's Bluff, and we in hot pursuit until stopped by the heavy shelling from his gunboats. We then crossed the James and took position at Chaffin's farm, and after some sharp picket fighting we were withdrawn and sent to Richmond by steamers. Arriving there, we were sent four miles east of the city, and went into camp for the first time in several days. The next day we again crossed the James river to check a column of cavalry that was supposed to be moving on the coal field railroad. The enemy made but a feeble demonstration, and after some brisk picket fighting they withdrew.

13 July, 1864, we were ordered back to Drewry's Bluff to

---

\* After the war Secretary Stanton had in contemplation calling Gen. Hoke to account but the latter took the initiative by going to Washington and calling on Gen. Grant who promptly stopped the proceedings.—ED.



reinforce General Beauregard, who was threatened by a heavy force. Upon our arrival there the sharp-shooters became hotly engaged, and at 6 o'clock p. m. General Ransom's Brigade was moved forward and made a most brilliant charge on their works, but by some misunderstanding he was not supported and was compelled to fall back, losing some good officers, himself painfully wounded. The following day hot skirmishing was kept up during the entire day, both armies preparing for bloody work. General Beauregard by this time knew what a superior force in numbers he had to contend against, and displayed great military skill in getting his troops in position.

On the morning of the 17th he moved forward his entire line, and after a most desperate struggle for four hours, he drove them in some disorder to Bermuda Hundreds, under cover of their gunboats in the James and Appomattox rivers. Thus the "bottling up of Butler," so graphically detailed by General Grant, was completed, and the military career of this "Beast and modern Falstaff" was at an end (at least in Virginia).

In this battle our loss was very heavy—3,000 in killed and wounded. Among the killed was our noble Major Rogers, who fell pierced by two balls, while gallantly leading this regiment. Our new men behaved admirably, but being inexperienced a great many were killed.

After this battle our entire regiment, save commissioned officers, were duly exchanged and returned for duty, swelling our ranks to 700 men. At this time we only had five commissioned officers on duty, and the arduous duty of commanding these men devolved upon them alone.

We remained here several days watching the movements of the enemy. From here we were transported by steamers to Richmond to reinforce General Stuart, who was then fighting a heavy column of cavalry that was making a raid on the city. After a fierce engagement in which General Stuart was killed, the army withdrew, leaving many of their dead and wounded behind them.

We were then ordered to make a forced march, and again



join the main army at Spottsylvania Court House. Upon our arrival there General Lewis received orders from General Lee in his own handwriting to "continue your march by most direct road to Jowls' Mills and Mud Tavern, and join General Ewell's Corps between Stannard Mills and Crutchfield's; lose no time, and bring up your men in good order." This order forced General Lewis to march his men 37 miles that day, which was one of the longest marches in one day on record.

After reporting to General Ewell, we were assigned to Early's Division again, and had the honor of bringing up the retreat to Hanover Junction, and not being pressed at this time by military exigencies, were allowed to spend a quiet Sabbath in camp.

The next morning we moved for Mechanicsville, where we had a brisk skirmish with the cavalry, which was, as usual, soon driven back. On 11 June we reached Petersburg and took position in the trenches near the city. This position we did not fancy, as the enemy could "pick at" us from the slightest exposure. But, much to our comfort and surprise, we only remained in this position four days, when orders were received to be ready to march in a short time.

#### LYNCHBURG.

On the 14th our entire corps took up a line of march for parts unknown to us. After marching some days we reached Charlottesville, and took the cars for Lynchburg to meet Hunter's army then threatening the city, arriving at the latter place at 2 o'clock p. m. We were moved four miles west of the city and formed a line of battle on the Salem turnpike. Our skirmishers were advanced, and soon attacked the enemy in a spirited manner, and they fell back to Liberty in much confusion, we pressing them so closely they left many wagons, prisoners and commissary stores behind.

On the morning of the 22d we crossed the mountain range at Buford's Still in pursuit, and at Hanging Rock they were intercepted by our cavalry and a brisk little fight took place, in which they lost 200 prisoners, 15 pieces of artillery, 150 horses, and many wagons laden with stores.



The infantry was then so much exhausted from quick marches and hot weather, that they were compelled to give up the pursuit and rest a day. This pursuit was still kept up for two days by our cavalry until reinforcements came to their assistance.

On the following day we moved northward. Upon reaching Lexington, our corps was filed to the left for the purpose of passing through the cemetery to pay our respects to the memory of our fallen commander, the brilliant, matchless and immortal Jackson, who had "crossed over the river and rested under the shade of the trees." Upon approaching the grave, arms were reversed and in perfect silence we passed the sacred spot with sadness depicted in every man's face.

After this we crossed the Shenandoah river and moved on to Mt. Jackson, where Lieutenant-Colonel Ellis, of this regiment, having been exchanged, joined us and took command of the regiment. 2 July we passed Middletown and Newtown, and camped in four miles of Winchester. The next day we came in contact with a considerable force of the enemy and after a brisk skirmish they fled, leaving several pieces of artillery and a good many wagons.

8 July we crossed over into Maryland, "My Maryland," near Shepherdstown, when there was great rejoicing among us, as we knew the heart of her people was with us, though they were bound in fetters. We camped for the night at Sharpsburg. The next day we passed through Boonsboro and Middletown and camped eight miles west of the city. On the 12th we were hurried to Frederick Junction, and forced a passage of the Monocacy, and again the "dogs of war" were turned loose. After a struggle of three hours the enemy fled with a loss of 1,000 in killed and wounded, and 700 prisoners. Our loss was 450 killed and wounded.

#### WASHINGTON CITY.

On the 14th we reached Rockville, in the vicinity of Washington City, and at once formed a line of battle. Our sharpshooters advanced and drove the enemy from his outer works, where a beautiful view of the city could be had. Our bri-



gade occupied a position immediately in front, and across the yard, of a most magnificent mansion, upon an elevated plain, from which the dome of the capitol could be seen. This building was the property of F. P. Blair, (Postmaster General), and was occupied by him until we began to advance upon the city. We remained in this position three days, keeping up a spirited picket fire, which caused great excitement in the city.

For some reason, unknown to us, we withdrew our line without any interference, and moved continuously until we crossed to the south side of the Potomac, and went into camp at Big Springs, which is in a few miles of Leestown.

After a rest of two days we moved on, passed Hamilton, and before reaching Snicker's Gap a dash was made upon our wagon train and seventy of our wagons captured, which were soon recaptured with five pieces of the enemy's artillery. We then crossed the Blue Ridge, and camped for the night in eight miles of Charlestown.

1 September, 1864, we were ordered to Winchester to take the place of Kershaw's Division, which was to be sent to Richmond. Our army was much weakened by the loss of this Division, and it soon met with a series of disasters. At Winchester we remained five days watching the movements of the enemy, and were occasionally engaged in picket fighting. On the 19th a heavy force of the enemy was hurled against us which was repulsed till sun down. About that time the cavalry guarding our flanks were attacked and without being pressed, fled in a shameful manner, causing us to leave our strong works and fall back in some confusion to Strasburg, where we again formed, and all preparations made to receive the enemy, who were rapidly approaching. At 4 o'clock p. m., on the 22d they made a desperate assault upon us at Fisher's Hill, and after a struggle of three hours we were driven back. Our cavalry being insufficient to protect our flanks, we again had to fall back under cover of darkness to Mt. Jackson. In these battles our loss was unusually heavy in killed and wounded. Among the killed on the 19th were Major-General Rodes and Brigadier-General Godwin, the latter commanding our (Hoke's) old brigade, with many other good officers. From



Mt. Jackson we moved to Fort Republic, and were reinforced by Rosser's cavalry. The enemy then had halted on the east side of Cedar Creek, and began to entrench themselves. General Early wishing to redeem his character as a military genius, at once resolved to move back and attack them, and by surprising and giving them an unexpected blow, a victory might be won. While his cavalry and artillery were making a feint on the right, his infantry would fall upon their left.

#### CEDAR CREEK.

At midnight our division was ordered to the point of attack, a distance of four miles over a most rugged path on the mountain side. We would sometimes lose our foot-hold and fall down the mountain side, and would have literally to pull ourselves up by bushes, roots or anything projecting from the mountain side. With nothing to sustain us but a determined will and a devotion to the cause in which we were engaged, at 5 o'clock a. m. 19 October, we reached the point of attack, still hidden from the enemy by a heavy fog. We forded and partly swam the creek, and dashed into their camp without firing a gun, capturing 1,500 prisoners and 18 pieces of artillery, while a good many were in bed and asleep. We then fell upon another corps immediately in front of our cavalry, which was soon panic stricken, and fled in dismay, leaving all their artillery behind, which was turned upon them. Our infantry followed on closely for four miles, when General Early gave over the pursuit.

A good number of our men, thinking the enemy had fled to Winchester, took advantage of this heavy fog and fell out of ranks and returned to plunder the camp, so rich in spoils. By this outrageous conduct our line was weakened, and Sheridan's cavalry coming to their assistance from Winchester, the enemy rallied and moved back upon us. Our line was then thrown in disorder, and soon retreated in much confusion, and the fruits of this brilliant victory lost. Many of us were soon ridden down by the cavalry and captured, killed or wounded, while our cavalry was of little assistance. The writer of this sketch was painfully wounded in this retreat,



and was carried six miles on a horse led by his faithful servant, Billy Williams, before his wound was staunched.

Right here I will digress for one moment: "Billy", as he was known throughout the division, was unlike his race; he seemed to love the excitement of war, and with his young master, saw the sun rise at Bethel and go down at Appomattox. And for the betrayal of a squadron of yankees into our lines, his name was placed upon the rolls of honor in Raleigh.

The enemy recaptured all their prisoners and guns they had lost in the morning and captured from us equally as many as they lost. Major-General Ramseur was killed. Lieutenant-Colonels S. McD. Tate and A. Ellis, commanding the Sixth and Fifty-fourth North Carolina Regiments, with many other good officers, were severely wounded in this trying disaster. Our brigade suffered intensely in this campaign, losing seven different commanders in the course of six weeks' time.

#### PETERSBURG.

The battle of Cedar Creek was the last event of importance in the Valley campaign, and practically closed it. The defeat of General Early and the desolation of the Valley by Sheridan made it impossible for an army to remain in that region. These failures caused much feeling of indignation against General Early, and he was soon relieved of his command. The remnant of his army was then placed under command of General J. B. Gordon, and sent back to Petersburg. Our division was assigned to General Pegram, and sent nine miles west of the city on the Boydton Plank road, where we went into some cabins that had been built by other troops for winter quarters. Here we remained three days only, before the enemy began to maneuver in our front, when we were called out, and in a short time our division and Gordon's (which had just come up) were attacked at Hatcher's Run 6 February, 1865, and a struggle, unprecedented in its fury, and protracted beyond all expectations, was commenced, and we were soon compelled to fall back a short distance. Mahone's and Wileox's Divisions



came to our relief, and by indefatigable exertion we regained our former position, and the enemy fled in confusion. Our loss was very heavy in killed and wounded. Among the killed was our much lamented General, the "gay and gallant" Pegram, who had been married but a few days.

From here we were moved two miles below Petersburg, and placed in Walker's Division, and took positions in the trenches formerly occupied by General Ransom and at some points in a stone's throw of the enemy. Here we had a long rest, but were much annoyed by the daily shellings from their heavy guns.

#### HARE'S HILL.

At 4:45 a. m., 25 March, 1865, a detail from our brigade and another emerged from our works in column of attack and dashed across the narrow space that separated the two armies, tore away the abatis and rushed into Fort Stedman, completely surprising the garrison and carried the works. Instantly the captured guns were turned upon the adjacent forts and in a short time a brigade of the enemy was put to flight, and three batteries on our flanks were abandoned, and were for a short time in our possession. In this brilliant charge many pieces of artillery were taken and spiked, and five hundred prisoners, including one Brigadier-General, were captured. General Gordon opened this battle with great spirit and skill, but was not sustained. The troops on his right made but a feeble demonstration, and were soon repulsed. The enemy in a short time recovered from the surprise and poured in a hurricane of shells into the works they had just lost, at the same time throwing forward a heavy line of infantry, which caused us to fall back, losing many prisoners and a great many killed and wounded. This repulse was followed up and after a stubborn resistance our picket line was taken, and then a lull in the tempest for one day, which was but a prelude to its final and resistless burst. "The mighty huntsman now had the game secure in his toils, and only awaited the moment of his exhaustion to dispatch him."



## THE RETREAT TO APPOMATTOX.

On 2 April, 1865, a most terrific bombardment from one end of the line to the other commenced. At the same time the enemy's infantry surged forward like a mighty wave, and rolled up to our works. As one line recoiled from our deadly fire another would take its place, as though determined to break through by sheer weight of numbers. Our little band, so much exhausted from hard fighting and superhuman exertions, was compelled to fall back in the direction of Appomattox river. Following the river by the most accessible roads, we reached Amelia Court House, thirty-eight miles from where we started. Here General Lee expected to find a quantity of supplies for his troops, but, by an inexcusable blunder of the Richmond authorities the cars passed by without stopping to unload the supplies. We then had been two days without any food, and not a ration to be had. Our disappointment was complete, for the condition we were left in was desperate, and for some time we were wrapped in disconsolate silence. But for this blunder, General Lee could have preserved his army intact and passed Burkeville in safety before the enemy could have reached there. On the night of the 5th we left Amelia Court House, marching by way of Deatonville in the direction of Farmville. Upon reaching Sailor's creek, and after some desperate fighting and losing some of our best men, we moved on to Gettersville, a distance of four miles, much jaded, footsore, and half starved, and soon became engaged in another desperate fight, in which our lamented Captain A. H. Martin, commanding this regiment, fell instantly killed, while gallantly holding his men to the front. When the enemy reached his dead body, they had it decently interred, and wrote upon an envelop, placing it upon the grave, "Here lies the body of a brave man, Captain Martin, of the Fifty-fourth North Carolina." In this battle our regiment lost more than three-fourths of its men in killed, wounded and prisoners, after which the remnant moved on to Farmville, and found that the enemy had just taken a battery in our front and had in possession our only line of retreat. General Lee at this crit-



ical moment seemed very much exercised, and evinced a desire to lead a charge on them if his men would follow. At once many exclaimed, "No, no, but if you will retire we will do the work." As he rode off, General W. G. Lewis, our brigade commander, so distinguished for his intrepid valor, rallied a few men and led the charge until he, with many others, fell severely wounded, and was unavoidably left in the hands of the enemy. The writer of this sketch was then acting as his Inspector General, and was the only member of his staff that was left to tell the tale of this bloody tragedy.

This charge was evidently the last one of importance. As the enemy moved on for a stronger position in our front, under cover of darkness, we moved on sluggishly, and at every step some brave man was compelled to step out of ranks from overpowering fatigue. At 12 o'clock M. we reached the vicinity of Appomattox Court House, and had a few hours of repose, which was so much needed.

#### THE SURRENDER.

On the morning of the 9th an advance was begun, but finding overpowering numbers in our front, and upon all sides, this little army then reduced to something over 8,000 infantry and 3,000 cavalry and artillery actually in line, was halted pending negotiations for its surrender, which was made on that bright Sabbath day. On the succeeding days the rolls were made out and the army paroled in accordance with the terms agreed upon between Generals Lee and Grant. The fragments from the various commands were gathered and marched to a spot designated for that purpose, stacked their arms and deposited a few furled colors. Having received their paroles, our battle and famine-worn soldiers took up the line of march for those homes they had so bravely fought to defend for four long years of blood, hardship and toil.

Thus closes the volume of the bloody record of the Fifty-fourth Regiment of North Carolina troops, and to those of us who still survive, it is indeed pleasant to recall that fearful struggle for independence and to look back upon a series of



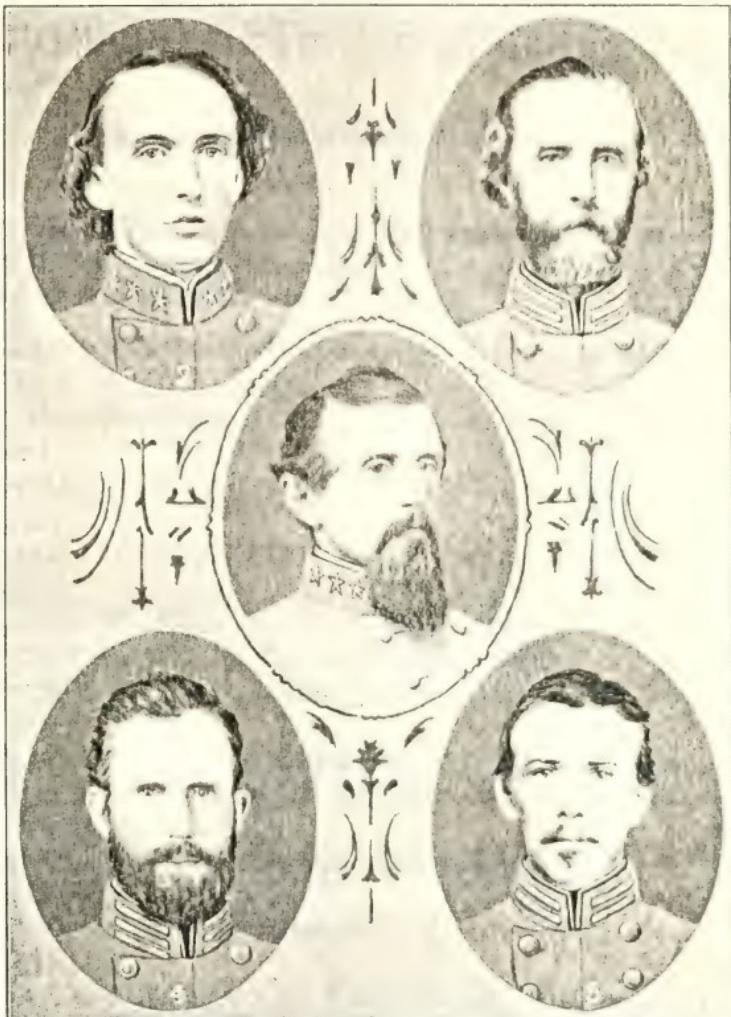
battles and victories unequalled in history; and every one of us will speak with pride of the time when he was a soldier in the Army of Northern Virginia.

NOTE.—I have been much indebted to General W. G. Lewis (who has since died) for information; also to Mrs. Paris, who so kindly furnished me with diaries containing data, casualties, etc., that were written by our beloved old Chaplain, the late Rev. John Paris, who was so noted for his piety, and untiring devotion to the cause in which we were engaged. He was indeed one of God's nobility.

J. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

FAYETTEVILLE, N. C.,  
9 April, 1901.





FIFTY FIFTH REGIMENT.

- |                                                 |                                  |
|-------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. A. H. Belo, Colonel.                         | 3. Rev. William Royall Chaplain. |
| 2. John Kerr Connally, Colonel.                 | 4. D D Dickson, Captain, Co. C.  |
| 5. C. M. Cooke, 1st Lieut, and acting Adjutant. |                                  |



## FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

---

BY CHARLES M. COOKE, ADJUTANT.

---

The Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment was organized at Camp Mangum, near Raleigh, in the early part of 1862. The companies composing the regiment were:

COMPANY A—*From Wilson County*—William J. Bullock, Captain.

COMPANY B—*From Wilkes County*—Abner S. Calloway, Captain.

COMPANY C—*From Cleveland County*—Silas D. Randall, Captain.

COMPANY E—*From Pitt County*—James T. Whitehead, Captain.

COMPANY F—*From Cleveland, Burke and Catawba Counties*—Peter M. Mull, of Catawba county, Captain.

COMPANY G—*From Johnston County*—J. P. Williams, Captain.

COMPANY H—*From Alexander and Onslow Counties*—Vandevere Teague, Captain; Alexander J. Pollock, First Lieutenant.

COMPANY I—*From Franklin County*—Wilson H. Williams, Captain.

COMPANY K—*From Granville County*—Maurice T. Smith, Captain.

JOHN KERR CONNELLY, of Yadkin county, who was for a while at the National Naval Academy at Annapolis, and who had been Captain of a company in the Eleventh Regiment of North Carolina Volunteers, was elected Colonel of the regiment.

CAPTAIN ABNER S. CALLOWAY, of Company B, was elected Lieutenant-Colonel.

CAPTAIN JAMES T. WHITEHEAD, of Company E, was elected Major.



WILLIAM H. YOUNG, of Granville county, was appointed Adjutant.

W. N. HOLT, of Company G, was appointed Sergeant Major.

GEORGE W. BLOUNT, of Wilson county, Quartermaster.

W. P. WEBB, of Granville county, Commissary.

DR. JAMES SMITH, of Granville county, Surgeon.

DR. ISAAC G. CANNADY, of Granville county, Assistant Surgeon.

REV. WILLIAM ROYALL, of Wake Forest College, Chaplain.

A. H. DUNN, of Company I, Quartermaster-Sergeant.

W. B. ROYALL, of Company I, Commissary Sergeant.

J. W. C. YOUNG, Ordnance Sergeant.

PETERSON THORPE, of Company K, Hospital Steward.

CHARLES E. JACKEY, of Pitt county, Chief Musician.

Lieutenant-Colonel Calloway resigned and Major Whitehead died within a few months after the organization of the regiment, and Captain Maurice T. Smith, of Company K, was made Lieutenant-Colonel, and Captain A. H. Belo, of Salem, who commanded a company in the Eleventh Regiment of North Carolina Volunteers, was made Major. Lieutenant-Colonel Smith was killed at Gettysburg and Major Belo became Lieutenant-Colonel, and upon the resignation of Colonel Connally, on account of severe wounds received in the same battle, Lieutenant-Colonel Belo became Colonel. On account of the fact that the senior Captain of the regiment was in prison from Gettysburg until the close of the war, the regiment had no other field officers.

Adjutant Young resigned in November, 1862 and Henry T. Jordan, of Person county, was appointed Adjutant. He was captured at Gettysburg and, after that Lieutenant Chas. R. Jones, of Iredell county, acted as Adjutant for several months and then C. M. Cooke, from Company I, was assigned to that position and held it until the close of the war. Surgeon Jas. Smith resigned in December, 1862, and Dr. B. T. Greene, of Franklin county, was appointed Surgeon. A. H. Dunn died in August, 1862, and Henry S. Furman, of Franklin county, was appointed Assistant Quartermaster Sergeant. W. N. Holt, Sergeant-Major, was made Lieutenant



in Company H, and Jesse A. Adams, of Johnston county, was made Sergeant-Major.

The regiment, after it had been sufficiently drilled to take the field, was sent to the Department of the Pamlico, then under the command of General James G. Martin, and remained there during the summer and early part of the fall of 1862. It was on duty a greater part of the time around Kinston and in Trenton. The first time the regiment was under fire was on 7 August, 1862. A Federal gunboat had come up the Neuse to a point a few miles below Kinston, and the regiment was sent down to prevent the landing of the troops. We were formed in a line on the south side of, and not far from the river; the gunboat came up to a point nearly opposite the position occupied by the regiment, but after the firing of a few shells went back without attempting to land any troops.

The regiment during the time spent in that section was thoroughly drilled and disciplined.

WASHINGTON, N. C.

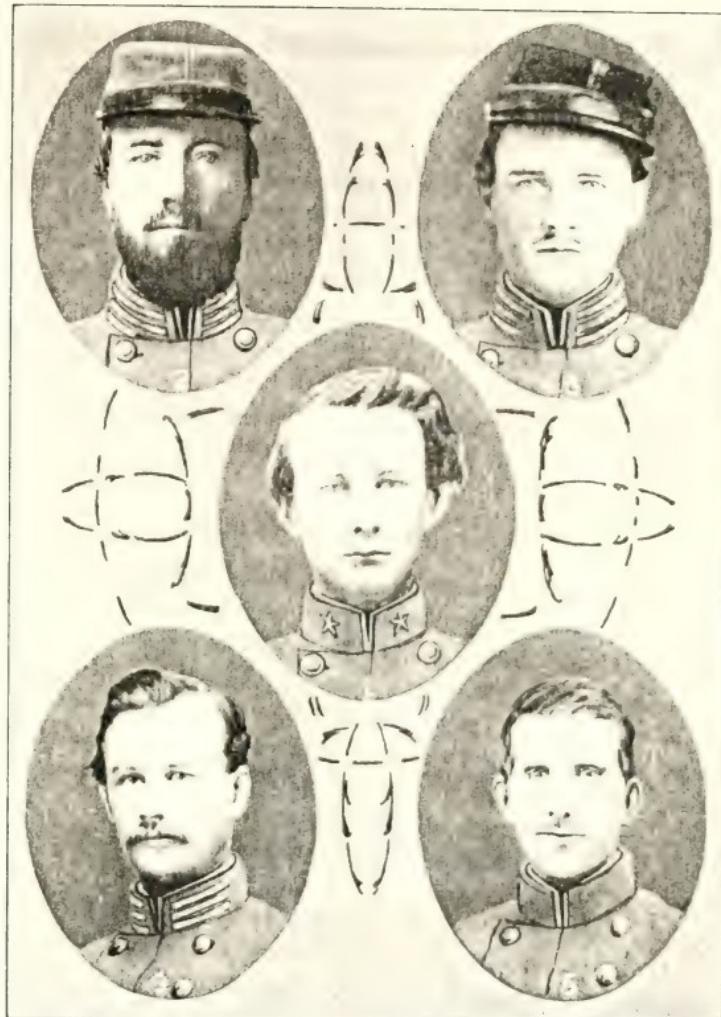
On 3 September, while the regiment was in camp near LaGrange, there was a special order read on dress parade that 200 men were needed for daring service and volunteers were called for. That number was at once obtained and they were organized into two companies of 100 each. Captain P. M. Mull, of Company F, was put in command of one company, and Captain Maurice T. Smith, of Company K, in command of the other, and the Lieutenants were selected from the different companies. Captain Williams, of Company I, was so anxious to be among the number that he procured the consent of the Colonel to his going as First Lieutenant of one of the companies. It was ordered that these companies be prepared with three days' rations to march the next morning at sunrise. Captain Mull was senior officer and in command of the detachment. Just as the sun rose the next morning we moved out of camp, marching a little north of east, and we were then informed that the movement meant a surprise attack upon Washington, N. C., and that we would be joined before we reached the place by other troops. We met on the



5th, between Greenville and Washington, a detachment from the Eighth, and also from the Seventeenth Regiment, and an artillery company, but without cannon, armed as infantry, under the command of Colonel S. D. Pool, who, from this time, being the ranking officer, took command of the force on the march, although General J. G. Martin had the general direction of the movement. Later, Captain R. S. Tucker, with his company of cavalry, joined us. We camped on the night of the 5th within a few miles of Washington, and before dawn the next morning, we commenced our march upon the town. We struck the Federal pickets just outside of the town before it was fairly light; we followed at double-quick, and with a "Rebel Yell," entered the town. The Federal troops were taken by surprise, and after firing a round or two, fell back through the town upon the river, under cover of their gunboats. We were in possession of the town, the troops from our regiment being stationed on a square near the center of the town. We held the position for several hours, but the cannon from the gunboats were turned upon us, and the Federal infantry, having re-formed, commenced to fire upon us with long range rifles, while we were armed with the old smooth-bore muskets. We were forced to fall back to the place where we had camped the night before; the enemy did not pursue us, and the next day we commenced our march back to camp. Captains Mull and Williams, both of whom behaved with great bravery, were wounded; of the men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment engaged, seven were killed and eight wounded. There was no other meeting with Federal forces while the regiment was in this section.

On 1 October, while the regiment was doing picket duty at Wisc's Fork, between Kinston and New Bern, it was ordered to Virginia, and for a while did provost duty in the city of Petersburg. With the Second, Eleventh, and Forty-second Mississippi, it was formed into a brigade, and General Joseph R. Davis was assigned to its command. The regiment remained in this brigade until January, 1865, when it was transferred to Cooke's Brigade. The Twenty-sixth Mississippi Regiment and the First Confederate Battalion were brought into the brigade in the early part of 1864. It was a





FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

- |                                    |                                      |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. James S. Whitehead, Major.      | 4. H. G. Whitehead, Captain, Co. E.  |
| 2. W. H. Williams, Captain, Co. I. | 5. Robert W. Thomas, Captain, Co. K. |
| 3. P. M. Mull, Captain, Co. F.     |                                      |



fine brigade. The Second and Eleventh Mississippi, with the Fourth Alabama and the Sixth North Carolina, had constituted the immortal Bee Brigade at the first battle of Manassas, and General Whiting afterwards commanded that brigade. In forming the brigade for General Davis, the Sixth North Carolina was sent to Hoke's Brigade, the Fourth Alabama was transferred to a brigade of Alabama troops, and the Forty-second Mississippi, which was brought to the Army of Northern Virginia for that purpose, and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina, took their places in the old brigade. Although all the other regiments, except the Fifty-fifth, were from Mississippi, their relations with the officers and men of that regiment were quite as pleasant as they were with each other. The regiments of Davis' Brigade were a part of the force which General Longstreet carried to Suffolk, Va., in the spring of 1863.

#### DUELS BETWEEN OFFICERS.

It was while near Suffolk that an incident occurred which illustrates the high spirit of the officers of the regiment and how jealous they were of its honor. One evening about dark, a heavy piece of Confederate artillery was captured by an unexpected and surprise attack by a brigade of Federal troops. Captain Terrell and Captain Cousins, the one Assistant Adjutant-General of General Laws' Brigade, and the other on the staff of that General, reported that the Fifty-fifth North Carolina had been assigned to protect the battery, whereas, in fact, it was a mistake. As soon as Colonel Connally heard of the report, he went to see those gentlemen and stated to them that they were mistaken; that the Fifty-fifth Regiment had held the position to which it had been assigned, and was in no way responsible for the disaster; and demanded that they should correct their report at once. This they declined to do. Thereupon Colonel Connally returned to his regiment, called a meeting of the field officers and Captains, stated the circumstances to them, and insisted that the honor of the regiment required that its officers should demand satisfaction from those who had slandered it. He proposed that the field officers should first chal-



lenge the Alabamians, and if the matter was not satisfactorily arranged, consistent with the honor of the regiment, and if they should be killed, each officer should pledge himself to take up the quarrel and fight until the last man was killed, unless proper amends should sooner be obtained. To this the officers generally assented, but Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, who was an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and a young soldier of unquestionable bravery, arose and stated that he was conscientiously opposed to duelling, and that he would not resort to that method of settling any question. Colonel Smith's Christian character and his personal courage were so well known, that his scruples on the subject were respected, and Major Belo proposed to take his place; and so it was arranged that Colonel Connally should challenge Captain Terrell, and Major Belo should challenge Captain Cousins. Captain Satterfield, of Person county, of Company H, was Colonel Connally's second, and Lieutenant W. H. Townes, of Granville, of Company D, was Major Belo's. The challenges were accepted and Captain Terrell selected as weapons double barreled shotguns, loaded with buckshot, and Captain Cousins selected the Mississippi rifle at forty paces. According to appointment, the parties next day met in a large field in the neighborhood, in one part of which were Colonel Connally and Captain Terrell and their friends. In another part were Major Belo and Captain Cousins and their friends. As soon as Major Belo and Captain Cousins came to their place of meeting, they took the positions assigned to them by the seconds, and at the command, fired their first shot. Major Belo's shot passed through Captain Cousins' hat, and Captain Cousins' first shot entirely missed Major Belo. Captain Cousins' second shot passed through the coat of Major Belo just above the shoulder and Major Belo's second fire missed Captain Cousins. In the meantime, in the other part of the field, the friends of Colonel Connally and Captain Terrell were engaged in an effort to make an honorable settlement of the affair, and Captain Terrell, who was a gallant officer and true gentleman, became satisfied that he had been mistaken in the report which he had made and which had been the cause of offence, and he withdrew the same, which



action prevented any further hostilities between him and Colonel Connally, and came just in time to prevent the exchange of a third shot between Major Belo and Captain Cousins.

## SUFFOLK, VA.

On the night of 30 April Davis' Brigade was in the front of the town of Suffolk, which was occupied by the Federals, and around which the Union forces were stationed behind formidable intrenchments. About 9 o'clock that night Major Belo was sent with four companies of the regiment to relieve the pickets in the rifle pits to our front, with instructions to hold the position in case there should be an attack. The next day the Federal forces made several demonstrations in front of the rifle pits, and in the afternoon opened upon them with several pieces of artillery. Captain Mull, by command of Colonel Connally, took Company F to the support of the men in the rifle pits, and very gallantly did Captain Mull and his company do this, for they went through a severe artillery fire for nearly three quarters of a mile, and although they lost some of their best men, they never faltered. About the same time two Federal infantry regiments came outside their breastworks, and formed into line. Colonel Connally then ordered Major Belo to reinforce the men in the rifle pits with four other companies of the regiment. This was promptly accomplished under a very fierce fire and not without loss. The Fifty-fifth Regiment was the only regiment on the line that was armed with the old smooth-bore muskets. The others were armed with rifles. This must have been discovered by the enemy during the day, and was the cause of their selection of the part of the line occupied by that regiment for their attack. The two Federal regiments moved forward in splendid order for the attack. The Federal artillery ceased firing upon that part of the field. The soldiers of both armies on the right and left were watching with deep interest the movement. The attacking column had moved so near to our position, that the other troops were beginning to whisperingly inquire of each other what was the matter. But Major Belo knew that the effectiveness of the arms, which his men held, depended upon short range, and cool and clear-headed, as he



always was, he had ordered that not a shot be fired until he gave the command. The advancing column was now so near, that the features of the men's faces could be distinguished. Every one of the men in the rifle pits had his musket in position and his finger on the trigger, and at the word "fire" the sound of Major Belo's command, seemed to expand into one grand roll of musketry; for there had been the fire of five hundred muskets as if by one man. Not one had snapped fire and there was not a single belated shot. The shower of leaden hail was too much for human courage. The assaulting regiments fell back in confusion, with some loss. But they were quickly rallied by their officers, and returned to the attack. This time the fire by Major Belo's command was reserved until they had advanced several yards further than before, when again a deadly fire swept them back with greater loss.

Again and yet again they attempted to storm the picket force, but were repulsed each time, until finally abandoning their purpose, they retired from the field. The old smooth bore muskets in the hands of 500 brave North Carolina patriots had done their work. About this time Lieutenant-Colonel Smith came down to Major Belo with Colonel Connally's compliments to inquire if he needed other reinforcements. Major Belo returning his compliments to Colonel Connally, replied that he thought the battle was over. The Fifty-fifth Regiment had been but a short while in Davis' Brigade, and it was their first engagement since then, and the cordial words of commendation of the gallant behavior of the regiment expressed by the Mississippians was very gratifying to us. Thenceforward they were as jealous of and as quick to defend the honor of our regiment as we were ourselves. Some years after the war, Major Belo met an officer of one of the regiments engaged in this attack, and he informed Major Belo that the term of enlistment of the men of those two regiments was to expire the next day and they were to be mustered out of service, and that it was at their own request they were ordered to make the attack, but that it proved a very sad experience to them.



Shortly after this, Longstreet returned with his command to the Army of Northern Virginia, our brigade accompanying him. When the Fifty-fifth Regiment left the cars at Hamilton's crossing, near Fredericksburg, to take its place in its brigade in Heth's Division, A. P. Hill's Corps, of the Army of Northern Virginia, it was both in respect to its discipline and its appearance one of the finest regiments in the army. Colonel Connally was a fine tactician, and was without a superior as a disciplinarian. He was admirable on the field in his handling of his regiment. The time which had been spent in Eastern North Carolina had allowed the opportunity for the drilling of the regiment, and it had been faithfully attended to. The regimental band, composed of seventeen pieces, led by Professor Charles E. Jackey, educated at Heidelberg, was a very fine one. The men of the regiment were well clad, and the ranks of each company were full. It was well officered, and all had full confidence in its field officers, and no volunteer regiment, in the opinion of the writer, ever had three better field officers. They were all young men—erect and soldierly in their bearing, proud of their regiment and enthusiastic in their patriotism. Colonel Connally was about 26 years of age. Daring in spirit—with confidence in himself and his regiment and the pride of his troops. Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, the eldest, not yet 30 years of age, was from Granville county. He was an accomplished gentleman and had been a member of the "Granville Grays," Company D, Twelfth North Carolina Regiment. He was of commanding presence, and a prudent and efficient officer. Major A. H. Belo was a fine specimen of young Southern manhood, had seen service before as Captain of Company D, Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment, and was about the same age as Colonel Connally. Intrepid, but always cool and ever alert.

Changes had taken place in the company officers since the organization, and the following were the officers of the companies at that time:

COMPANY A—Captain, Albert E. Upchurch; Lieutenants, B. F. Briggs, T. J. Hadley, T. R. Bass.



COMPANY B—Captain, George Gilreath; Lieutenants, John T. Peden, Hiram L. Grier.

COMPANY C—Captain, Edward D. Dixon; Lieutenants, George J. Bethel, Philip R. Elam, Thomas D. Falls.

COMPANY D—Captain, Silas D. Randall; Lieutenants, Wm. H. Townes, Jas. H. Randall, Joseph B. Cabiness.

COMPANY E—Captain, Howell G. Whitehead; Lieutenants, James A. Hanrahan, Godfrey E. Taft, William S. Wilson.

COMPANY F—Captain, Peter M. Mull; Lieutenants, Joel J. Hoyle, A. H. A. Williams, Peter P. Mull.

COMPANY G—Captain, Walter A. Whitted; Lieutenants, Marcus C. Stevens, Charles R. Jones, Mordecai Lee.

COMPANY H—Captain, E. F. Satterfield; Lieutenants, N. W. Lillington, Benjamin H. Blount, W. N. Holt.

COMPANY I—Captain, W. H. Williams; Lieutenants, B. H. Winston, Charles M. Cooke.

COMPANY K—Captain, R. W. Thomas; Lieutenants, Wilkins Stovall, W. H. H. Cobb, R. McD. Royster.

The regiment, as it marched from the railroad depot to take its place in the line, with its bright arms gleaming in the sun of that beautiful day, with quick martial step, its company officers splendidly dressed, as if for a grand parade, its field officers mounted on fiery chargers, and its magnificent band playing first "Dixie," and then "Maryland, My Maryland"—presented one circumstance of war, that is, its pomp, and if not its most impressive, certainly its least horrible. Little did it occur to any of us that the aspect of this organization would be so completely and so unhappily changed within a few weeks.

#### GETTYSBURG.

The regiment crossed the Potomac with the Army of Northern Virginia in fine spirits, and when it reached Cashtown on the night of 29 June, it was in splendid condition. The regiment marched out of Cashtown early on the morning of 1 July, going down the Chambersburg Turnpike toward Gettysburg. We came in sight of the town about 9 o'clock a.m. The Union forces were on the ridge just outside of the



town and formed across the Turnpike to dispute our advance. Marye's battery was placed by General Heth on the south side of the turnpike and opened fire on the enemy. Davis' Brigade was immediately thrown into line of battle on the north of the road and ordered to advance. Archer's Brigade was formed on the south of the road and was ordered forward about the same time. There was a railroad which had been graded but not ironed, which ran nearly parallel with the turnpike and about one hundred yards from it. The Fifty-fifth Regiment was on the left of the brigade, and owing to the character of the ground was the first one to come into view of the enemy, and received the first fire in the battle. It was a volley fired by the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania Regiment, commanded by Colonel Hoffman, of Cutler's Brigade. Two men in the color guard of the regiment were wounded by this volley. The regiment immediately returned the fire and inflicted considerable loss upon the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania Regiment. The Eleventh Mississippi Regiment was on detail duty that morning, so only three regiments of our brigade, the Second and Forty-second Mississippi Regiments, and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina, were present. The regiments in our front were the Seventy-sixth New York, the Fifty-sixth Pennsylvania and the One Hundred and Forty-seventh New York of Cutler's Brigade. After the enemy's position became known by their first fire, our brigade charged them in magnificent style. The left of our regiment extended considerably beyond the right of the enemy's line—and at the proper time our left was wheeled to the right. The enemy fled from the field with great loss. From the beginning of this engagement it was hot work. While the regiment was advancing, Colonel Connally seized the battle flag and waving it aloft rushed out several paces in front of the regiment. This drew upon him and the color guard the fire of the enemy and he fell badly wounded in the arm and hip. His arm was afterwards amputated. Major Belo, who was near him at the time, rushed up and asked him if he was badly wounded. Colonel Connally replied: "Yes, but do not pay any attention to me; take the colors and keep ahead of the Mississippians." After the defeat of the forces in front



of us, the brigade swung around by the right wheel and formed on the railroad cut. About one-half of the Fifty-fifth Regiment being on the left extended beyond the cut on the embankment. In front of us there were then the Ninety-fifth and Eighty-fourth New York (known as the Fourteenth Brooklyn) Regiments, who had been supporting Hall's battery, and were the other two regiments of Cutler's Brigade, and the Sixth Wisconsin, of the Iron Brigade, which had been held in reserve, when the other regiments of that brigade were put in to meet Archer's advance. Just then the order was received to retire through the road-cut, and that the Fifty-fifth North Carolina cover the retreat of the brigade. The Federal Regiments in front of us threw themselves into line of battle by a well executed movement notwithstanding the heavy fire we were pouring into them, and as soon as their line of battle was formed, seeing a disposition on our part to retire, charged. They were held in check, as well as could be done, by the Fifty-fifth Regiment covering the retreat of the brigade; a part of the regiment was in the road-cut and at a great disadvantage. One of the Federal officers on the embankment, seeing Major Belo in the cut, threw his sword at him, saying: "Kill that officer, and that will end it." The sword missed Major Belo, but struck a man behind him. Major Belo directed one of the men to shoot the officer and this was done. This somewhat checked their charge, and we fell back to another position. The loss of the regiment was very great in killed and wounded, and a large number were captured in the road-cut. From that time until 3 o'clock in the afternoon we were not engaged. About that time Early came in with fresh troops from the left. We formed in line with them on their right and were hotly engaged in the battles of that afternoon, driving the enemy before us and capturing a number of prisoners. At sundown we were in the edge of Gettysburg, and the regiment was placed behind the railroad embankment just in front of the Seminary. In the afternoon Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, while the regiment was waiting in reserve, walked towards the right to reconnoitre and was mortally wounded and died that night. Major Belo was also severely wounded in the leg just as the battle closed.





The three men who went farthest in the Pettigrew-Pickett charge at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

1. E. Fletcher Satterfield, Captain, Co. H. Killed at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.
2. T. D. Falls. Promoted to 2d Lieut., Co. C, Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.
3. J. A. Whitley. Promoted to Sergeant, Co. F, Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.



that evening. Davis' Brigade, during the night, was moved from its position on the railroad cut near the Seminary to a piece of woods across Willoughby Run, west of the mineral springs, and there rested during the 2d. On the night of the 2d it was moved to its position on the Confederate line known as Seminary Ridge, on the right center, and stationed in McMillan's woods. Our division (Heth's) on the left of Longstreet, and Davis' Brigade the left centre of the division. General Heth had been wounded on the 1st and General Pettigrew was in command of the division. General Pickett's Division of Longstreet's Corps was on the right of Heth's Division, and occupied a position just in the edge of Spangler's woods.

#### FARTHEST AT GETTYSBURG.

It was from these positions that we moved out to that last fatal charge, on the afternoon of 3 July. Heth's Division was not supporting Longstreet, as has been repeatedly published, but was on line with his troops. Our regiment had suffered so greatly on the 1st that in this charge it was commanded by Captain Gilreath, and some of the companies were commanded by non-commissioned officers. But the men came up bravely to the measure of their duty, and the regiment went as far as any other on that fatal charge, and we have good proof of the claim that a portion of the regiment led by Captain Satterfield, who was killed at this time, reached a point near the Benner barn, which was *more advanced than that attained by any other of the assaulting columns.* Lieutenant T. D. Falls, of Company C, residing at Fallstown, Cleveland county, and Sergeant Augustus Whitley, of Company E, residing at Everitt's, in Martin county, who were with Captain Satterfield, have recently visited the battlefield, and have made affidavit as to the point reached by them. This evidence has been corroborated from other sources and the place has been marked by the United States commission, and the map herewith copied from the United States official survey of this historic field will show the position attained by these men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment, in relation to other known objects on the battlefield such as the



Benner barn and the Bronze Book which marks the high-water mark of the struggle for Southern independence. The measurements for the map were made by the late Colonel Batchelder, of the United States Commission, and by Colonel E. W. Cope, United States engineer, for this field. This map shows that those killed *farthest to the front* belonged to the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment.

The forces engaged in this last charge which settled, not only the result of the battle of Gettysburg, but the fate of the Confederacy, were as follows:

Longstreet's Corps, composed of:

1. *Pickett's Division*—*Kemper's Brigade*, First, Third, Seventh, Eleventh and Twenty-fourth Virginia Regiments; *Garnett's Brigade*, Eighth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-eighth and Fifty-sixth Virginia Regiments, supported by *Armistead's Brigade*, Ninth, Fourteenth, Thirty-eighth, Fifty-third and Fifty-seventh Virginia Regiments in the second line.

2. *Heth's Division*, commanded by Brigadier-General Pettigrew; *Archer's Brigade*, commanded by Colonel Fry, Thirteenth Alabama Regiment, Fifth Alabama Battalion, and the First, Seventh and Fourteenth Tennessee Regiments; *Pettigrew's Brigade*, commanded by Colonel Marshall, Eleventh, Twenty-sixth, Forty-seventh and Fifty-second North Carolina Regiments; *Davis' Brigade*, Second, Eleventh and Forty-second Mississippi Regiments and the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment; *Brockenborough's Brigade*, Fortieth, Forty-seventh and Fifty-fifth Virginia Regiments, and Twenty-second Virginia Battalion.

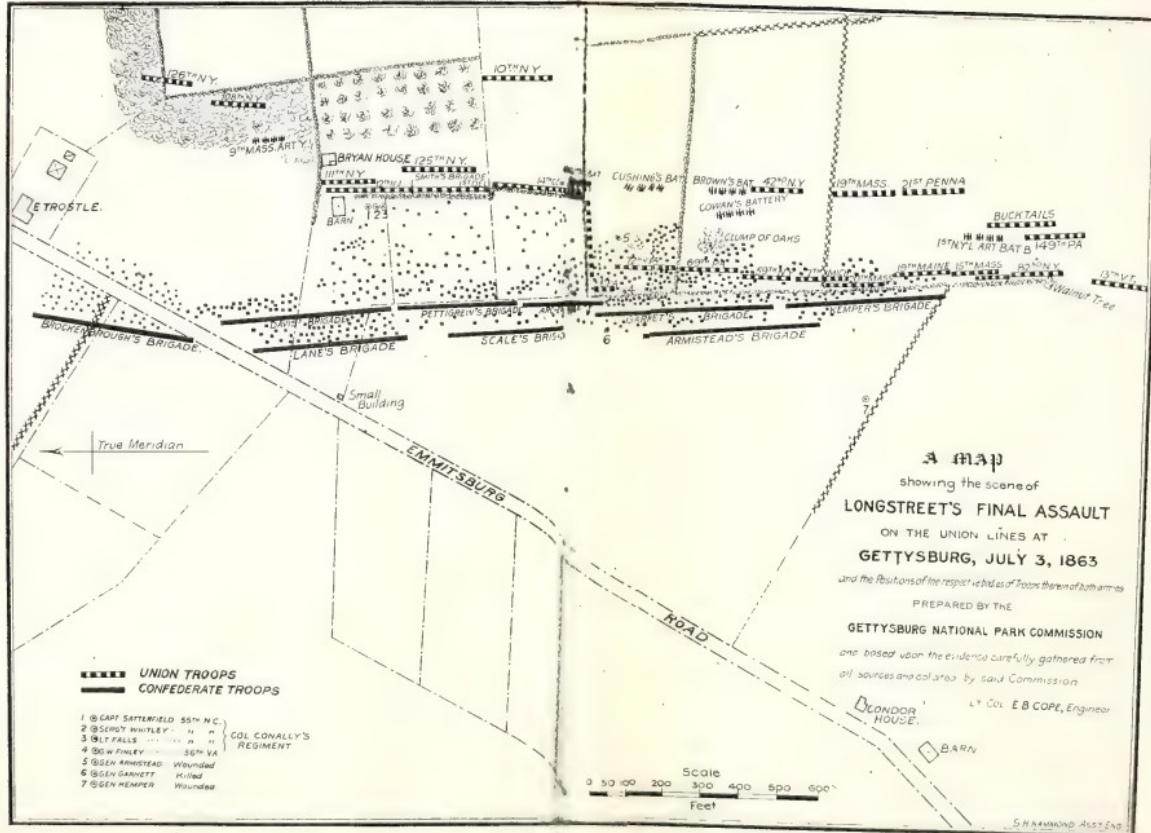
3. One-half of General Pender's Division, to-wit.: *Scales' Brigade*, commanded by Colonel Lowrance, Thirteenth, Sixteenth, Twenty-second, Thirty-fourth and Thirty-eighth North Carolina Regiments, and *Lane's Brigade*, Seventh, Eighteenth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-third and Thirty-seventh North Carolina Regiments.

So there were eighteen regiments and one battalion from Virginia, fifteen regiments from North Carolina, three regiments from Mississippi, three regiments from Tennessee,











and one regiment and one battalion from Alabama, in the assaulting columns.

The contention between Pickett's division and Heth's Division, the latter commanded then by Pettigrew, has doubtless arisen from the following: The portion of the enemy's forces just in front of Pickett's Division was behind a low rock wall which terminated at a point opposite Pickett's left. About eighty yards to the rear of this point there was another stone wall which commenced there and ran along by Benner barn towards the cemetery, and the enemy, instead of continuing his line to his right from the termination of the first wall, and through the field, dropped eighty yards to the second wall, and continued his line behind that. So to have reached the enemy in Pettigrew's front, his troops must have marched eighty yards beyond a continuation of their line from the point where Pickett reached the enemy in his front. Some of Pickett's men passed over the first line of the enemy and a few of them reached a point some forty yards in the rear of the line and near the Federal battery.

Some of the Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment reached a point within nine yards of the rock wall in front of them. That was seventy-three yards beyond a continuation of the line of the first wall, and allowing two yards for the thickness of the first wall, and adding to that the forty yards beyond the rock wall to the point reached by some of Pickett's men, and running a line parallel with the first wall so as to strike the most advanced point reached by Pickett's men, and continuing beyond to the most advanced point reached by the men of the Fifty-fifth Regiment, it will be found that the latter point is thirty-one yards in advance of that line.

The Fifty-fifth Regiment was a part of the rear guard on the retreat, and in the attack made upon them at Falling Waters, they lost several killed and wounded. The loss of the regiment at Gettysburg amounted to 64 killed and 172 wounded, including the few casualties at Falling Waters and the number of captured, about 200, added to these made an aggregate of more than one-half the number of men in the regiment. All of the field officers and all of the Captains



were either killed, wounded or captured. Lieutenant M. C. Stevens, of Company G, was the ranking officer, and commanded the regiment on the retreat until it reached Falling Waters, when Captain Whitted had sufficiently recovered from his wound to take command. Captain R. W. Thomas, of Company K, however, returned to the regiment soon after we went into camp on the Rapidan, and commanded the regiment with great acceptability until Lieutenant-Colonel Belo's return the following winter. In the official report of his division at Gettysburg, made by General Heth, and found in the records published by the United States Government, Colonel Connally, Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Belo are particularly mentioned for gallant and meritorious conduct, but Col. Connally was so severely wounded that he was never able again to command the regiment. This was a great loss, for he was not only brave and loyal in his support of the Southern cause, but his sentiments and conduct were so chivalric, that he impressed all the men and officers of the regiment with his own lofty ideals, and Lieutenant-Colonel Smith was dead. The very soul of honor, he was older and less impetuous than Colonel Connally, but gentle and refined as a woman; he was conscientious and painstaking in the discharge of every duty and enforced among the men the same rigid rule of attention to duty he prescribed for himself. No hasty utterance and no unclean word ever escaped his lips, and by his daily life, he taught us what a beautiful thing it is to be a Christian gentleman.

Colonel Connally was left in a house near the battlefield and fell into the hands of the enemy. His left arm was amputated and from that and the wound in his hip it was thought for a long while he would die. His brave spirit pulled him through. As a lawyer and in politics he attained high position in Galveston, Texas, and Richmond, Va., but after several years he became an eloquent preacher of the Gospel and now resides at Asheville, N. C.

The regiment, after its return to the line of the Rapidan, was engaged in drilling and picketing at the fords until October, when it went with the Army of Northern Virginia to Manassas and became engaged in the battle of Bristoe Sta-



tion. The position of the regiment in that battle was on the left of the brigade, which was just to the right of Cooke's Brigade. A piece of forest was in front and consequently our loss was slight as compared to the loss of some of the regiments of Cooke's Brigade. The regiment was also with the army at Mine Run, and was a part of a line that was formed for the charge upon the enemy's left flank in the early morning, when it was discovered after throwing out a skirmish line that General Meade, during the night, had withdrawn his forces.

Colonel Belo returned to the command of the regiment late in January, 1864, but he had not entirely recovered from his wound received at Gettysburg. It was made on the leg by the fragment of a shell, and in his determination not to be captured, he fell back with the army from Gettysburg. A portion of the time he was in such danger of capture that he exposed himself greatly, and by the time he reached Winchester the condition of the wound was so serious that for several days it was feared that amputation would be necessary.

Soon after his return to the regiment, our brigade, one severely cold night, was ordered out of camp and marched to Gordonsville. As soon as it reached that point, the Fifty-fifth Regiment was sent out to picket the roads on the south. The rain was falling and sleetting and the clothing on the men was frozen. The next day the regiment with the brigade was marched some distance to the southwest and bivouacked for the night with orders to have very few fires, the purpose being to intercept a raiding detachment of the Federal army, but the detachment went around us, and after enduring the intensest suffering that night, the regiment returned to camp.

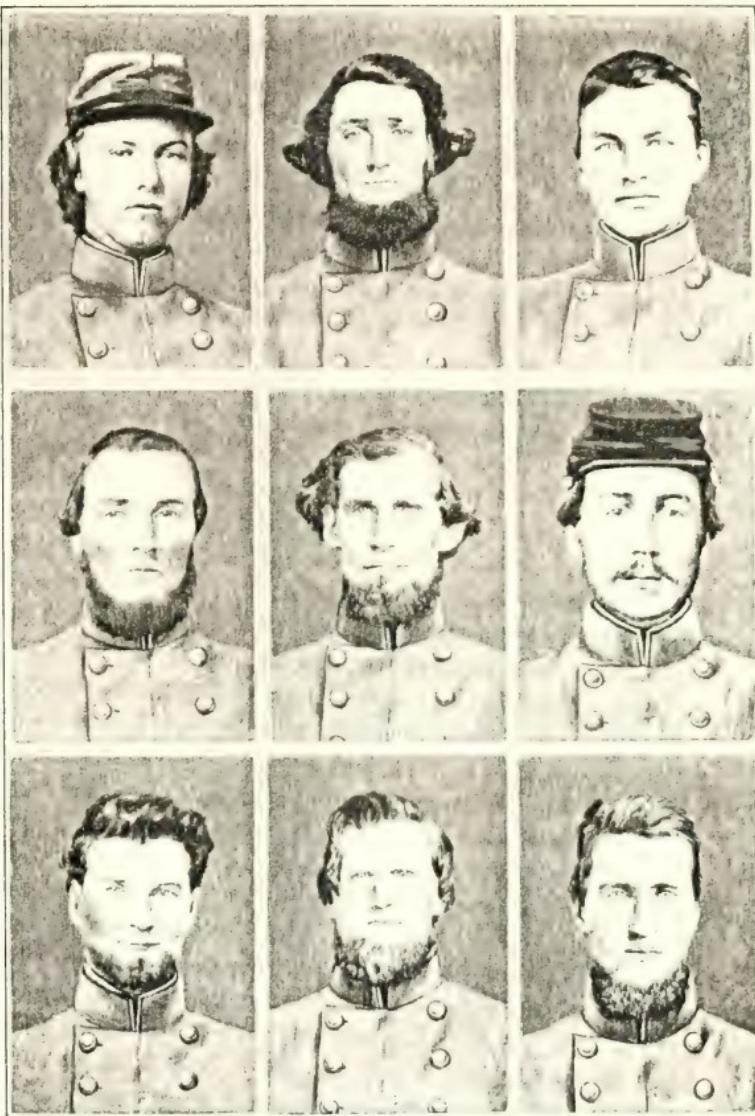
#### THE WILDERNESS.

On 4 May, 1864, the regiment, Colonel Belo, now recovered of his wounds, commanding, left its camp near Orange Court House, and commenced its march to the Wilderness. It was going down the Plank road towards Fredericksburg about 2:30 o'clock in the afternoon of the 5th, when it was discovered that the enemy were advancing up the road. Heth's Division was formed into line of battle, not for the



purpose of advancing or bringing on an engagement, but as General Lee said to A. P. Hill, to hold the enemy in check until Longstreet's Corps and Anderson's Division of A. P. Hill's Corps should come up. Davis' Brigade was formed on the left of the road; our regiment was the right centre of the brigade and on the crest of a small hill or ridge. It was in a dense forest of small trees; the hill in our front sloped gradually to a depression or valley which was a few yards wide, and then there was a gradual incline on the opposite side until it reached a point of about the same altitude as that occupied by us, about 100 yards from our line. We had 340 men, including non-commissioned officers, in our regiment. About 3:30 o'clock, our skirmish line was driven in and the first line of the Federal forces charged, but they got no further than the crest of the hill in front of us, and were repulsed with great loss; from then until sunset, they charged us with seven successive lines of battle, but we repulsed every one of them. Our line never wavered. The officers and men of the regiment realized that the safety of the army depended upon our holding the enemy in check until the forces left behind could come up, and there was a fixed determination to do it, or to die. About 6 o'clock the enemy were pressing us so heavily with their successive lines of fresh troops it was thought that they would annihilate us before nightfall, and a conference of the general officers on the field determined that it would probably become necessary as a last resort, to make a vigorous and impetuous charge upon them with the hope that we might be able to drive them back. Colonel Belo, who was sitting just in the rear of the regiment by the side of a little poplar tree, sent his orderly to the line to the writer of this sketch (C. M. Cooke), instructing him to report to him immediately. I went at once. He then stated to me that the necessity of a charge seemed apparent and that the order for making it would probably soon be given, and he desired that I return to the line and notify the men that they might be prepared for it, and take the command of my own company and also C, which was the flag company, the commanding officer of which had a few moments before been severely wounded, and to see that the flag was kept well to the front,





#### FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT

1. John P. Cannady, Sergeant, Co. K.
2. Wm. Ellis Royster, Corporal, Co. K.
3. Henry C. Adecock, Musician, Co. K.
4. John H. Williams, Private, Co. K.  
(Killed near Petersburg, Oct., 1864.)
5. Rhodes Frazier, Private, Co. K.
6. Albert Eaks, Private, Co. K.
7. John H. Dean, Private, Co. K. (Killed at the Wilderness.)
8. James C. Knott, Co. K. (Killed at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863.)
9. James W. Adecock, Private, Co. K.



and to make the charge with all the dash that was possible. I went back to the line and gave the men the information. They expressed hope that it might not be necessary to make the charge, but there was no disposition to shirk the duty if it had been imposed. But the order for the charge was not given, and about sunset the firing had nearly ceased in our front, and Thomas' Georgia Brigade of Wilcox's Division came in and relieved us, and we were sent to the right of the road where we rested for the night. We had held the enemy in check. Not one yard of our line had given away one foot during the three hours the fearful onslaughts had been made upon us, but of the 340 of the regiment, 34 lay dead on the line where we fought and 167 were wounded. The Sergeant of the ambulance corps counted the next day 157 dead Federal soldiers in front of our regiment.

On 6 May, early in the morning before sunrise, the Federal forces opened the battle on our left before Davis' Brigade was in line, and while our arms were yet stacked, and forced the troops to the left of us, and our brigade along with them, back upon and along the road. These were fresh troops which Gen. Grant had moved into position during the night, and they were attacking the troops of A. P. Hill's Corps, which had been fearfully depleted by the engagements of the day before. But just at this time Longstreet's Corps came up and Kershaw's Division relieved our division. Our regiment was not engaged further during the Wilderness fight. Our brigade composed part of the rear guard of the army on its march from the Wilderness to Spottsylvania, and consequently, the regiment did not reach Spottsylvania until 9 May. We had some skirmishes along the march—nothing serious. On the afternoon of 10 May our regiment was part of the force which made an attack upon the enemy's right near Talley's mill. We charged and captured a piece of artillery and drove the enemy across the Mattapony. The regiment upon this occasion behaved with great gallantry, charging for half a mile up the hillside through an old field. Though subjected during this charge to a fire from both artillery and small arms, the loss was not very great; we were charging up hill and the



fire of the enemy went over our heads. On this charge three color bearers were shot down in succession before we captured the artillery. The regiment was engaged in the battle of the 12th at Spottsylvania, but as we were behind temporary breastworks, and some distance to the right from the point where Grant broke the Confederate lines, its losses on that day were comparatively small.

#### SECOND COLD HARBOR.

At the second battle of Cold Harbor the regiment reached the field late in the afternoon of 2 June. The Federal troops were attempting to occupy an advanced position on our left for the battle of the next day. Davis' Brigade was put in to prevent this, and charged them just about sunset. We checked the advance of the enemy, but it was a fearful charge. The ground was unfavorable on account of a thick under-growth and the loss was considerable. Colonel Belo was seriously wounded in this charge and was never able afterwards to take command of the regiment. We were engaged in the battle all the next day, but we were protected by temporary breastworks, and we did not suffer as heavily as some of the regiments, but the punishment we inflicted upon the enemy was fearful.

Colonel Belo's wound was in the arm, half way between the elbow and shoulder joint; the bone was shattered and the operation of re-section was performed. The loss to the regiment was irreparable. He had been with the regiment in all its hard-fought battles, and had the absolute confidence of every man in the regiment. He was cool and intrepid. He never lost his head in the midst of the fiercest conflict, nor failed to discover and seize the advantage of a position. He had a genius for organization, and appreciated every detail that contributed to the effectiveness or character of a military organization. He was in North Carolina at the time of General Lee's surrender. He went to General Beauregard and was assigned by him to the command of a force. He was detached from the main body of General Johnston's army, and when the latter surrendered, instead of surrendering with it, he and Captain Lillington, of Company H, who was with him



at the time, rode off to join the army of General Kirby Smith, across the Mississippi. But before he reached that army it had surrendered and he went to Galveston and made that place his home. He became the editor of the *Galveston News* and acquired both fame and wealth. He died at Asheville, N. C., a few months ago and was buried at Salem, N. C., his old home.

The regiment after this time was commanded at various times by Captain P. M. Mull, of Company F; Captain R. W. Thomas, of Company K; Captain W. A. Whitted, of Company G; Captain B. F. Briggs, of Company A; Captain N. W. Lillington, of Company H; and Captain John T. Peden, of Company B; but Captain Whitted was in command the greater part of the time.

The regiment, after Cold Harbor, spent about a month on the north side of the James river, near Malvern Hill, and during that time had an engagement with the enemy near White Oak Swamp, in which the Federals were repulsed, and the regiment lost several men. We were afterwards transferred to the lines southeast of Petersburg, and the point occupied by the Fifty-fifth Regiment was to the right of the point where the mine was sprung on 30 July. The part of the line occupied by our regiment was so near to that of the enemy that sharpshooting was kept up constantly between the lines with casualties of almost daily occurrence. The enemy had a number of mortar guns planted just in rear of their lines, from which shells were discharged almost constantly night and day. As some measure of protection, the men and officers of the regiment dug holes in the side of the hill, upon which the line of our regiment was formed. The headquarters of the regiment was a hole six by nine feet square, thus made in the side of the hill with an opening to the rear, and it was in this place that the writer, Adjutant of the regiment, received all orders from superior officers, received and made all reports and all regimental orders, and there the commanding officer and himself slept at night.

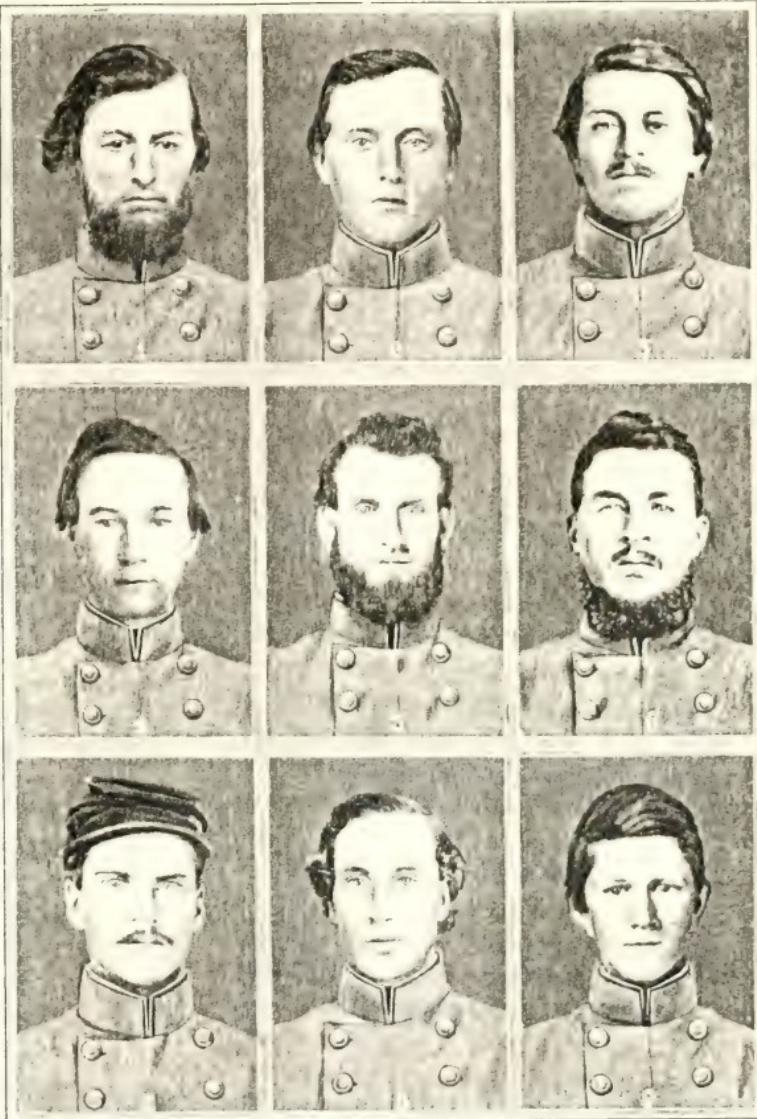
#### THE CRATER.

On the morning of 29 July, the Federal commander made



a feint by advancing a part of his forces on the north side of James river, near Malvern Hill, towards Richmond. This was done in order to cover his real purpose of springing the mine near Petersburg, and to weaken opposition at that point by inducing us to withdraw our troops towards Richmond. The Fifty-fifth Regiment, with its brigade, was a part of the forces which were moved rapidly across the country, crossing the James river near Drewry's Bluff, to check the enemy's advance. We reached a point in front of the enemy not far from Malvern Hill, on the night of the 29th, and were placed in line to reinforce troops already there, but the enemy made no attempt to advance further. At a very early hour the next morning, we were awakened by the reverberation of a great sound which seemed to have been produced a long way off, and at the same time there was a trembling of the earth, such as that caused by an earthquake. A few hours afterwards a courier came with orders directing us to return at once to the lines near Petersburg. We commenced to march immediately and beneath a scorching sun; we went at almost a double-quick, and in crossing the large, shadeless fields in the low-lands of the James river, a number of men were overcome by the heat, but we reached Petersburg on the night of the 30th, and found that the enemy had been driven back from the advanced position which they had gained, and for a while occupied after the springing of the mine. Early next morning, there was a truce for several hours to bury the dead between the lines, and our line was formed then just as it was before, except there was a bend around the excavation made by the explosion of the mine. The position of our regiment was some yards to the south of the excavation. The Fifteenth regiment of Cooke's Brigade was just in the rear of it. The springing of the mine was a complete surprise to us, and both officers and men were for several weeks thereafter anxiously expecting a repetition of the act, and were nervous over it. At one time or another, every member of the regiment was sure that he heard the sound of the sappers and the miners digging away down in the ground beneath him. There was scarcely a night that some one of the regiment would not come out of his hole and crawl to the regimental





FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT.

- |                                                                             |                                                                                                                                    |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Geo. W. Currin, Private, Co. K.<br>(Killed at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863.) | 6. Alexander Adecock, Private, Co. K.                                                                                              |
| 2. James K. Wilkerson, Private, Co. K.                                      | 7. Robert B. Elton, Private, Co. K<br>(Wounded seven times at Gettysburg, July 1, 1863. Taken prisoner and died at Point Lookout.) |
| 3. Charles Stovall, Private, Co. K<br>(Killed at Gettysburg.)               | 8. John F. Ensign, Private, Co. K                                                                                                  |
| 4. Marion H. Hester, Private, Co. K.                                        | 9. Benjamin P. Tharp, Private, Co. K                                                                                               |
| 5. Thomas B. Daniel, Private, Co. K.                                        |                                                                                                                                    |



headquarters and whisper the announcement that he could plainly hear the sound of the digging in the ground way below him. The suggestion of the adjutant or commanding officer that it was mere imagination would never avail, and so it would often happen that a good part of the night was spent by those officers in going around and testing the accuracy of these reports; and in assuring the men that there was no real sound, but only that of imagination. It was customary to relieve the regiment about one day in every ten from the terrible strain of this service in the trenches, and to take them to some point in the rear where there was shade, and allow them to bathe themselves and to wash their clothing.

#### DAVIS' FARM.

The 18 August was one of those days off with Davis' Brigade. About one-third of the men had been detailed that morning and sent to work on the breastworks. The balance of the brigade about the middle of the afternoon, were resting about a mile in the rear of the line, when we were ordered to move rapidly to the right some two or three miles, to meet the enemy, who, passing around the extreme right of our infantry line, had crossed the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad at Davis' farm. As soon as we came in sight of the enemy, we were formed in line of battle and ordered to charge. The charge was made with the Fifty-fifth Regiment in the center of the brigade. The charge was made with dash and spirit, at double-quick, for half a mile, and through a corn field a greater part of the way, under a fierce fire of both artillery and infantry. After passing through the corn field, we came to a pine forest of scattering growth. We drove the first line of the enemy through this, and then came to a forest from which the large trees had been mainly cut, and which was very thick with small growth and under-brush. It was so dense that the enemy, who were only about 75 or 100 yards from us, behind some temporary breastworks, could not be seen. We stopped a moment and reformed our line and then continued the charge, but in the difficulty to our advance presented by the thick undergrowth and the brush from the large trees which had been felled, we had not gone more



than forty yards before we were repulsed with great loss. It was then about twilight, and the volley the enemy poured into our ranks appeared to be a veritable sheet of flame. The losses of our regiment there were relatively greater than in any other battle in which it participated. There was scarcely an officer or man who did not bear either in his body or clothing the marks of the terrible conflict. Of the 130 men who went into the charge, at least one-half were either killed or wounded. Lieutenant J. J. Hoyle, of Company F, was killed while gallantly leading his company; he was ever a faithful and conscientious officer; Lieutenant W. H. Townes, of Granville county, as brave an officer as ever drew a sword, commanding Company D, was mortally wounded. Of the thirteen men of Company I present, three were killed and all the others were wounded. After the repulse, we fell back some fifty yards waiting and expecting that the enemy would advance, but this he failed to do, and during the night we were moved further to the rear. Captain Whitted commanded the regiment in this engagement. The next afternoon the men detailed the day before having come in, our regiment had nearly as many men in ranks as it had the day before, and Captain B. F. Briggs, of Company A, was in command. Our line was lengthened by fresh troops, and late in the afternoon another attempt was made to dislodge the enemy from his position, our regiment charging over the same ground as on the day before, and it was repulsed at just about the same point, and with very nearly as great losses. We returned to the trenches near Petersburg and there remained until the engagement on 1 October on the right of our line, in which General Heth's Division was engaged with an infantry division of the Federal forces and some of their cavalry, and in which General Archer was mortally wounded. The losses of the Fifty-fifth Regiment in this engagement were slight. In the battle of Hatcher's Run or Burgess' Mill, on 27 October, the right of our brigade rested on Hatcher's Run. One of the Mississippi Regiments was on the right, and our regiment was in the centre. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon, the enemy had broken through our lines on the south side of Hatcher's Run and the first we



knew of it they had crossed the run and were firing into our rear. General Heth and General Davis, who were just in the rear of our regiment at the time, directed Colonel Stone, of the Second Mississippi, since Governor of the State of Mississippi, to wheel the three right regiments of the brigade perpendicular to our line, and to drive the enemy back across the run. The order was promptly executed, and the Fifty-fifth Regiment, being the third regiment from the right, was next to the angle, and was subjected, therefore, to enfilading fire from the main army of the enemy, and to a front fire from the flanking force. The charge was made with great desperation and the enemy were driven in great disorder and confusion across the run, and our lines on the south side were re-established. The losses of the regiment were serious. Lieutenant M. C. Stevens, who, up to this time, had escaped unhurt, rashly exposed himself in this exigency and was killed.

#### BELFIELD.

About 1 December, 1864, when the enemy with considerable force of both cavalry and infantry, cut the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad, near Jaratt's Station, and threatened the base of our supplies at Belfield, our regiment was a part of the force that was sent to attack and drive him back. We came upon the enemy near Jarratt's station, and drove in his skirmish line. We formed in line of battle and charged through a piece of pine forest that was covered with sleet; the long icicles hung from every limb, and the trees were so weighted that many of the limbs touched the ground. It was fearfully cold and the men suffered terribly, for we were neither well shod, nor warmly clad. A few shots were fired into our column as we were marching through the forest, but when we emerged from it into an open field near the railroad, the enemy had fled. This movement was noted for the great suffering of the men on account of the severe weather. The snow and sleet fell upon us the second night after we left camp.

On 6 February, 1865, the regiment in the meantime having been transferred to Cooke's Brigade, participated in the fight of Cooke's, Johnson's and Pegram's Brigades with some of the Federal forces, in the battle fought between the



lines north of Hatcher's Run. The casualties of the regiment were small. On 24 March the regiment, with its brigade was moved to the left and put into position to support General Gordon's attack the next morning, on the forts and line of the enemy east of Petersburg. When the attacking forces moved over the intrenchments for the charge, we moved into their places, but as the attack was a failure we were not put in action; when we returned to our former position we found that the enemy had just attacked and captured the men we had left in the rifle pits in the morning. They made a movement as if they were going to charge our main line, but after a few shots from us they changed their purpose.

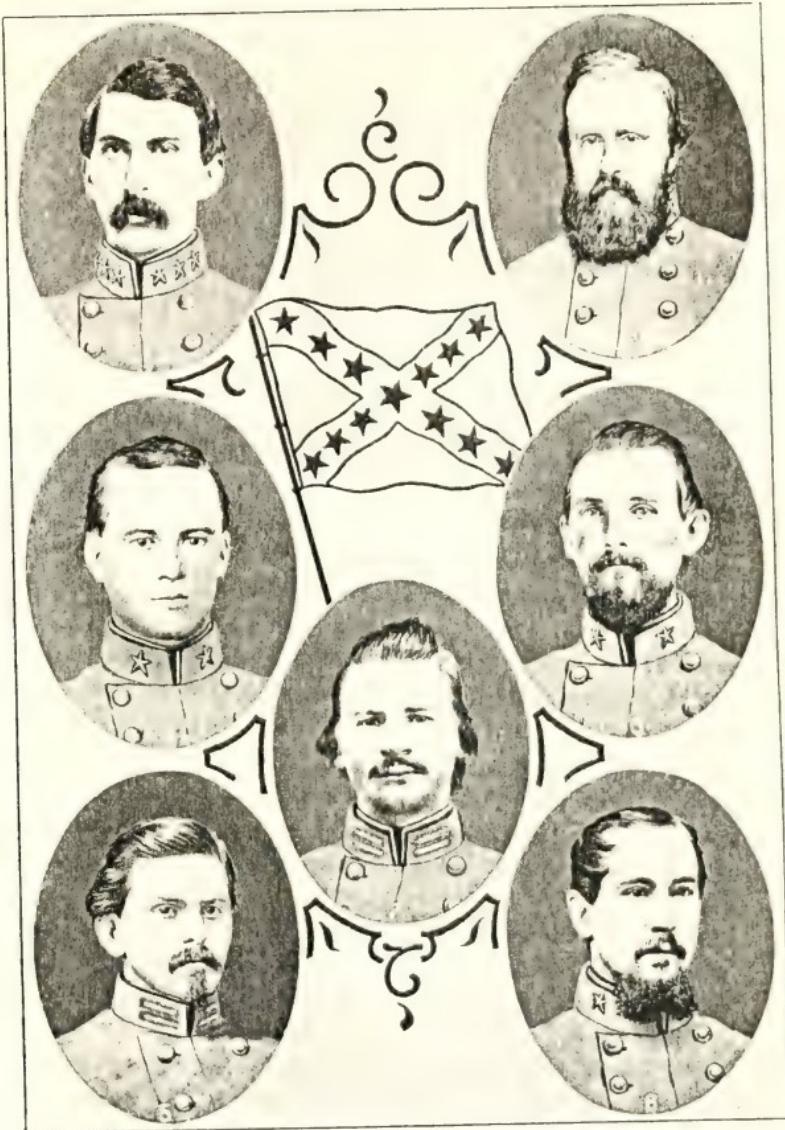
#### LINES BROKEN.

When the general attack was made upon the right of our line on 31 March, we occupied a position a few hundred yards north of Hatcher's Run. In the battle that day, the writer of this sketch was seriously wounded. The regiment was engaged with its brigade in the stubborn resistance that was made and continued until the morning of 2 April to prevent the enemy from turning our flank. The lines around Petersburg being broken that day, the glorious remnant of the unconquered Fifty-fifth North Carolina Regiment shared in the vicissitudes of the heroic and historic retreat which ended in the surrender at Appomattox. The handful of the regiment on 9 April, 1865, was commanded by Captain W. A. Whitted.

C. M. COOKE.

LOUISBURG, N. C.,  
9 April, 1901.





FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. Paul F. Faision, Colonel.
2. G. G. Luke, Lieut.-Colonel.
3. H. F. Schenck, Major.
4. John W. Graham, Major.
5. E. J. Hale, Adjutant.
6. Moses John de Rosset, Surgeon.
7. James M. Clark, Ensign.



## FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

By ROBERT D. GRAHAM, CAPTAIN COMPANY D.

---

This regiment was composed of ten companies which assembled at the camp of instruction, known as Camp Mangum, located on the North Carolina railroad, four miles west of Raleigh, in the Spring and Summer of 1862.

COMPANY A—*Camden County, mainly*—As twelve months' volunteers, they had formed a part of the detachment captured at Hatteras 29 August, 1861, and had recently been exchanged. Its officers were successively as follows: G. Gratiott Luke, Captain, April, 1861, elected Lieutenant-Colonel 31 July, 1862; Noah H. Hughes, Captain, 1 August, 1862, from First Lieutenant 17 April, 1862, died 1 June, 1864; Thomas P. Savilles, Captain, 1 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant, 17 April, 1862; Henry W. Lane, First Lieutenant, 1 August, 1862, transferred from Company G, killed 12 June, 1864; Edward P. Hanks, First Lieutenant, 12 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 17 April, 1862; Caleb L. Grandy, Second Lieutenant, 1 June, 1864; Wm. H. Seymour, Second Lieutenant, 12 June, 1864; Caleb P. Walston, First Sergeant, became Captain in the Sixty-eighth Regiment.

COMPANY B—*Cumberland County*—This company came in under Frank N. Roberts. A good portion of this command was from the old *ante bellum* organization known as the Lafayette Light Infantry, and with their present Captain had formed a part of the First North Carolina Volunteers known as the "Bethel" Regiment, who were six months' volunteers, and who had been in the battle of Bethel 10 June, 1861. Its officers in succession were: Francis N. Roberts, Captain, 30 September, 1861 (who had been a Lieutenant in the Bethel Regiment), killed 18 June, 1864; Alexander R. Carver, Captain, 18 June, 1864, for gallant service from See-



ond Lieutenant, 1 May, 1864, served in Bethel Regiment, was retired 22 February, 1865, being disabled by wounds; William T. Taylor, Captain, 22 February, 1865, from Sergeant-Major, served in Bethel Regiment; R. W. Thornton, First Lieutenant, April 1862, captured 22 May, 1863; Daniel M. McDonald, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, captured at Hatteras 29 August, 1861; Captain White being then tenant, 1 April, 1862, killed 20 April, 1864, at Plymouth; James A. King, Second Lieutenant, 1 July, 1864, killed 21 August, 1864, at the Davis House, near Petersburg.

COMPANY C—*Pasquotank County*—Alexander P. White, Captain, April, 1862; Matthew W. Fatherly, First Lieutenant, 26 March, 1862; John B. Lyon, Second Lieutenant, 23 April, 1862, resigned, and appointed Captain in the Sixty-eighth Regiment; William P. Bray, Second Lieutenant, 23 April, 1862; Edward S. Badger, Second Lieutenant, 1 March, 1864. The bulk of Company C, under original enlistments, had been among the earliest volunteers and captured at Hatters 29 August, 1861; Captain White being then Lieutenant in the Independent Grays, commanded by Captain Thomas Cahoon.

COMPANY D—*Orange County*—This company was brought in by John W. Graham, who had entered the service as Second Lieutenant 20 April, 1861, in the Orange Guards, which with the Guilford Grays, (both of them *ante bellum* volunteer companies,) had been ordered to coast defence duty at Fort Macon. In June, 1861, he was appointed Aide-de-Camp to General R. C. Gatlin, commanding the Department of Eastern North Carolina, and received a commission as First Lieutenant in the Eighth Regiment North Carolina State Troops. The company was officered as follows: John W. Graham, Captain, April, 1862, from Aide-de-Camp, promoted to Major 1 September, 1863; Robert D. Graham, Captain, 1 September, 1863, from First Lieutenant 22 May, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 17 May, 1862, from private. David S. Ray, First Lieutenant, 17 May, 1862, from private, killed 22 May, 1863; Joseph B. Coggins, First Lieutenant, 1 September, 1863, from Sergeant, wounded 17 June, 1864, and died therefrom in Petersburg hospital 16 September,



1864; Robert T. Faucett, First Lieutenant, by promotion and transfer from Second Lieutenant in Company H 18 September, 1864, from First Sergeant of Company D; Charles R. Wilson, Second Lieutenant, 17 May, 1862, from private; William Turner, Second Lieutenant, 25 July, 1863, from Sergeant.

C O M P A N Y E—*Northampton County, mainly*—Jos. G. Lockhart, Captain, April 1862, resigned 11 October, 1864; King J. Rhodes, Captain, 11 October, 1864, from First Lieutenant 4 May, 1863, and Second Lieutenant February, 1863 (served in Bethel Regiment); Jarvis B. Lutterloh, First Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, killed 28 April, 1863 (had served in the Bethel Regiment); John Jacobs, First Lieutenant, 11 October, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 4 May, 1863; George B. Barnes, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, promoted to Assistant Quartermaster 1 August, 1862, with rank of Captain; Wm. S. Moody, Second Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, resigned 1 February, 1863; Robert B. Peebles, Second Lieutenant, 5 August, 1862, from First Sergeant, promoted and transferred to Adjutant Thirty-fifth North Carolina Regiment, later A. A. G. Ransom's Brigade; Alex. B. McDougald, Second Lieutenant, 9 June, 1863; Cornelius Spivey, Second Lieutenant, 18 September, 1863, killed 17 June, 1864; Wm. J. Thomas, Second Lieutenant, 1 November, 1864.

C O M P A N Y F—*Cleveland County, mainly*—Henry F. Schenk, Captain, April, 1862, Major 31 July, 1862, retired 1 September, 1863; Benjamin F. Grigg, Captain, 5 August, 1862 (Lincoln county,) from Lieutenant 10 May, 1862, (had been First Sergeant in the Bethel Regiment); V. J. Palmer, First Lieutenant 10 May, 1862 (Rutherford county); John R. Williams, Second Lieutenant, 10 May, 1862, killed at Ware Bottom Church, near Drewry's Bluff, 20 May, 1864; Alfred R. Grigg, Second Lieutenant, 10 August, 1862; A. B. Percy, Second Lieutenant, 20 May, 1864.

C O M P A N Y G—*Henderson County*—Henry E. Lane, Captain, April, 1862, resigned 31 May, 1864; Otis P. Mills, Captain 31 May, 1864, from First Lieutenant 12 April, 1862; Benjamin D. Lane, First Lieutenant, 1 June, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 12 April, 1862; James M. Davis, Second



Lieutenant, 12 April, 1862; Julius A. Corpening, Second Lieutenant, 1 October, 1864, from private; Wm. F. Kinsey, Second Lieutenant, 1 October, 1864.

*COMPANY H—Alexander, Caswell, Orange, and other Counties*—T. C. Hallyburton, Captain, April, 1862, appointed Assistant Commissary of Subsistence 1 August, 1862; Wm. G. Graves, Captain, 1 August, 1862, from Second Lieutenant 22 April, 1862, (had served in the Thirteenth Regiment); J. D. Patterson, First Lieutenant, 22 April, 1862, resigned 13 February, 1863; Samuel R. Holton, First Lieutenant, 13 February, 1863, from Second Lieutenant 22 April 1862, (often detailed on brigade staff); Robert T. Faucett, Second Lieutenant, 28 February, 1863, from Sergeant, and transferred with fifteen men from Company D, promoted to First Lieutenant and transferred back to Company D 18 September, 1864; Robert W. Belo, Second Lieutenant, 1 March, 1863, from First Sergeant (lost a foot at Ware Bottom Church 20 May, 1864); Solon G. Birkhead, Second Lieutenant, 18 September, 1864, from First Sergeant in Company D, enlisted from Randolph county.

*COMPANY I—Rutherford County*—This company was composed of recruits mainly from Rutherford county and enlisted March, 1862, by First Lieutenant J. W. Kilpatrick and Private L. Harrill, both then of Company D, Sixteenth North Carolina Troops, sent home for recruits. They secured 76 men and organized 7 April, 1862, at Fredericksburg, Va., by electing J. W. Kilpatrick Captain, L. Harrill First Lieutenant, J. H. Sweezy Second Lieutenant, and H. A. L. Sweezy Third Lieutenant. Later the following officers were elected to fill vacancies and promoted as follows: At the battle of Seven Pines Captain J. W. Kilpatrick was killed and L. Harrill promoted to Captain 31 March, 1862, J. H. Sweezy to First Lieutenant, H. A. L. Sweezy to Second Lieutenant, and Joseph M. Walker elected Junior Second Lieutenant. During the Summer of 1862 J. H. Sweezy, First Lieutenant, resigned on account of ill health and soon afterwards died. This caused the following promotions: H. A. L. Sweezy to First Lieutenant 2 August, 1862, J. M. Walker to Second Lieutenant, and Philip H. Gross was elected Third



Lieutenant from the ranks. At the battle at the Davis House on the Weldon Railroad 21 August, 1864, First Lieutenant H. A. L. Sweezy was killed, and the following promotions followed: J. M. Walker to First Lieutenant, P. H. Gross to Second Lieutenant, and Orderly Sergeant L. M. Lynch to Third Lieutenant. During the month of February, 1865, in the siege at Petersburg, Lieutenant L. M. Lynch was killed, and C. P. Tanner was elected Third Lieutenant. This company was attached to the Sixteenth North Carolina State Troops and made the thirteenth company in that Regiment. On 8 April, commenced the long march to Yorktown, a distance of 130 miles, and arrived on the 19th. On 2 May, 1862, Yorktown was evacuated, and at Williamsburg the Sixteenth Regiment was held as a reserve to support the line of battle. This was on the famous retreat of General Joseph E. Johnston up the Peninsula between the James and York rivers. At Seven Pines 31 May, 1862, this attached company, only in service about two months, went into that fearful battle and fought like veterans. Captain J. W. Kilpatrick, Drummer J. G. Price, W. M. Brooks, A. K. Lynch and H. R. Sorrels were killed, and seven wounded. Soon after this battle the company was ordered to Camp Mangum, Raleigh, N. C., and was made Company I, Fifty-sixth North Carolina Troops.

Total commissioned and non-commissioned officers and men of Company I were (first and last), 146; killed in battle and died from wounds, 23; wounded and sent to hospital, 24; died from diseases, 29; discharged for disability, 5; besides a large number of slight wounds not reported.

COMPANY K—*Meeklenburg, Iredell, etc.*—Frank R. Alexander, Captain, April 1862, mortally wounded in night charge of 17 June, 1864, at Petersburg, and died 20 June, 1864 (Meeklenburg); John F. McNeely, Captain, 20 June, 1864, from First Lieutenant 11 December, 1863, and Second Lieutenant 1 April, 1862 (Iredell); James A. Wilson, First Lieutenant, 1 April, 1862, resigned 11 December, 1863 (Meeklenburg); James W. Shepherd, First Lieutenant, 20 January, 1864, from Second Lieutenant 1 April, 1862 (Iredell); Charles M. Payne, Second Lieutenant, 20 December, 1862, from Sergeant (Davidson county), often de-



tailed on Regimental Staff as Acting Adjutant; John A. Lowrance, Second Lieutenant, 1 July, 1864 (Mecklenburg).

May 21, 1862, Colonel H. B. Watson assumed command of the Camp of Instruction, with Captain Alfred H. Belo as Adjutant of the Post and Battalion Drillmaster. The letter designation above given for each company showed the relative rank of its Captain; but the dates of their commissions as they now appear in Moore's Roster, are not thus accurately corroborated.

July 31.—Organized to-day by the election of Field Officers. The following shows the result, with Staff and succession as far as preserved:

PAUL F. FAISON, Colonel. Had been Major Fourteenth North Carolina Regiment. (Northampton.) Class of 1861 at West Point.

G. GRATIOT LUKE, Lieutenant-Colonel, from Captain of Company A. (Camden.)

HENRY F. SCHENK, Major, from Captain Company F. Retired 14 August, 1863. (Cleveland.)

JOHN W. GRAHAM, Major, 1 September, 1863, from Captain Company D. (Orange.)

EDWARD J. HALE, JR., Adjutant, 1 August, 1862; promoted to Assistant Adjutant General of Lane's (N. C.) Brigade 24 October, 1863. (Cumberland.)

JOHN W. FAISON, Adjutant, 1 December, 1863. (Northampton.)

GEORGE B. BARNES, Assistant Quartermaster, 1 August, 1862, from Lieutenant Company E. (Northampton.)

T. C. HALLYBURTON, Assistant Commissary, 1 August, 1862, from Captain Company H.

JAMES M. CLARK, Color Sergeant 1 August, 1862, and Ensign 12 September, 1864, from Sergeant Company D. (Orange.)

C. A. THOMAS, Surgeon. (Warrenton.)

CHARLES H. LADD, Surgeon. (South Carolina.)

MOSES JOHN DEROSSET, Surgeon. (Wilmington.)

CADER G. COX, Assistant Surgeon. (Onslow.)

WM. T. TAYLOR, Sergeant-Major, from private Company



B, promoted to Captain Company B, 22 February, 1865.  
(Cumberland.)

JOHN MABLE, Sergeant-Major, 21 April, 1863, from private Company K. (Mecklenburg.)

WM. W. GRAVES, Quartermaster Sergeant, from Company A. (Pasquotank.)

STEPHEN C. MULLEN, Commissary Sergeant, from Company A. (Onslow.)

JOHN J. ELENO, Ordnance Sergeant. (Onslow.)

BAILEY BRICE, Hospital Steward, from Company A. (Moore.)

WM. FENONI, Drum Major, (Italy), 1 August, 1862.

WM. W. WALLACE, Drum Major. (Northampton.)

1 August, 1862, Colonel Faison assumed command, and on the 8th the regiment moved to Goldsboro.

For the next three months we were frequently on the march and counter-march in reconnoissances between Goldsboro, Warsaw, Magnolia, Beaver Dam Church, Wilmington, the seacoast and Tarboro. Off the coast we saw the blockading squadrons, which our *Advance* and other vessels eluded on frequent trips.

3 November, marched through Tarboro to meet our forces retreating from Williamston, and all went into camp near Cross Roads Church. The Twenty-sixth Regiment was sent out on reconnaissance.

4 November, Governor Z. B. Vance, who had been elected Governor from the position of Colonel of the Twenty-sixth Regiment, arrived with General J. G. Martin, Adjutant General of North Carolina. Vance's reception by his old command was something unique. As the enemy were not in speaking distance, so fine a disciplinarian as their model commander, Harry Burgwyn, had to waive ceremony for the time being. The sincerity of their congratulations was attested by utterly ignoring the dignity hedging about his new position, and recalling the camp-fire scenes where the jovial spirit by his wit and humor had always found a silver lining to the darkest cloud, and led them to look upon any sacrifice



that might be offered in the name of "the good Old North State," as a privilege.

#### CHECKING FOSTER'S RAID.

5 November, Martin's command, consisting of the Seventeenth, Twenty-sixth, Forty-second, Fifty-sixth and Sixty-first North Carolina Regiments, Walker's squadron of cavalry and two or three batteries of artillery, set out for Hamilton. Within six miles of that place the enemy was reported between us and Tarboro. Countermarched to within three miles of Cross Roads Church. Just at nightfall Crawford's company of the Forty-second Regiment encountered the enemy's cavalry, losing none, and the enemy, according to prisoners captured on the 6th, suffering a loss of sixteen killed and wounded. Six of their dead were left on the field. Slept in line of battle expecting a general attack at daybreak.

6 November, the enemy retreated, and we pursued through a drenching rain; bivouacked in six miles of the terminus of the railroad from Tarboro.

7 November, it snowed through the day and into the night; Marched to the railroad terminus. At this point General Martin organized three brigades of the six regiments, the Forty-fourth North Carolina Troops having joined us on the 5th; Colonel Faison commanding a brigade composed of the Seventeenth, under Lieutenant-Colonel Lamb, and the Fifty-sixth under Lieutenant-Colonel Luke. The Forty-seventh North Carolina Regiment, Colonel Sion H. Rogers, came in on the 9th.

11 November, Faison's Brigade reached Hamilton. It is evident now that the campaign is ended, and the enemy frightened from his attempt on Tarboro, has returned to Washington, N. C. Their raid was under command of General Foster, late a superintendent of the United States Military Academy at West Point while Colonel Faison was a Cadet there. The utterly wanton destruction of household and other private property left in their trail has not inspired their pursuers with any respect for their soldierly qualities. It is estimated that they have carried off 3,000 laborers (slaves) from Martin and adjoining counties--a more legiti-



mate prize, as without such wasting of the sinews of war, the struggle may be prolonged indefinitely.

SERVICE ON THE BLACKWATER.

15 November, the Fifty-sixth Regiment takes up line of march for Franklin, Va., and crosses the Roanoke at Hill's Ferry, a mile from Palmyra. 16 November, through Bertie county by Woodville, bivouacked in a mile of Rockville, making nineteen miles. 17 November, reached Murfreesboro, about twenty-two miles. 18 November, marched through the town; reception and escort by Colonel Wheeler's Cavalry. Reached Monroe, Va., a ferry on the Nottoway river, eighteen miles. 19 November, crossed the Nottoway, passed through Franklin, six miles beyond, and went into camp. Line of defense includes this point with old South Quay and Cherry Grove. Heavy intrenchments thrown up along this line,—a week's work. General Roger A. Pryor, with a portion of Pettigrew's Brigade, is in command at Franklin, General Pettigrew's headquarters being at Petersburg.

8 December, a detachment of the Fifty-sixth, with another from the Forty-second North Carolina State Troops, have rebuilt the bridge over the Blackwater at Joyner's Store. A gunboat on the river was fired into by a portion of Company I, under Lieutenant Sweezy. 9 December, detachments returned from Joyner's Store, bivouacked near the Fifty-second North Carolina Troops, who had been with us at Wilmington last Summer. 10 December, rejoined the regiment in camp, expecting an advance of the enemy by morning. Lieutenant Fatherly, of Company C, had fired into a patrol gunboat at the junction of Nottoway and Blackwater rivers. 11 December, Colonel Faison, with six companies, reported to General Pryor at Franklin, leaving four with Colonel Luke at New South Quay. General Pryor made a foraging expedition across the river through Carrsville and Windsor, returning on the 28th without loss, and having taken one prisoner.

While on the Blackwater we were thrown with the Eleventh North Carolina Troops, now under Colonel Collett Leventhalpe, who had been a Captain in the British army. To this regiment the Fifty-sixth would concede the palm for



superiority in the manual of arms, while for excellency in tactics, military bearing and discipline, it yielded to none. Colonel Faison was fresh from West Point, and the officers had chosen him with a full appreciation of the importance of these essentials. Of our service along the Blackwater the writer heard General Pryor say: "Colonel Faison was always on time with his regiment."

The regiment was also fortunate in the assignment of its Quartermaster, Commissary and Surgeons, Captains Bower and Hallyburton being efficient men of affairs, while Drs. Thomas, Ladd, DeRosset and Cox stood high in their profession. Dr. DeRosset had taken a foreign course, and was an accomplished French and German scholar.

#### EASTERN NORTH CAROLINA.

4 January, 1863, off with Pettigrew's Brigade for Rocky Mount, N. C., reaching that point about dark. 17 January, on to Goldsboro, and camped within a short distance of Cooke's Brigade, Daniel's being on the other side of the town.

An advance of the enemy is anticipated from the coast. 20 January, went into bivouac near Pettigrew's Brigade, two miles east of Magnolia Station. 21 January, bivouacked near the academy east of Kenansville, and reported to General Robert Ransom, and thus became a part of that brigade.

22 February, off for Wilmington, and at Camp Lamb until 24 February, when we marched out to Old Topsail Sound. 9 March, General Ransom followed with the Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments.

23 March, Captain John W. Graham, Company D, detailed to relieve Adjutant Hale as Judge Advocate, since early in January, of court-martial, sitting in Wilmington. Lieut. R. D. Graham has been acting Adjutant in the absence of Lieutenant Hale. Brigade remaining here about ten days, and passing through Goldsboro, where a short halt was made, reached Kinston 1 April.

17 April, marched out of camp, east of the premises of George Washington, and proceeding across the river, expected to go down the Dover road some eighteen miles to reinforce the Fifty-ninth North Carolina, which had engaged



the enemy at Sandy Ridge. Learning of their withdrawal, bivouacked on the south side of the river. 19 April, march to Wise's Fork, and offer battle; but the enemy withdrew, and we returned to camp at Kinston.

24 April, the Fifty-sixth is on picket duty<sup>4</sup> east of Wise's Fork, below Kinston. Companies H and K, under Captain F. R. Alexander, hold the Neuse river road; E, G and I, under Captain L. Harrill, the Dover road at Gum Swamp, while A, B, D and F, under Major H. F. Schenk, were posted on the Upper Trent road at Noble's Farm. Company A was held in reserve.

#### FIRST GUM SWAMP.

28 April, the enemy driving in the picket line, attack Companies E, G and I about 3 p. m. Their line shows four flags, indicating as many regiments, say 1,600 men, in the front line, while our total is 180 men, with earthworks proving rather a death-trap than a defence. The slight elevation of the railroad embankment, four or five feet, as it emerges eastward from the swamp, had been utilized to face the enemy advancing on our left flank. This faced north, while a breast-work of equal length, say 150 yards, facing east, starting at a right angle from this improvised line, extended around southward and then westward into the same swamp.

Thus the enemy, advancing to the crest of the elevated ground on the south, overlooking the railroad embankment, could count our men aligned along it. In this unequal contest the detachment of three companies under Captain Harrill held their position for two hours, when they were joined by the Colonel, who, after continuing the fight stubbornly on this and the second line occupied on the west side of the swamp, over three hours, at the approach of night, finding the enemy in sufficient numbers to surround his men, withdrew them. Citizens in their rear report the enemy's loss at 10 killed and 18 wounded. Our loss was one officer and three men killed. This officer is Lieutenant Jarvis B. Lutterloh, of Fayetteville, commanding Company E. His genial spirit and gallant behavior had made him a favorite throughout the regiment. The men killed were N. T. McNeill, of Harnett;



W. M. Vickers, of Orange, and Miles Nelson, of Henderson county.

A courier from General D. H. Hill about sundown reached the four companies at the upper Trent river crossing to warn them that they were now cut off, when Major Schenk drew in his pickets, and avoiding the column by a circuitous march, had all at Wise's Forks within the lines about sunrise. This was the Major's last field service. He had long fought against failing health, but was now completely broken down and was at once sent to the hospital, from which he was eventually retired by the board of examining surgeons, with the respect and sympathy of his many friends.

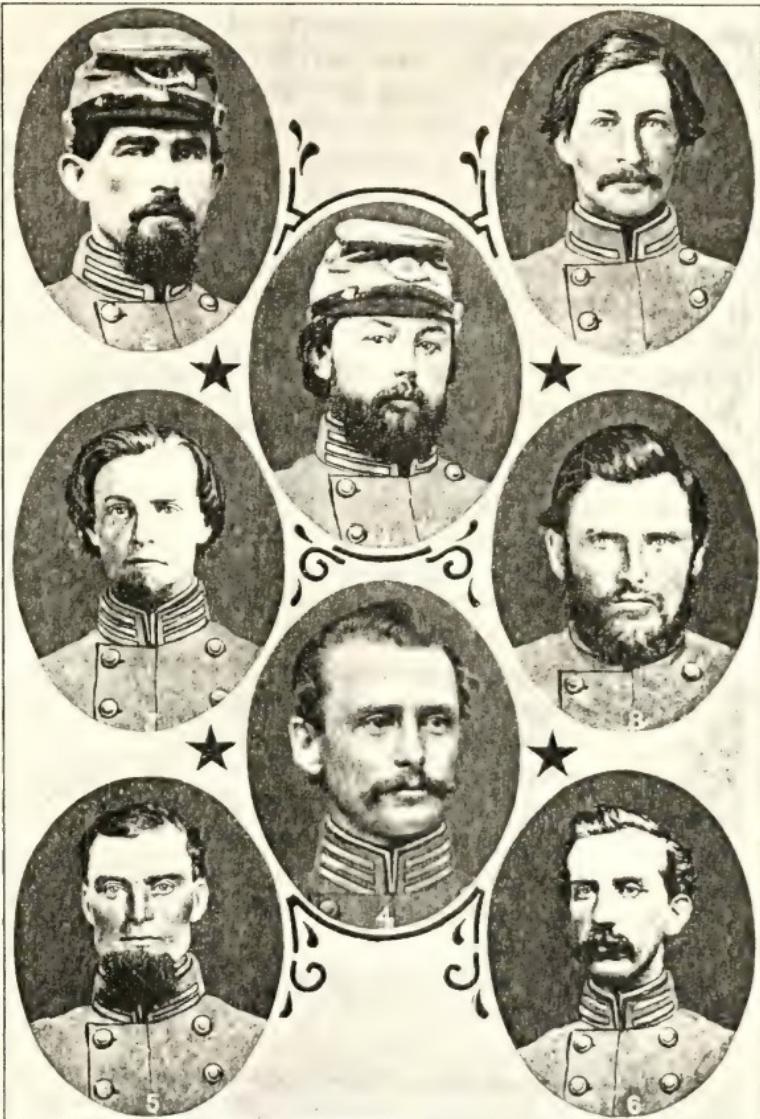
16 May, Cooke's North Carolina Brigade has come to Kinston from the vicinity of Charleston. 17 May, the Fifty-sixth relieves a regiment of Daniel's North Carolina Brigade on outpost duty at Gum Swamp, which is eight miles below Kinston, on the Dover road. The line of defense has been improved by Colonel Rutledge with his Twenty-fifth Regiment of Ransom's Brigade. The breastwork, already noted, extending out of the east side of the swamp at a point on the south (right), and continuing around to the north to the fatal railroad embankment, (here running back through the swamp at a right angle,) is now carried across it, extending the arc of the circle northwest until it enters the swamp again. The railroad embankment thus becomes a traverse, while others are added against the enfilade from the east and south. The country road from New Bern to Kinston here winding like the letter S crosses the railroad three times, and thus with it completes a dollar mark (\$) within two miles behind us. A redoubt with one gun commands the first crossing immediately in our rear.

21 May. Scouts late this afternoon report an advance of the enemy from New Bern, four companies of cavalry having crossed Core Creek.

#### SECOND GUM SWAMP.

22 May. While the regiment is in line of battle, seven companies occupying the circular earthworks, with the other three posted in the swamp occurring on the right





#### FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

1. A. P. White, Captain, Co. C.
2. Matthew W. Fatherly, 1st Lt., Co. C.
3. John B. Lyon, 2d Lieut., Co. C., and Captain in 68th Regiment.
4. Robert D. Graham, Captain, Co. D.
5. David S. Ray, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
6. Robert T. Fauchette, 1st Lieut., Co. D.
7. B. F. Grizzg, Captain, Co. E.
8. Valentine J. Palmer, 1st Lieut., Co. F.



flank, Company I occupying the extreme point a mile to the south, our pickets are driven in at daylight. Lieutenant Graham soon thereafter calls the attention of the Colonel to an order plainly heard on the left, "Throw out your skirmishers," and is sent out with six men to reconnoiter. Finds the enemy advancing a strong line of skirmishers, with a line of battle behind them, opens the battle by getting the first fire, and returns to report their position. The left wing, ready and waiting for them as they rush forward to the assault, receives them with a steady fire, and they take shelter in a screen of dense woods separated from us by an open space of 100 yards in width.

The fire here is maintained briskly for some time, and then their next regiment advances against the right wing of our seven companies, where the reception is equally effective, again silencing their fire. These demonstrations after a considerable interval are renewed with the same result, and the third time all is silent.

At this point Colonel Faison expressed to the writer a determination to charge them, and sent him around their right flank with twenty men to locate them. It was soon evident why they had not up to this time, about 10:30 a. m., used against our front their third regiment of infantry supporting the first two, nor the three pieces of artillery held under cover near the Dover road and supported by the four companies of cavalry, of which we heard the evening before, constituting the brigade here assembled. Another force, whose strength we must learn by feeling it, is now rapidly closing in on the Dover road directly in rear of our right flank. They have not pierced any point in the line committed to the Fifty-sixth; but however there, they have gained the rear of the redoubt, and can soon rake the road through the swamp with our own gun. The Colonel is amazed that there is no attack upon them by the always reliable regiment that had been posted at the next crossing as our reserve. They soon develop a considerable force, taking the redoubt in the rear, and a hasty retreat along the railroad before they can gain it, now offers the only escape from capture by the two brigades between which the battalion is being wedged in. Colonel



Faison accordingly withdrew it, and keeping up a running fire, saved the greater portion of his command before the enemy got possession of the railroad.

The enemy had rushed in between Graham's reconnoitering party and the retiring battalion, but by a circuitous route through the swamp, he joined the rear companies as they were successfully replying to an attack from the swamp upon the left flank of the column. The defence was here vigorously maintained for some time, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke shouting: "Give it to them boys; it will be all right to-morrow." But the left flank and rear of our new line of battle are now open to the advancing brigade that we have fought throughout the morning on the east side of the swamp, while our right flank and its rear are commanded by the other brigade, which after gaining the crossing that was occupied by our reserve regiment when the battle opened, is rushing in from that point on the west to join the line coming over the railroad embankment from the south, and thus completing the circle around us.

The battle is evidently over, and we must save as many men as we can through the swamp in our rear north of the railroad. Plunging into the dense tall growth of reeds, we were met by demands to surrender. The alternative seemed to be capture or to receive a volley of musketry at close quarters. But the cover of the reeds was complete at a short distance. Taking advantage of this and playing men as pawns, the writer sent the smaller number between himself and the enemy directly into their hands. Without waiting to see this manœuvre completed, he faced about and set the column in motion in another direction. The enemy realized only about 20 per cent of the prize that was within their grasp at this point; for 150 men were thus rescued with the assistance of Lieutenant Charles M. Payne, of Company K, since an able Presbyterian Doctor of Divinity, recently deceased.

Adjutant Hale, who had acted with coolness and gallantry throughout the whole engagement, was near this point of the rear guard and brought out a good number.

If there was any officer of the regiment who failed to measure up to his duty in either of the two battles at this outpost,



we never discovered it. A court of inquiry acquitted the Colonel commanding. Of this result none of his comrades had entertained the least doubt.

Major E. J. Hale has recently written me: "I notice that Professor D. H. Hill, in 'Confederate Military History,' Vol. IV, page 155, says that the Fifty-sixth and Twenty-fifth Regiments were surprised at Gum Swamp 22 May, 1863. This is not true of the Fifty-sixth, whatever may be true of any others. We had been engaged for some hours at intervals with the enemy in our front, which we had completely protected and defended by repulsing his three several attacks. No part of the line defended by or belonging to the Fifty-sixth was punctured.

"After the third repulse of the enemy an order was given to withdraw the regiment to the Kinston side of Gum Swamp, as the enemy had crossed it some miles south of us. I was shot while directing this movement, but paid no attention to the matter until next day. Shortly after we had gotten most of the men across the country road, I remember that you and I were chatting beside the railroad about the want of orders. We saw the Twenty-fifth in line a few hundred yards to the rear (west). Word was started to them that with a change of front to the south, we would join them in attacking this new force of the enemy which was then coming up from that direction. But suddenly the Twenty-fifth was marched away towards Kinston. Our support being thus withdrawn, we then had nothing to do but to save as many as possible from capture."

Captain W. G. Graves now writes: "I have never felt any scruples about this fight, as no blame could be placed upon the men or regimental officers."

General R. Ransom, just returned from sick leave, barely escaped capture as he was coming to the outpost and had only passed to the front of the reserve, when he was met by a volley from the enemy at that instant emerging from the swamp to attack the rear of the redoubt and of our right flank. Two regiments of the enemy had gained this position, led by a native guide in a circuitous, all night march of fourteen miles in single file through a marsh that they found well nigh



impassable. They thus avoided by several miles the line committed to the Fifty-sixth, and came upon the field from the southwest.

Colonel Faison was just then quiet for the want of something to shoot at; and was ready to make a counter-charge at the most favorable point; but it seems that his silence was mistaken in the rear for a surrender. This misunderstanding and the consequent withdrawal of the Twenty-fifth at the very instant when it should have charged and united with us to crush their rear attack, was the mistake of the day. But from such mistakes even Napoleon was not free.

Major-General D. H. Hill, reaching the outpost with Ransom's and Cooke's Brigades about 5 p. m., pushed the enemy back within his fortifications at New Bern, a shell there killing Colonel J. R. Jones, of the Fifty-eighth Pennsylvania, who had commanded the two brigades in the attack on the Fifty-sixth North Carolina. The brigade in our front was immediately under Colonel Pierson, of one of the four Massachusetts regiments, while Colonel Jones accompanied the column that penetrated the swamp. He was a brave, energetic officer, and doubtless would have been appointed a general for this affair which he reported that afternoon as "partially successful." He therein says that "the enemy was able to defend himself sometime under cover of a swamp, and when finally broken, his men mostly escaped," and that he "almost took General Ransom himself, who was accidentally at the post."

Our loss was three Lieutenants and 146 men captured, Lieutenant D. S. Ray, of Company D, dying of his wounds next day in New Bern. He was a gallant and meritorious officer, who had the confidence and affection of the company, of which he was in command, Captain John W. Graham being on detail as Judge Advocate of the court-martial at Wilmington. Lieutenant Graham was promoted to First Lieutenant, and Sergeant Wm. Turner to Second Lieutenant.

Query: How did it happen, when it was known at the outpost on the afternoon of 21 May, and presumably at headquarters early in the evening, that a column was advancing from New Bern on the same road by which the four regi-



ments had attacked this outpost within the last four weeks, and this column was morally certain to reach it next morning, that an effective force of three brigades at Kinston, only eight miles distant and ample to give the enemy a complete surprise by striking the first blow, or at least simultaneously with their assault upon our single regiment and possibly cutting off their line of retreat, if strategically disposed during the night, did not start towards the scene of action until the next afternoon, after the incident was closed? No explanation is found in the official records or other source of information.

28 May. The brigade is off for Virginia *via* Goldsboro and Weldon, reaching Petersburg by train in the night. 29 May, on to Richmond, and bivouacked at Camp Lee, (State Fair Grounds.)

2 June. Right-about to Petersburg again, and next day proceeded to Ivor, on the Norfolk & Petersburg Railroad.

13 June. Brigadier-General R. Ransom has been promoted to Major-General; Colonel M. W. Ransom to Brigadier-General to-day. Back in Petersburg and march over to Drewry's Bluff on the James river, half way between Petersburg and Richmond. The appearance of troops in permanent quarters, on garrison duty, is here a novel sight to our command, so constantly in motion.

17 June. Back to Petersburg, and 21 June to Half-way Station, towards Richmond. Occupied former cabins of Daniel's North Carolina Brigade.

During this month all the enlisted men captured at Gum Swamp, have been exchanged and returned to duty.

26 June. Night march to Seven Pines.

29 June. Ransom's Brigade is engaged in dismantling breastworks constructed here by the enemy under McClellan a year ago. Major-Generals Arnold Elzy, Robert Ransom, and Daniel H. Hill have recently been successively in command at Richmond. Both Ransom's and Cooke's Brigades had been ordered up to participate in the counter-invasion to the north, but at the solicitation of these post commanders were retained for protection of the capital. General Lee's letter on the subject says: "I have always considered Cooke's



and Ransom's Brigades as part of the Army of Northern Virginia."

#### BATTLE AT CRUMP'S FARM.

Ours was now a duty of observation and reconnoissance to meet any demonstration of the enemy from the seacoast. Thus an opportunity was given to participate in one of the most brilliant campaigns of the war—sharp, quick and decisive. The enemy watching our capital could learn approximately the strength of the small force, protecting it. Accordingly General Dix and General Keyes, advancing cautiously by the way of the White House, apparently had a walk-over.

2 July. General D. H. Hill, without waiting for them to approach nearer to his fortified line of defense, which he had not enough troops to adequately man, moved out rapidly upon them with Ransom's North Carolina, Cooke's North Carolina, and Jenkins' South Carolina Brigades, Branch's Virginia Battery of Artillery and three others,—a total of sixteen guns—and a squadron of cavalry. He met them at Crump's farm, near Deep Bottom bridge, between sunset and dark, and immediately opened such a vigorous assault that the enemy were compelled to assume the defensive, and night found them in full retreat, doubtless believing that those three brigades must have been immensely reinforced since their last reports had come in. Ransom's Brigade sustained the only loss on our side, one man killed and two wounded. Six or seven prisoners taken admitted a loss of thirty on their side.

11 July. To Petersburg again, and camped on Dunn's farm.

#### RAID AGAINST WELDON BRIDGE CHECKED.

28 July. A part of the Forty-ninth and three companies of the Twenty-fourth North Carolina Regiment and a battery of Georgia Artillery, met Spear's Regiment of New York Cavalry and Dodge's Mounted Riflemen and several pieces of artillery at Boone's Mill, ten miles south of Weldon and two miles from Jackson, N. C. The Fifty-sixth Regiment arrived that evening, but the enemy had withdrawn.



Disposition was made for attack that night; but they did not return. The Forty-ninth lost one man killed, and in the Twenty-fourth three were wounded. The enemy buried 11 of their dead on the field.

1 August. Back to Garysburg, and camped near Mr. Moody's.

12 August. To Halifax Court House, and 13th took boat for Hamilton. Down the Roanoke seventy-three miles, arriving in the afternoon.

14 August. Company D, under Lieutenant Graham, detached to Poplar Point, and threw up breastworks covering the river landing.

16 August. Returned through Palmyra and Halifax to Garysburg.

1 September. Captain John W. Graham, on retirement of Major Schenk, is promoted to Major, Lieutenant Robert D. Graham to Captain, and Sergeant Joseph B. Coggin to First Lieutenant. For the succeeding four months, eight companies of this regiment and the Twenty-first North Carolina Regiment were posted in the West to meet any incursions from East Tennessee, and to break up the refuge found there by deserters and lawless characters from the several States, and to see that the conscript act was fairly enforced. The effort was to gain friends, and make no new enemies for the State in her desperate struggle, and thus keep the people united in domestic tranquility. The moral effect of this movement was salutary, whether now viewed from a Confederate or Federal standpoint, and it is beyond doubt that it was so regarded by General Grant when the war was over, and the proscription naturally following it was at fever heat.

Two companies, H and E, under Captain W. G. Graves, were protecting the building of the Confederate ram Albemarle on the Roanoke near Halifax, at Edwards' Ferry.

24 October. Adjutant E. J. Hale, Jr., is promoted to Assistant Adjutant-General and assigned to Lane's Brigade. As his modesty naturally forbade the incorporation of his military record in his history of the Bethel Regiment, and as he contributed so largely to the efficiency of the Fifty-sixth,



it will be a pleasure to every survivor of the latter to have an outline of so brilliant a career here preserved for the honor of the State that we all love so well.

Private in Bethel Regiment 17 April to 13 November, 1861; Second Lieutenant 2 December, 1861, and Adjutant Fifty-sixth Regiment 1 August, 1862, to 24 October, 1863; Judge Advocate Court-martial at Wilmington January to March, 1863.

Designated by General Lee to convey to General Grant assent and permit to remove his dead and wounded lost at Cold Harbor 2 June, 1864, Grant reluctantly thus acknowledging a defeat.

Assigned as Assistant Adjutant-General to Taliaferro's Division, Army Northern Virginia, but reassigned to Lane's Brigade on petition of its officers, in consequence of General Lane being absent, wounded.

For "conspicuous gallantry and merit" recommended by Generals Lane, Wilcox and A. P. Hill for Colonel of the Twenty-eighth Regiment on request of all its officers then present, 26 September, 1864; but the act of Congress was found to provide only for the regular line officers.

In March, 1865, he was commissioned Major and Assistant Adjutant-General; wounded at Second Gum Swamp and at the Wilderness, and was in the surrender at Appomattox. At the crisis in the battle of Fuzzell's Mills, 16 August, 1864, (commanding the Darbytown road in front of Richmond), Lane's Brigade was put in under the eye of General Lee to recapture the lost line. Colonel Barber commanding, was wounded and the charge arrested, but the Adjutant-General assumed command and pushed forward to a speedy victory. In the presence of the troops he was thanked by the chief engineer, General Stevens. For the latter's consideration he then recommended that the line of defense be here so changed as to give full effect to the modern long-range small arms, commanding approaches over wide plains, therefore to be preferred instead of precipices. This was then a new departure in fortifications, but was promptly adopted and superintendence of the work given to Captain Hale, so that when the next morning dawned the enemy found four miles of such de-



fencees awaiting their assault, and withdrew. It was effectually adopted by the Turks at Plevna, while much later the British lost Majuba Hill by adhering to the antiquated system.

In the North Carolina victory at Reams Station, 25 August, 1864, he had a similar experience. General Conner was disabled and Colonel Speer killed just as Lane's Brigade started forward. He assumed command, and they were among the first over the line.

Losing only by a legal technicality the promotion to Colonel in the line, as above mentioned, the extraordinary commission of Major and Assistant Adjutant-General of Brigade was given him as some measure of compensation. He was succeeded as Adjutant by John W. Faison.

#### FIRST EXPEDITION AGAINST NEW BERN.

In January, 1864, an expedition was organized for the recapture of New Bern, under Major-General George E. Pickett.

28 January. Reached Goldsboro, and on the night of the 30th proceeded to Kinston, where the Fifty-sixth reported to General Corse, commanding a Virginia Brigade. At night General Barton, commanding his own brigade and the other four Regiments under General Ransom, marched out on the Neuse River road for New Bern.

31 January. Column consisting of Hoke's North Carolina, Clingman's North Carolina, and Corse's Virginia Brigade (temporarily including the Fifty-sixth North Carolina), took the Dover road, passed through Gun Swamp, whence we marched down the railroad track some six miles, turning into the country road again at Sandy Ridge, the scene of a fight between the Forty-ninth North Carolina and the enemy last year, and went into bivouac about eight miles beyond, making twenty-three miles that day. Skirmishers out that night from Corse's Brigade under Major Graham, of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina.

1 February. Set out at 2 a. m. and captured the outpost at Bachelor's Creek. Here Colonel Shaw, Eighth North Carolina State Troops, was killed at the opening of the en-



gagement. A portion of Hoke's men, with Companies B and I, of the Fifty-sixth, were actively engaged. Our total loss was eight killed and fifty wounded. We captured 250 prisoners with the block house. The railroad crosses the creek at this point, and the Fifty-sixth made a race to strike the track in the rear of the train carrying the residue of the enemy to New Bern. They escaped. The fort was destroyed and a large quantity of Quartermaster and Commissary stores secured.

Our part being thus accomplished, we listened in vain for Barton's guns as a signal for our further advance. At night Captain R. D. Graham, with 100 men from Companies D and K, of the Fifty-sixth, with two pieces of artillery, was posted by General Corse on the Washington road as a force of observation against a garrison cut off in the fort at the crossing of Bachelor's Creek. At daylight Colonel Chew came out with the Twenty-ninth and Thirtieth Virginia Regiments and with Graham's detachment moved upon the garrison. The Thirtieth and the artillery was moved around to the right of the road, while the rest of the force took position on the left. A demand was then made for surrender; and the enemy finding himself within point-blank range of the artillery in his rear, to which he could not reply, without bringing his own outside the fort, capitulated. Our spoils were a section of artillery with caisson, and 100 stand of small arms, with a supply of ammunition. The prisoners, 120 men and four officers, Captain Cowdy commanding. Meanwhile the enemy had advanced from New Bern upon Hoke, and been repulsed.

General Martin, on the Wilmington road, had carried everything before him up to the reserve works. Every assault had been successful, and General Barton could readily have found men to take the task assigned him. But as he reported it impracticable, the whole expedition was finally abandoned, when it seemed the general opinion that a determined assault would have been crowned with success.

I leave the above recital, as most of this sketch, just as written during the war. On consulting U. S. Official Records, I now find that I have expressed the opinion of both



General Hoke and General Pickett. But it therein also appears that General Barton in his official report, says that before abandoning his attempt to cross Brice's Creek, he made, together with the two brigade commanders under him, a personal reconnoissance. He requested a court of inquiry, and this request was recommended accordingly to Adjutant-General Cooper by General Lee.

5 February. Rejoined our own brigade under General M. W. Ransom at Kinston, and 7 February reached Weldon on train *via* Goldsboro.

8 February. Ordered to Richmond, but countermanded just as the train is about to pull out. In camp again near the Moody house. Daily exercises in company and battalion drill, each Captain successively acting as regimental commander.

#### EXPEDITION TO SOUTH MILLS.

26 February. Off for Franklin, Va., on the Blackwater, crossed at Old South Quay, and marched to South Mills, Camden county, N. C. From this point commissary stores are gathered; and a detachment of the enemy appearing, is chased down the Dismal Swamp canal by Colonel Dearing with his battalion of cavalry to within twelve miles of Norfolk. Captured a First Lieutenant, Surgeon and half a dozen privates. The object accomplished, the wagon trains under our protection having been loaded and started back, the return commences on the night of 4 March, and at the two creeks first to be crossed, Graham's company of the Fifty-sixth, as rear guard, had prepared bright fires that there should be no delay in crossing. The enemy were reported to have ascended the Chowan river, and were expected to pay us some attention before we were back across the Blackwater with our long train of wagons loaded with provisions. Halted at Sandy Cross, twenty miles from South Mills, for two days. No appearance of the enemy.

#### RECAPTURE SUFFOLK.

7 March. Proceeded to within eight miles of Old South Quay and learned that the enemy had again occupied Suffolk.

9 March. Passed through Somerton at 10 a. m., and at a



church within three miles of Suffolk, routed a cavalry out post and pressed on to the railroad. Here the enemy's cavalry formed to charge the Twenty-fourth Regiment; but a few well-directed shots put them to flight. Captain Cicero Durham, promoted to Assistant Quartermaster for gallantry in the line and known as the Fighting Quartermaster of the Forty-ninth, gathered a squad of a dozen mounted men among the teamsters, and charged them in turn. Seeing the paucity of his numbers, they made a stand, but were attacked with such vigor that they resumed their flight before the infantry could get within range. The Fifty-sixth was second in the column, led by Lieutenant-Colonel Luke, and complimented on the good order sustained on a double-quick pursuit of three miles. The only escape for the cavalry was by completing a semi-circle outside the earthworks, defending the town, before we could run through on the street and road forming the chord to the arc. With their spurs and the aid of the shells from our artillery, they beat the race.

We had no cavalry and did not lose a man, but General Butler, like Job's war horse, "smelleth the battle afar off," and pens to the Secretary of War the following bulletin as it appears in Official War Records:

FORT MONROE, 12 March, 1864.

No. 1.

Cole's Cavalry, Second United States, had a skirmish the day before yesterday with the enemy near Suffolk, Va. While making a reconnoissance, they came upon Ransom's Brigade, consisting of four regiments of infantry, four pieces of artillery and 300 cavalry. The enemy made a charge upon two squadrons of Cole's, and were handsomely repulsed with a loss of about sixty.

The charge brought the colored soldiers into a hand-to-hand fight with the rebels, and the enthusiastic testimony of their officers is that that they behaved with the utmost courage, coolness and daring. I am perfectly satisfied with my negro cavalry.

BENJ. F. BUTLER,  
Major-General.

Hon. E. M. Stanton.



We pursued them to Bernard's Mills, capturing the camp of the white troops and returned with one piece of artillery and considerable stores.

Three negro soldiers took refuge in a house in town and refusing to surrender, perished in its flames. Another, rushing out with his gun and fighting to the last, was shot.

11 March. Returned to Franklin *via* Carrsville. 12 March, off by rail to Weldon, and in camp near Mr. Moody's at Garysburg, and 17 March, muster and inspection for January and February, 1864, by Colonel Paul F. Faision.

#### THE PLYMOUTH CAMPAIGN.

14 April. The Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth and Fifty-sixth North Carolina State Troops, under General M. W. Ransom, set out by rail and reported to Brigadier-General R. F. Hoke at Tarboro. The Forty-ninth was on outpost duty near Edenton, and its place was now supplied by the Eighth, from Clingman's Brigade.

15 April. The column, consisting of Hoke's North Carolina Brigade under Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia Regiment, which was then with it; Kemper's Virginia, under Colonel Terry, and Ransom's North Carolina Brigade with Pegram's Battery, under General Ransom, and Striblings', Graham's Virginia, Miller's, Moseley's and Reade's batteries of artillery belonging to Colonel Dearing's command, and Dearing's Battalion of cavalry, took up the line of march against Plymouth. At Hamilton we were joined by the Thirty-fifth North Carolina. Passing through Williamston and Jamesville, we reached the vicinity Sunday, the 17th, a little before nightfall.

Immediately a strong line of skirmishers, including Company I, of the Fifty-sixth, was thrown out from Ransom's Brigade, under Major Graham, and pushed forward nearly to the entrenchments. A picket post of eleven men was surprised, nine captured, one killed and one escaped. A reconnaissance in force was made in front of Fort Gray, on Warren's Neck, between the mouths of two creeks emptying into the Roanoke, two miles west of Plymouth, and Dearing's ar-



tillery crippled one of the boats so that it sank on reaching the wharf. A redoubt was immediately begun on the Jamesville road leading south for our 32-pound Parrott gun. The iron-clad Albemarle, Captain J. W. Cooke, was expected during the night. Fort Gray's armament was one 100-pounder and two 32-pounders.

18 April. The Albemarle, for some reason, was making slow progress down the Roanoke, and the day passed without a sign of it. Shelling at intervals was kept up, the Fifty-sixth suffering but one casualty, the wounding of a man in Company H. During the night Colonel Faison, with 250 men, had completed the earthwork near the Washington and Jamesville road from which to bombard the fort at Sanderson's.

At sundown a demonstration on both sides of Lee's Mill, Bath road, was made against the enemy's south front by the artillery and Ransom's Brigade. Our assaulting column was formed with the left resting on Frank Fagan's house on the Jamesville road, a mile and a quarter south of town, and two regiments, the Twenty-fourth and Eighth, beyond the Lee Mill road at Redd Gap. The Fifty-sixth was next on the left, and then the Thirty-fifth, while the Twenty-fifth connected us with Hoke's right. The batteries following on the heels of a battalion of sharpshooters composed of Companies B, I, E and A, of the Fifty-sixth, under their worthy Captains, Roberts, Harrill, Lockhart and Hughes, led by Captain Jno. C. Pegram, Assistant Adjutant-General, driving the enemy over their breastworks, advanced steadily from position to position, firing with the utmost rapidity, while the rest of the brigade in the line of battle kept pace with them. Ransom was conspicuous on the field, keeping his mount throughout the engagement. This was kept up till 10 p. m., the enemy replying with great spirit from his forts and gun-boats, carrying twenty pieces. The object was as far as possible to draw the enemy's fire in this direction, while Hoke's Brigade assaulted in earnest the "85th Redoubt" at the Sanderson house, some distance to our left. The fort was carried after a very stubborn resistance and the death of its commander, Captain Chapin. Among our killed we mourn the



loss of the brigade commander, the gallant Colonel Mercer, of the Twenty-first Georgia. Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson, of Company D, and 14 men of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina were wounded at our end. Colonel Mercer was a West Point classmate of Generals J. E. B. Stuart, Hood, Custis Lee, and W. D. Pender. He is buried at Tarboro beside his last named comrade.

19 April. Towards day Colonel Wm. J. Clarke, with his own, the Twenty-fourth, and the Fifty-sixth Regiment, was posted below the town on the Columbia road, to prevent escape in that direction. But the enemy was still confident in the strength of his fortifications, even after the loss of the "85th Redoubt" and the arrival of our ram, Albemarle, the same night passing the big guns at Warren's Neck unharmed. It sank one of their gunboats, the Southfield, and chased off the other two, the naval commander, Flusser, being killed on the deck of the Miami. The enemy still held a continuous, thoroughly fortified line, well constructed, from a point on the river, near Warren's Neck, along their west and south fronts, and terminating on the east in a swamp, bordering which a deep creek, known as Conaby, a mile or two further east, runs into the Roanoke river, on the south bank of which Plymouth is situated. It has four streets parallel with the river and five at right angles to it. Fort Williams, projecting beyond the south face of the parallelogram, is ready for action on all four sides and enfilades, right and left, the whole south front of the fortifications, while Battery Worth was built to command the west, water and land, approach. Between the latter and Warren's Neck was 85th Redoubt at Sanderson's house. At Boyle's steam mill near the road entering Second street from the west was another redoubt outside the entrenchments, and within the southwest angle still another at Harriet Toodles'. On the east centre was Fort Comfort, with a redoubt on either side of the Columbia road at James Bateman's and Charles Latham's. General Hoke ordered an assault from this (east) side by Ransom's Brigade. Accordingly that night our sharpshooters effected a crossing of Conaby creek on felled trees with some opposition. A pontoon bridge was laid, and before the night was far ad-



vanced, the brigade was over. With a line of skirmishers out in front, the brigade slept in line of battle, and perhaps never more soundly, for tired nature's sweet restorer was welcome, even on the eve of certain battle.

20 April. At the first break of day Ransom was again in the saddle, and his ringing voice came down the line: "Attention, brigade!" Every man was upon his feet instantly, and the adjusting of twisted blankets across the left shoulder and under the belt at the right hip was only the work of another moment; the line of battle was formed, "Fix bayonets," "Trail arms!" "Forward march!" and the charge began. The alignment was as follows: The Fifty-sixth on the right, flanked by Company I, as sharpshooters, (resting on the Roanoke and near the "Albemarle," then engaged, as it had been at intervals through the night, with Battery Worth on the river face of the town), and Twenty-fifth, Thirty-fifth, Eighth and Twenty-fourth successively on to the left. On our part of the line a large drove of cattle was encountered and driven on as a living wall between us and the enemy until they reached the canal, down which they refused to plunge, or escort us further. Maddened by this strange spectacle of "man's inhumanity to man," they turned about, and "with no reputation to lose," dashing through our line, sought safety in flight. The canal was found with steep banks, but fortunately with fordable water. Ranks were necessarily broken in getting across, but were soon in perfect order on the farther side, and the forward movement resumed. The next obstacle was a swamp, in places waist deep, through which the regiment floundered as best it could, impeded by the mire and cypress knees with which it abounded. The Fifty-sixth was the first through, and immediately reforming under an oblique fire from the left, charged up a slight hill, and routed the opposing regiment sheltered behind a fence of palings, here the outer line of the town. This and the adjacent houses blocked further advance in regimental line of battle.

But the halt here was only for a moment. Company I pressed straight forward, sweeping everything before them between Water street and the river bank, while the Twenty-fifth on getting through the swamp and finding the Fifty-sixth



in its front, debouched to the right and thus went up Water street between the Fifty-sixth and its detached company. At the same instant General Ransom, reaching this point, the Fifty-sixth moved off by the left flank and entered the town on the next street east, by filing to the right, left in front. Major Graham was at the extreme left, now head of column, and on gaining the open space about the county jail, deployed the regiment forward into line of battle, just in time to checkmate a battery of artillery taking position to rake the street with its guns. These movements and the obstacles encountered, again divided the regiment, carrying the Colonel and Lieutenant-Colonel back to Water street to direct the extreme right, while the Major, with eight companies, pressed forward to silence the artillery. The fire, delivered before we could reach them, was fortunately a little too high, the shells in a direct line being plainly visible as they passed over, and the guns were at once in our possession—not, however, until one brave fellow had blown up his limber in our faces, killing his nearest horses and wounding several of our men. It would be a pleasure here to record his name. The man retreating with the caisson was killed in the street, with four of his six horses, by a shell from Fort Williams.

This wing of the regiment, then, without waiting for any support, as all seemed to have enough to do, swept on fighting between these two streets the entire length of the town, and without a halt charged the redoubt in their front, constituting a west section of the enemy's heavy line of fortifications, facing front and rear. Here they captured a Pennsylvania regiment, and Major Graham, mounting the works with the regimental flag, waved it to Hoke's Brigade, now under Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis (afterwards Brigadier-General), and thus announced that the way was open on that side. In this last charge the Twenty-fourth went in abreast with us, having entered the town by the Columbia road, which leads into Second street, after crossing Conaby creek with a northwest trend and then midway changing to due west. While the Eighth and Thirty-fifth swung around to invest Fort Comfort, the Twenty-fourth overcoming all opposition before them at the Baten and Latham redoubts, pushed forward



and connected with our left flank as we struck the fortifications,—redoubt and entrenched camp.

Major Graham's prisoners, some 300 of infantry and artillery, were turned over to Captain Joseph G. Lockhart, when, under shelter of a ravine, uniting his battalion with Hoke's Brigade, he swept down first the west and then the south intrenchments to Fort Williams, into which General Wessels had withdrawn with the remnant of his army. The Twenty-fourth came up on the other side. After consultation with Colonel Lewis, it was deemed unnecessary to assault it, as its surrender would be compelled by our artillery with the aid of sharpshooters being rapidly posted to overlook its interior from the windows and tops of the nearest houses. The two opposing generals then met in a personal interview, and the demand to capitulate was refused. But the inevitable was soon acknowledged by raising a white flag, as we had silenced every gun in the fort.

Meantime, the part assigned to Harrill's men, under their fearless leader, had been as effectually accomplished. Through water hip deep, they had crossed the canal and swamp, and keeping near the river, passing around houses and bursting through garden and yard fences, they reached the rear of Battery Worth, containing the 200-pounder, specially provided to anticipate the coming of our iron-clad Albemarle. One volley was sufficient. The white flag was run up and the battery, with some twenty artillerymen, surrendered to him.

Taking the prisoners with them from this battery on the river, they immediately charged to their left and thus struck in the flank and rear the right section of the enemy's line of battle occupying the breastworks, here on Water street, facing up the river. His demand to surrender was promptly complied with, and while Harrill here gathered in his prisoners, largely outnumbering his own rank and file, Lewis' men who had held the attention of the enemy in their front, came in at a double-quick over the causeway leading through the swamp on the west of Plymouth, passed Harrill's position and joined Graham's detachment at the upper ravine further to the south, as above noted.

How does it happen, then, that the capture of Battery



Worth, or Fort Hal, noted above as by Company I, has been claimed for Company B, with whom were Colonel Faison and Colonel Dearing, a portion of the Twenty-fifth supporting the artillery? Both claims are literally true.

A correspondent to the *Fayetteville Observer*, 22 April, 1864, says: "On the river face of the town was a camp entrenched to resist any attack from the water, and a little lower down an earthwork for the same purpose." The latter, admitted to be Battery Worth, we must observe the distinction between the two, though close together.

As to the time of the first movement, Captain Harrill's report is embodied in the foregoing narration. General Wessells report: "At daylight the following day, 20 April, while my right and front were seriously threatened, the enemy advanced rapidly against my left, assaulting and carrying the line in that quarter, penetrating the town along the river and capturing Battery Worth." This left the entrenched camp not yet captured, and as no other Confederate troops were in that quarter at that early hour, the claim of Company I to Battery Worth is thus affirmed.

From this point of time General Wessells thus continues: "A line of skirmishers was formed from the breastworks perpendicularly towards the river in hopes of staying the advance. This effort succeeded for a time; but the troops seemed discouraged and fell back to the entrenchments."

The conduct of the Fifty-sixth was well calculated to create such discouragement, as it broke through all obstacles, driving the enemy from the streets, yards, houses, cellars, and bomb-proofs from which Major Graham says they came out like a colony of prairie puppies, or ground hogs on the 2d of February. As those not captured in this charge were thus gradually pressed back to their double-faced entrenchments, the infantry garrison in the entrenched camp at Battery Worth, guarding the water approach and, owing to the contour of the ground, not in sight from his side of the fortifications when Capt. Harrill some two hours before had taken the artillery-men out of the battery, appear now to have had their attention diverted from the commotion of the Albemarle down stream to their right and Hoke up the river to their left. They now



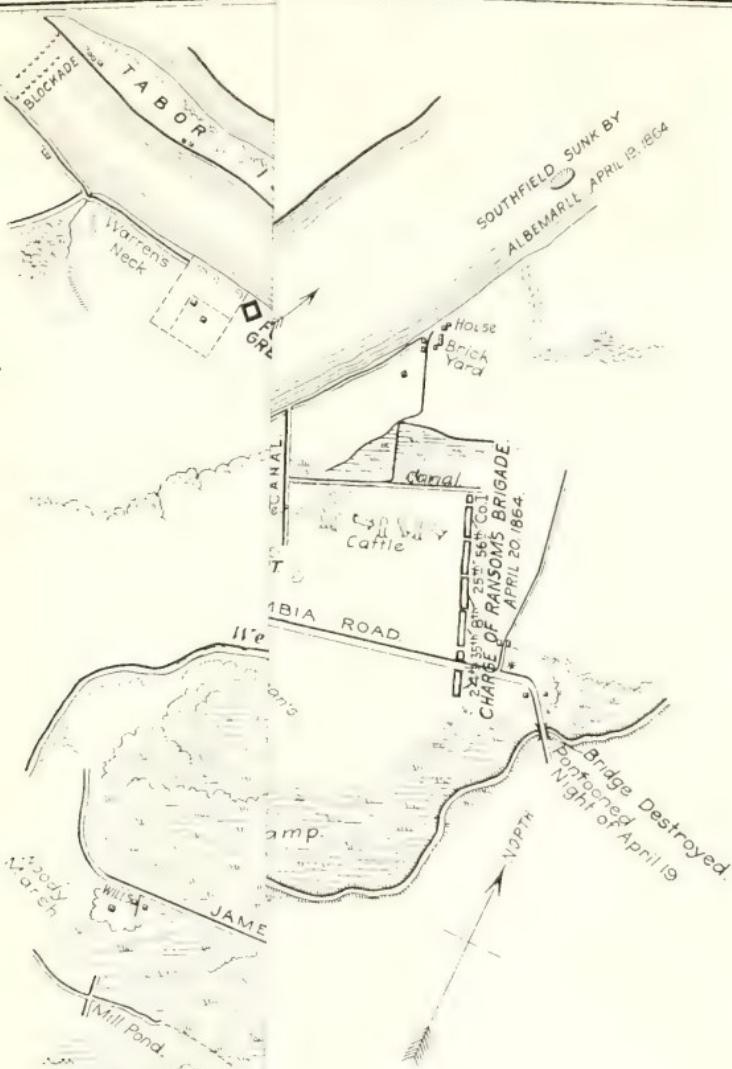
for the first time saw their enemy in the town, and were ready with the portion of the retreating line that had joined them, to enfilade Company B as it came up. Here Colonel Faison, with this gallant company under Captain F. N. Roberts, had his hands full for some time and accomplished important results, as described by the subsequent Captain, then First Sergeant A. R. Carver:

"In this charge our Lieutenant, B. W. Thornton, fell on Water street with a bullet through the side of his forehead near the eye. I stopped long enough to see the wound, and thought him dead; but he survived for a day or two. Our company had become detached by the evolutions and obstacles in getting through the town. Just before General Wessells capitulated, say by 9 or 10 o'clock, we had reached the vicinity of Fort Hal, with the 200-pound gun bearing on the river. It was full of the enemy, on whom we were firing with our rifles and they were briskly returning our fire. Colonel Faison came up to me during this firing, when I pointed to a hill on the right overlooking the fort, and said if the artillery were posted there, we would have the fort in five minutes. Soon after he left me, I saw our battery open from the hill, and immediately a white handkerchief was hoisted on a bayonet above the fort. I was very near and ran for the fort. General Dearing got across the moat and into the fort ahead of me, and jumped on the big gun as if he were going to spike it, when I met an officer at the gate and demanded his surrender. He asked to be allowed to surrender to some higher officer. I called General Dearing and he told him to surrender to me. He thereupon handed over his sword and pistol, which I kept during the war. I think he belonged to the infantry. He had on his overcoat."

So there were two captures of the same fort, separated by an interval of two or three hours.

General Dearing (Colonel at Plymouth), subsequently fell 6 April, 1865, at High Bridge, on the retreat towards Appomattox Court House, in a hand-to-hand contest with Major Read, of General Ord's staff, both antagonists going down together. The big gun was naturally the chief attraction to him, and of course he believed to the day of his death that his





## MAP OF MOUTH AND DEFENCES

April 17-20, 1864

by R. D. Graham, 56th Reg. N.C.S.T.

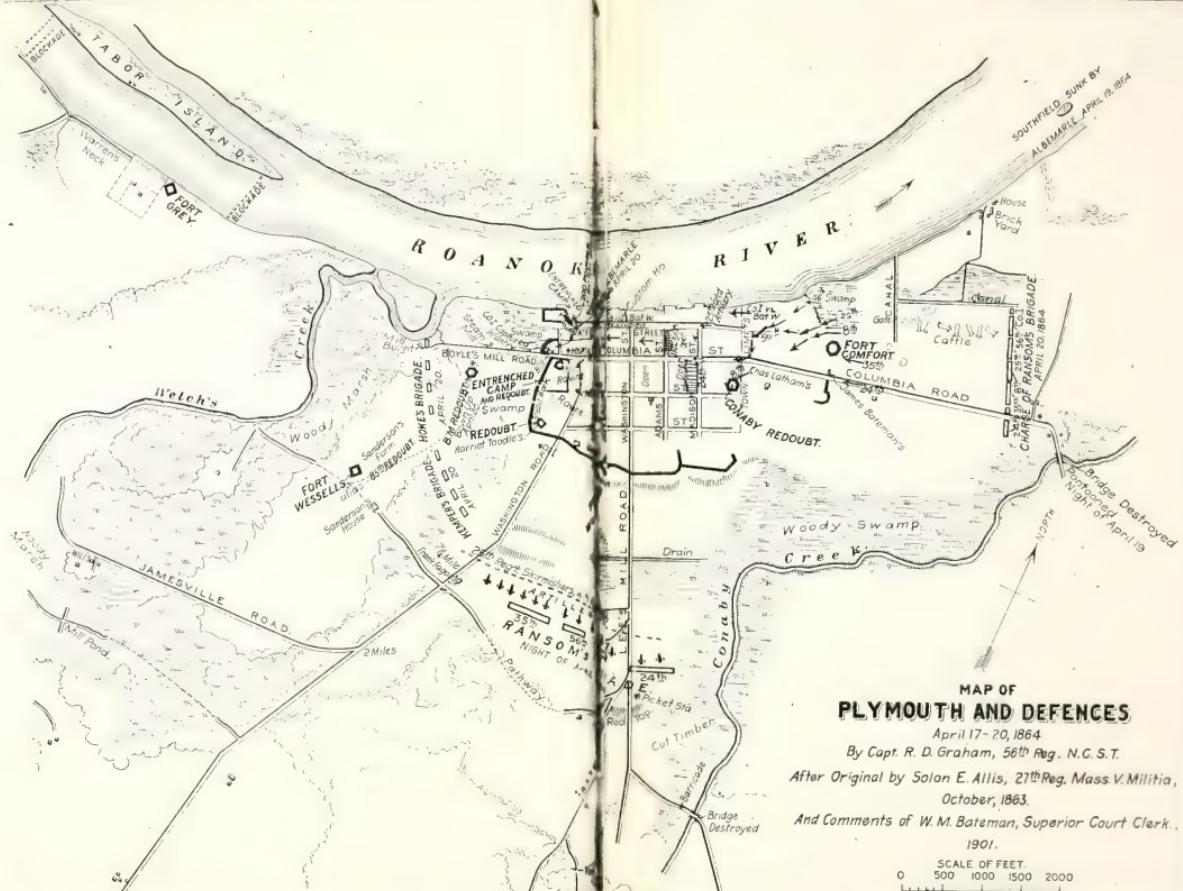
by Solon E. Allis, 27th Reg. Mass. V. Militia,  
October, 1863.

5 of W. M. Bateman, Superior Court Clerk.

1901.

SCALE OF FEET.  
0 500 1000 1500 2000





## MAP OF PLYMOUTH AND DEFENCES

April 17-20, 1864

By Capt. R. D. Graham, 56<sup>th</sup> Reg. N.C.S.T.

After Original by Solon E. Allis, 27<sup>th</sup> Reg. Mass V. Militia,  
October, 1863.

And Comments of W. M. Bateman, Superior Court Clerk.,

1901.

SCALE OF FEET  
0 500 1000 1500 2000



portion of the line had captured it, whereas it clearly appears that it had been silent for at least two hours, ever since Captain Harrill carried off the artillerymen who had served it. It was the infantry of the adjoining entrenched camp, together with some others, who had taken refuge in the vacant fort, that he and Colonel Faison so effectually silenced; and we may say in the spirit of the generous Schley, "there was glory enough for all."

The possibilities of such independent actions by detachments may be better understood when it is remarked that within the fortifications on the west side were three ravines, and on an elevation between the lower one and the river was planted Battery Worth, with the entrenched camp lower down. The redoubt at Boyle's steam mill on the road on this side of the town, appears to have been blown up by a shell entering its magazine, and so it offered no resistance to our infantry, while that at Harriet Toodle's, about the southwest angle, and the intervening entrenched camps were taken with the connecting breastworks.

The writer was near General Hoke when he received General Wessels, accompanied by his officers, as his prisoner. There was everything in his courteous and considerate bearing to lessen the sting of defeat. Dismounting from his horse and clasping the captive's hand, he assured him of his respect and sympathy, and added: "After such a gallant defense you can bear the fortune of war without self-reproach."

General Wessels' official report, made after his exchange four months later, says that Hoke's conduct was courteous and soldier-like. His return of casualties, killed, wounded and missing was 127 officers and 2,707 men, from the Sixteenth Connecticut Infantry, Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, Second North Carolina (Union) Infantry, Twelfth New York Cavalry, Eighty-fifth New York Infantry, Twenty-fourth New York Battery, and One Hundred and First and One Hundred and Third Pennsylvania Infantry. Besides 3,000 stand of small arms and some twenty pieces of artillery, there was a large quantity of all other supplies.

In our advance there were no shirks. The respective muster rolls might be exhibited as lists of those deserving hon-



orable mention. The splendid conduct of Color Guard Corporal Job. C. Hughes, of Camden county, is here gratefully remembered.

The regimental colors were carried by a Sergeant, later on given the rank of Ensign by the Confederate Congress, and he was supported by eight volunteer Corporals. This guard of three ranks in line of battle formed the extreme left of the right centre company. This position fell to Company D, and was retained by it to the end of the war. It was thus in the assault upon the redoubt beyond the head of Second street that the Captain of this company found Hughes at his side while a blue coat in front was drawing a bead on him within a space less than the width of the street—"Hughes, kill that Yank," followed, and the enemy's aim was as deliberately changed to save his own life. There was one report from two rifles, and both men went down. It was the last shot ever fired by the Federal. His sight was as good as that of his foeman, his minie ball perforating Hughes' blanket thirteen times, as it was twisted and worn as above described, but ended with the penetration of the breast-bone—probably owing to his not having driven the ball home in too rapidly loading his piece. Within about a month he was at his post again. He was a brother of the gallant Captain of Company A. In this charge the brave Corporal Wm. Daves, volunteer to the Color Guard from Company I, was killed, and J. P. Sossaman, of Company K, was also severely wounded at the flag.

The "Albemarle" had advanced along the river front with the charge, firing over the line. The honor of capturing Fort Comfort on our left, fell to the Thirty-fifth North Carolina and it was renamed Fort Jones in honor of its Colonel.

General Hoke was thereupon promoted to Major-General in recognition of this successful initiation of his campaign, and of a well earned record for gallantry and efficiency in the Army of Northern Virginia, and Colonel Dearing was made a Brigadier-General. Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis was soon thereafter promoted to Brigadier-General.

In the Fifty-sixth Regiment, we have one complete company report of casualties:



Company D: Mortally wounded, James W. Hall, John W. Holsenback, and Simpson Riley—3. Severely wounded, Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson, Corporals G. W. Montgomery, and Wm. W. Redding, Privates Wm. F. G. Barbee, D. W. King, Cyrus Laws, James R. Miller, Burroughs Pool, James Roberts, Lewellyn Taylor, Thomas J. Taylor, Harris Wilkerson—12. The commander of the company and others were also struck, but not put *hors du combat*. In Company F, Lieutenant V. J. Palmer, bravely leading Company F, was severely wounded as we passed the court house. Lieutenant B. W. Thornton, of Company B, was mortally wounded, the ball entering just above the eye, and coming out near the ear, but was still able, though his sight was gone, to recognize the writer when he visited him with other wounded that evening. He was a faithful and efficient soldier from Fayetteville. The other regiments of the brigade also bore conspicuous parts. One company, at least, of the Fifty-sixth, and perhaps nearly the whole regiment, here secured a complete equipment of first class rifles.

Company I was most fortunate in doing its gallant part, having none permanently disabled and the ever faithful Daves at the colors being its only man killed to-day.

Since writing the above we have found in the files of the *Fayetteville Observer*, 9 May, 1864, the report of Adjutant John W. Faison, and give the casualties accordingly:

COMPANY A—Killed: L. Sawyer. Wounded: Sergeant S. Smith, Corporal T. G. Ferrell, Wm. Garrett, J. C. Hughes (in breast), J. H. Johnson, Henry Williams, Wm. Gallopp and Wm. Gilbert.

COMPANY B—Wounded: Lieutenant B. W. Thornton, mortally, Sergeant L. H. Hurst, W. Carver, J. T. Moore, Wm. Handy and R. H. Averitt.

COMPANY C—Wounded: J. S. Sawyer, B. Hackney, J. Howard, R. Pendergrast, L. Williams and J. Parker.

COMPANY D—(Given above, 3 killed, 12 wounded).

COMPANY E—Wounded: Lieutenant J. M. Jacobs, Sergeant A. Harrill, Corporal Wm. Turner, H. McNeill, H. Wheeler, W. H. Holland, W. H. McBryde, W. H. Thomas and Joseph Banks.



**COMPANY F**—Lieutenant V. J. Palmer, Corporal A. Nolan, Allen Cogdale, Adney Cogdale, Wm. Chitwood, H. M. Gladden, J. G. Webb, J. W. Lindsay, T. P. Cabiniss and N. W. Ross.

**COMPANY G**—Killed: T. W. Nobbin and Izark D. Kinzey; wounded, H. Allen, E. Carlin, J. Hollingsworth, L. M. Green, H. Perry, Leroy Smith, and S. Taylor.

**COMPANY H**—Wounded: Lieutenant S. R. Holton, C. Donoho mortally, T. J. Barnwell, N. Fox, T. Gately, J. Miles, D. Miller, B. J. Page, Wm. Thompson, D. Thompson and J. Chisenhall.

**COMPANY I**—Killed: Wm. Daves, T. R. Campbell, Sam Green, H. Harrill, J. P. Philbeck, H. W. Price and R. H. Wall.

**COMPANY K**—Wounded: John Strider, J. P. Sossaman and W. Auten.

In the same issue is found the report of Captain S. H. Gee, Assistant Adjutant and Inspector General, giving Ransom's total casualties in the three days' operations, as follows:

	Killed.		Wounded.		Total.
	Officers.	Men.	Officers.	Men.	
8th N. C. T.	2	18	5	102	127
24th "	2	11	3	85	101
25th "	0	3	0	20	23
35th "	1	19	4	84	108
56th "	0	4	4	80	88
Maj. Moseley's B. Art.	0	0	0	17	17
Maj. Read's "	0	2	1	9	12
	—	—	—	—	—
	5	57	17	397	476

The surrender, already noted, took place at 10:30 a. m. Several interesting, though partial, accounts of this affair were published in the *Fayetteville Observer* soon after the battle.

21 April. Major J. W. Graham, with Company I, Twenty-fourth, Captain Boykin; Company K, Twenty-fifth, Lieutenant Bullerson; and Company D, Fifty-sixth, Captain R. D. Graham, was placed in charge of Fort Gray on Warren's Neck.

22 April. Visited by the commanding Major-General, who found the post in much better order than we had.



25 April. Detachment rejoined the brigade. At 10 a. m. the column set out for Washington, N. C., leaving as a garrison at Plymouth Martin's North Carolina Brigade, which has just joined us.

26 April. Arrived in front of Washington, N. C. Some shells thrown at us from the enemy's forts. The enemy withdrew during the night to concentrate at New Bern. Thus the second point in the campaign was scored in Hoke's favor, this time without the loss of a man.

28 April—2 May. At Greenville probably awaiting the arrival of the Confederate marines and pontoons from Richmond. Crossed the Tar river here and Contentnea creek at Coward's bridge, where we were joined by Whitford's Sixty-seventh North Carolina State Troops.

5 May. We passed the Neuse on a pontoon bridge, not far from where we left the Contentnea. On nearing New Bern, Lewis' Brigade made a dash upon the redoubts at Deep Gully; but the enemy fled to avoid capture. The main column then crossed the Trent River at Pollocksville, captured a block house near a mill dam, and took position near the railroad bridge. Dearing's cavalry and artillery moved to the south and captured the block house on Brice's creek that General Barton thought such a Gibraltar last February, and took fifty prisoners. A section of Dixon's North Carolina Battery, from Orange county, under Lieutenant Haleott P. Jones, supported by part of Evans' South Carolina Brigade, now under General "Live Oak" Walker, moved to the front and engaged the enemy's railroad iron-clad monitor. Ransom's Brigade was not far from the south bank of the Trent.

Preparations were made for putting in the river that night a pontoon bridge, first parallel with the stream, securing it to the bank at the lower end and swinging the other across with the current under the protection of our guns, to the New Bern side within the enemy's line of fortifications. The spirit of the troops assured success, and thus was to culminate our North Carolina campaign of 1864.

#### PETERSBURG AND RICHMOND.

6 May. The intended assault has been abandoned, and



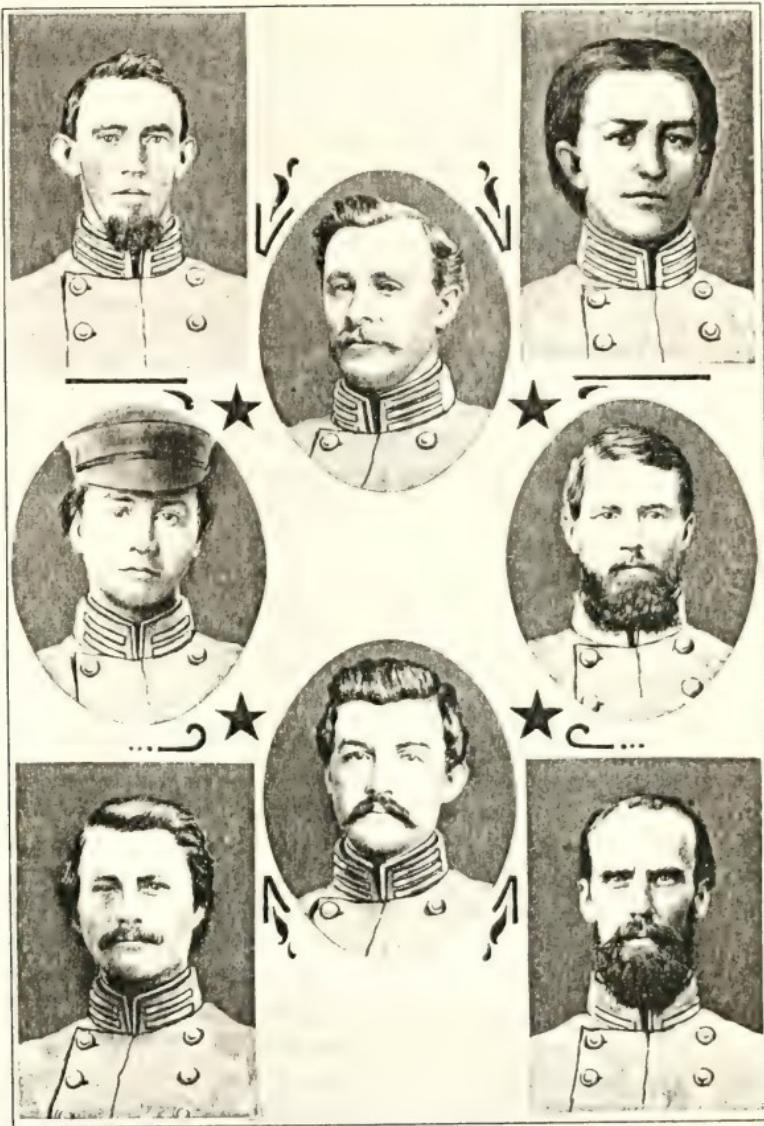
General Palmer, U. S. A., is left in quiet possession of New Bern; for the morning finds us on a forced march for old Virginia again. General Benjamin Franklin Butler is coming up the south side of the James river *via* Bermuda Hundreds, with 30,000 men to attack Petersburg. If possible, we must get there first. General R. F. Hoke, in a recent letter, says: "Your mention of what was intended at New Bern is correct and I had no doubt of its success. The recall was one of the greatest disappointments I ever had."

8 May. Reach Kinston at 8 a. m. and *via* Goldsboro proceed to Weldon.

9 May. Off for Petersburg by rail as far as Jarratt's Station. Here Kautz's Federal cavalry have dashed in and cut the line of railway. March thence along the track to Stony creek, about twenty miles, that night. The weird hooting of the great owls in the swamps was almost human in its intonations and called forth comments, half in earnest and half in raillery, here and there along the line, such as: "That is a bad sign, boys; hard times in old Virginia, and worse a'coming."

10 May. At Stony creek we take the trains that have come out to meet us, and are soon in Petersburg. Stack arms on Poplar Lawn. The generous hospitality of Judge Lyon, Wm. R. Johnson, and other citizens is pleasantly remembered. Hear that the place has been held till our arrival by the single brigade of Johnson Hagood's South Carolinians. Lieutenant-General D. H. Hill, too earnest to be long quiet, is occupying the anomalous position of volunteer Aid-de-Camp to General Beauregard, commanding at Petersburg, pending a dispute with the President as to an assignment proper to his rank. (This quarrel seems to have resulted in a failure to present his appointment to the Congress for confirmation.) He was noted for a disposition "to feed the enemy;" and on such occasions his feelings were very rough. Our *coup de main* of 2 July, 1863, at Crump's farm below Richmond, he had just repeated here with more terrible odds, against General Butler's advancing column. With this handful of men, he had met him near Chester and made such a desperate assault as to put him on the defensive to await





#### FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

- |                                           |                                            |
|-------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| 1. Otis P. Mills, Captain, Co. G.         | 5. Jos. M. Walker, 1st Lieut., Co. I.      |
| 2. A. C. Robertson, Ord'ly-Sergt., Co. G. | 6. C. P. Tanner, 2d Lieut., Co. I.         |
| 3. W. G. Graves, Captain, Co. H.          | 7. J. F. McNeely, Captain, Co. K.          |
| 4. L. Harrill, Captain, Co. I.            | 8. J. W. Shepherd, 1st Lieut., Co. K.      |
| 9. Chas. M. Payne, 2d Lieut., Co. K.      | (Picture in Supplementary Group, 4th vol.) |



further developments. In the time thus gained reinforcements arrived, and we knew that with the Army of Northern Virginia we could successfully hold Richmond and Petersburg against all opposing forces then in the field. With Major-General Hoke, there were now Ransom's North Carolina, Lewis' North Carolina, Walker's (formerly Evans') South Carolina, Corse's Virginia, and Kemper's Virginia Brigades. This division took position a short distance beyond Swift creek.

11 May. Moved to Half-Way House. The enemy now appears in great force between us and Petersburg, occupying both the railroad and turnpike. We offer battle; but nothing follows beyond some sharp skirmishing. Ransom's Brigade forms the extreme Confederate left, near the river.

#### BATTLE OF 12 MAY.

12 May. This brigade is moved across the turnpike and posted near the winter quarters on rising ground to the right, facing Petersburg, forming now the right flank. In the afternoon, advanced down the railroad towards Petersburg, and occupied breastworks at a point near where the fortified line crosses this road. Here the line terminates after changing its general course and running off at almost a right angle (towards the river on the left near \_\_\_\_\_ house). Our artillery is engaged with that of the enemy in the woods to the front. A line of skirmishers is scarcely formed and thrown out to our right and rear for a reconnaissance under "the fighting Quartermaster of the Forty-ninth," Captain Cicero Durham, when they receive a volley from a line of battle in ambush, and this gallant leader and many of his brave comrades have fought their last fight. A rush is made by the enemy, and Generals Hoke and Ransom, just arrived at the house for consultation, barely escape capture. On came the line as to an easy victory, but not as quick as was our command in leaping to the other side of the breastworks. After a sharp fight they were repulsed by the well-directed shots of a portion of the Fifty-sixth Regiment holding the top of the steep bank of earth, while their comrades in the deep ditch below handed up their rifles as rapidly



as they could be reloaded. There were here many instances of individual bravery, and it is a matter of regret that the State, at whose call these men offered their lives, has no fuller account of them. In Company B, D. P. Blizzard was killed, and the gallant A. R. Carver, then a Lieutenant and subsequently Captain, lost an arm. David McKee, of Company D, Orange county, is now remembered as among the conspicuous ones in the position which he occupied, and from which he fired sixteen times with steady aim, and it is thought, with fatal effect, at such close quarters. When the exposed portion of the brigade, after resisting the assault upon it, had been withdrawn behind this effective fire, the Fifty-sixth as rear guard, retired in perfect order. They had simply practised the tactics of Forrest and checkmated a rear attack of the enemy. "Face about and get in their rear," was his only order for a similar occasion. The perfect discipline of the command was evinced by there being no sign of a panic. Thomas Owens and George Griffin, of Company I, were also among those who displayed coolness and courage in this action, the former being severely wounded. From exposure he had lost his voice so that he could not speak above a whisper. The wound directly above his breast instantaneously cured his *aphonia*.

But the enemy is evidently in such force that we concentrate upon our second line of defences. Each side watches for the initiative from the other. At night there is cheering along our lines, and the cause is that Beauregard has just come in from Petersburg.

#### SECOND DAY'S FIGHT.

13 May. The writer saw Beauregard on the field. Of medium size and military bearing, his most striking feature is his sharp bright eye, and a thoughtful, intelligent expression befitting his reputation as one of the best military engineers. Firing kept up through the day by the artillery and skirmishers.

#### THIRD DAY'S FIGHT.

14 May. Brigadier-General Ransom is severely wounded



in the left arm by a minie ball and does not return to the brigade till the fall. Colonel Wm. J. Clarke, of the Twenty-fourth, as senior Colonel, succeeds him. Battle at long range continued through the day.

#### FOURTH DAY'S FIGHT.

15 May. Yesterday's program continued, in which we again lose a brigade commander, Colonel Clarke being wounded in the shoulder by the fragment of a shell. Colonel Leroy M. McAfee, of the Forty-ninth, then assumes command. The Fifty-sixth occupied a position on the line near the Washington Artillery, of New Orleans.

Without the means of corroboration, I here note that we hear that the President, who has come down from Richmond, orders General Beauregard to make a general assault to-morrow, and that Beauregard files a protest, in view of the terrible odds against his available force—at least 3 to 2, probably double that—and protected by breastworks.

#### BATTLE OF DREWRY'S BLUFF.

16 May. Soon after midnight the brigade is moved from the trenches, occupied for the last three days, and formed in line of battle across the turnpike, facing towards Petersburg, with the left of the Fifty-sixth resting on the turnpike. Up to this time it was thought we were going out to get a rest. This opinion, however, was dispelled by the issuing of an extra quantity of cartridges. But for the first time in our history, we start in on the reserve line. Just before dawn we move forward supporting Bushrod R. Johnson's Tennessee Brigade. They suffer severely near the turnpike, their advance being impeded by obstructions of telegraph wire upon which many of them are tripped within deadly range. But they gallantly carry the line in their front, while our Twenty-fourth and Forty-ninth take the enemy's line of works in a piece of woods to their right. The assault is, as Mr. Davis had predicted, successful at every point; while Major-General Robert Ransom, having come out from Richmond with three Brigades, is sweeping down their left flank, and rear, capturing some regiments entire. Before Ransom



reaches them, spasmodic efforts here and there are made to regain lost points along the line, from which we had dislodged them; but they are repulsed in each instance. They rush down the turnpike with their artillery nearly to our lines, just taken from them, and open fire; but their guns are soon in our hands, men and horses going down under the terrible fire with which they are met. It was not far from this point that the writer saw the President during this battle. He was probably nearer Butler than he had been for four years, as his courier whom we captured in the vicinity, said he was then very near the general. (At the National Democratic Convention of 1860, in Charleston, S. C., Butler gave fifty-seven successive votes for Davis as his choice for President of the United States.)

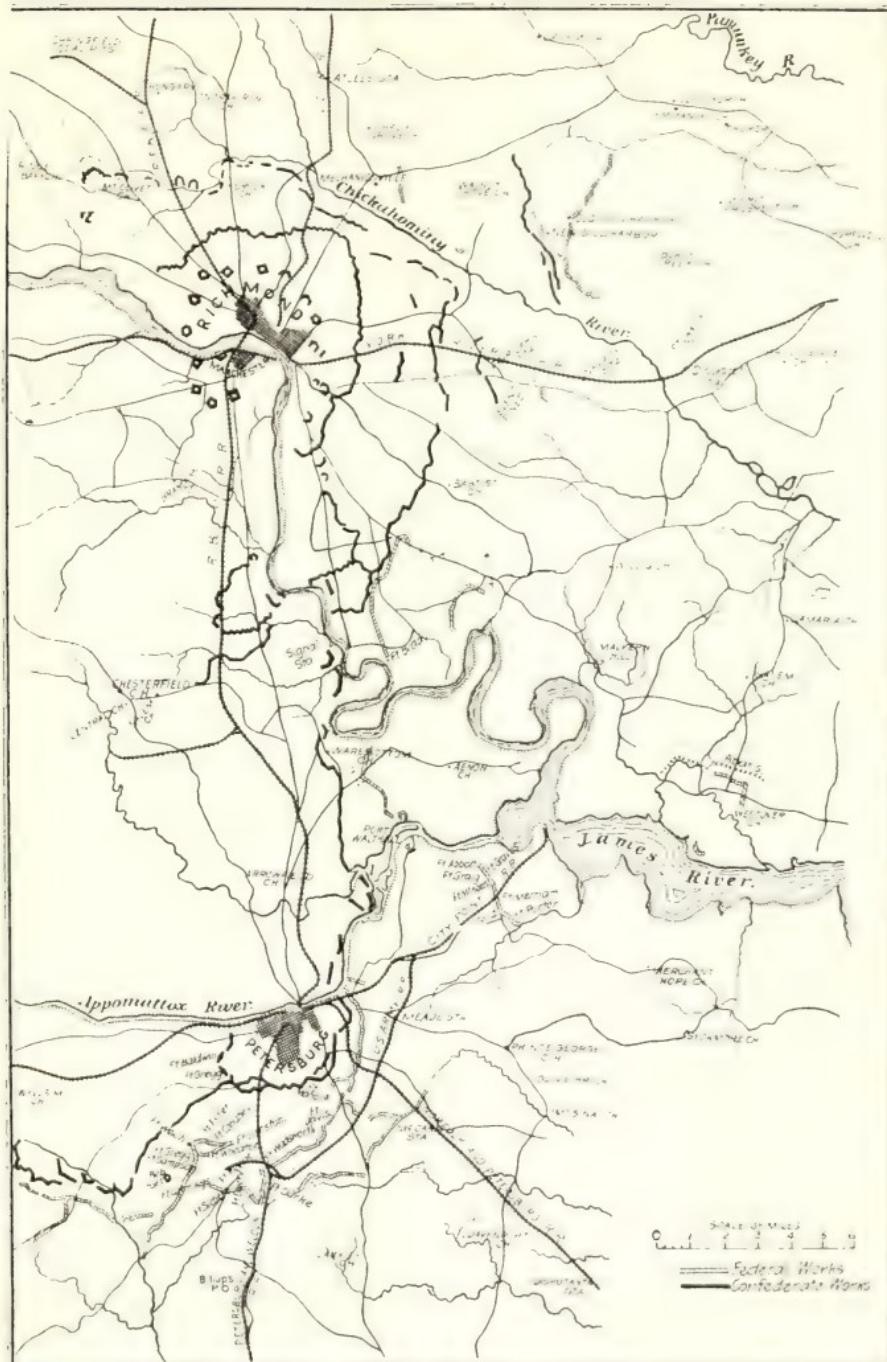
And now we waited anxiously for the attacks to be made on the right flank and rear of the enemy by General Whiting with the two or three brigades in his hands on the Petersburg side. But in vain! This plan carried out with the courage for which the General had already made a reputation among the bravest and the best soldiers in the Army of Northern Virginia, should have resulted in the capture of all Butler's artillery and wagons, (that he was safely withdrawing in our sight), and a good portion of his Army of the James. General D. H. Hill was with General Whiting, but without command. Both his prayers and imprecations to deliver the *coup de grace* were without avail. Is it an evil genius that thus hovers above the Confederate cross? For this is not the first time that it has been checked on the high tide to an effective victory by a voice that certainly came not out of the North, saying: "Thus far shall thou go, and no farther."

The only casualty remembered in the regiment as of to-day is the mortally wounding of Green Bowers, of Company D, by a rifle ball which also went through an artillery horse near him on the front line.

#### BUTLER BOTTLED UP.

17 May. Though we have not captured Butler, we have "bottled him up" (as General Grant reports it to Mr. Lincoln), between the James and Appomattox rivers, and a





Region embraced in the Operations of the Armies  
against  
**RICHMOND and PETERSBURG, VA.**  
Reduced from Map of the Engineer Bureau, War Dept



much smaller force will be amply sufficient to hold our shorter line across the narrow neck from bend to bend of the here converging rivers, which lower down diverge considerably before uniting, thus suggesting General Grant's figure. Our line extends from near Bermuda Hundreds on the former to a point in the vicinity of the Confederate Fort Clifton on the latter. D. H. Hill urges another assault.

18 May. With a picket line advanced, we throw up a counter line of works, receiving a shelling from Butler's gun-boats.

19 May. Company D is out in front, some 500 yards to the right of the Howlett house, rectifying the line of rifle pits to conform to the possible line of attack and defence. Consultation with General W. G. Lewis, recently promoted from Lieutenant-Colonel to Brigadier-General, and well known as an engineer of ability, who appears on the line.

#### BATTLE OF WARE BOTTOM CHURCH, OR CLAY'S FARM.

20 May. Companies B and H, Captains F. N. Roberts and W. G. Graves, relieve Company D, which joins the regiment. About 2 p. m., Beauregard makes a general assault from right to left on Butler's line, and drives it in three-quarters of a mile on the right, and something less on the left. Our troops on this part of the line were put in too spasmodically, in unsupported detachments, allowing the enemy to reinforce from point to point as successively threatened, or to make a counter-charge and flank movement with fresh troops against ours before they could recover from the disorder incident to a headlong rush into the contested positions. The fight upon the part of the Fifty-sixth ended with the enemy's picket line, from which we had driven their advanced line of battle, in our possession. The loss to the Fifty-sixth was 90 killed and wounded in less than half as many minutes, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke being one of the wounded. In Company D, as follows: Washington Blackwood, Jesse Clark, John Clark, James Hicks, Elzy Riley, James Roberts, Wm. N. Simmes and Corporal J. Erwin Laycock; also James M. Clark, Ensign, and Jesse Brown and William E. Faucett, all wounded. Jesse Brown, like Corporal Hughes at Ply-



mouth, had his twisted blanket pierced a dozen times by a minie ball which burnt his arm without breaking the bone, and he will return to duty in a few days. The Captain of Company D promoted Solon E. Birkhead from private to First Sergeant for conspicuous bravery in this battle, known as the battle of Ware Bottom Church, or Clay's Farm. Among the wounded in Company H was Lieutenant R. W. Belo, who lost a foot. Company I lost some of its best men: Sergeant Amos Harrill (brother of the Captain), Corporal W. C. Beam, George Griffin and the brothers, Jack and Joe Tessenear, all killed, and twelve men wounded. Company A here lost a great favorite in the killing of the brave Isaac G. Gallopp.

21 May. Busy strengthening the new line, and 22 May Lieutenant Charles R. Wilson and others rejoined the company, having been wounded at Plymouth.

23 May. Flag of truce to bury the dead on the contested ground between the two lines. A ghastly sight. Some are not recovered, as they fell within the enemy's lines, three days ago—a sad uncertainty around some hearthstones until peace on earth shall return again. Information is obtained of the gallant "Live Oak" Walker, whom we met on the field just to our right, 20 May, in command of Evans' (S. C.) Brigade, Colonel Elliott now commanding. The enemy report him doing well after the amputation of his leg.

Some of the casualties of the last week's operations were:

COMPANY B—Killed: D. P. Blizzard; wounded, Lieutenant A. R. Carver and John Tart.

COMPANY C—Wounded: Corporal J. Matthews and Wm. Childers.

COMPANY E—Sergeant J. N. Clark and B. Garner; wounded, B. F. Sikes.

COMPANY G—Killed: James Tucker; wounded, R. P. Smith and C. Love.

COMPANY H—Wounded: Sergeant T. J. Montague, Corporal N. A. Horne, David May, J. O. Seoggins, Sergeant S. A. Thompson, Corporal H. C. Murchison, W. F. Lackey (supposed killed), H. Bledsoe, J. Bolin, G. W. Bogle, S. L.



Carden, John Lee, F. Patterson, T. J. Peel, M. Stewart, J. H. Vickers, W. S. Whitaker, G. Roberts, W. T. Patterson. Missing: N. P. Combs, J. L. Casote and J. S. Massey.

COMPANY K—Wounded: Sergeant J. J. McNeely, G. W. Edwards, Z. Morgan and A. C. Shields.

COMPANY I—Wounded: Sergeant C. P. Tanner, G. W. Spurlin, D. P. Smart, J. M. Michael, J. W. Campe and J. J. Morton.

COMPANY F—Wounded: Lieutenant J. R. Grigg, W. C. Wolf, M. Crowder.

25 May. In the romantic intimacy that has sprung up between the pickets of the two opposing armies, a soldier in the Twenty-fifth North Carolina lends his pick to a Yankee to dig his rifle pit, a new one being made necessary by our last move upon them; and the blue coat returns it after completing the job.

31 May. Major-General Hoke, with his division, consisting now of Clingman's North Carolina, Martin's North Carolina, Hagood's South Carolina and Colquitt's Georgia Brigades is ordered to Cold Harbor.

2 June. A demonstration in force by us is made along the whole of the line between the two rivers, leaving the enemy's right intact, but pushing back their left some 400 yards, while in the centre the ground lost by them in the first assault is recovered by a counter-charge. During the whole night our pickets kept up a rapid firing.

During this week General Bushrod R. Johnson receives a commission as Major-General, and to him are assigned Ransom's North Carolina, Evans' South Carolina (commanded by General Elliott, promoted to succeed Walker), Gracie's Alabama, and Wise's Virginia Brigades. This division now holds Butler in the bottle by guarding the shortened line from the Howlett house (near Dutch Gap), to Fort Clifton. Captains Grigg and Graham, with two companies of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, relieve the picket line just before day, and find that the innocent fireflies have caused much of the commotion of the night, the men firing at the flicker without waiting for the crack of a



rifle or the sound of a bullet. No more ammunition was wasted in such mimicry of war.

3 June, 1864. Grant, at 5 a. m., renews the assault at Cold Harbor, pressing up to our works in solid columns. But the contest is over in sixty minutes, and they are repulsed with a loss of 12,737 (as per official report), many of these being negroes. An advance is again ordered by him at 8 a. m., but his men refuse to move. He had doubtless hoped to make these assaults the culmination of his "Wilderness Campaign." The former Adjutant of the Fifty-sixth, now Assistant Adjutant General of Lane's North Carolina Brigade, was the bearer of General Lee's reply to General Grant's proposition that both parties might bury their dead and attend to their wounded. General Lee, having none uncared for, declined this, and only yielded when General Grant formally asked to be allowed to care for his own.

4 June. Ransom's Brigade, Colonel H. M. Rutledge commanding, proceeds to Bottom's bridge on the Chickahominy, below Richmond, and reports to Major-General Robert Ransom. Colonel Rutledge is taken sick and sent to the hospital and the command of the Brigade goes to Colonel Paul F. Faison, of the Fifty-sixth, Lieutenant-Colonel Luke commanding the regiment.

5 June. The Forty-ninth and Fifty-sixth are posted near the railroad bridge.

7 June. Company K, Captain F. R. Alexander, and Company D, Captain R. D. Graham on picket line near the stream. Our friends, the enemy, make a proposition to us, the Dutch Captain declaring, "I would like to keep de beace-able as far as possiple." We agree that long range isolated sharpshooting shall not be indulged in. They were Pennsylvania dismounted cavalry.

9 June. Brigade marched to Chaffin's farm, and occupied the winter quarters at Fort Harrison. The rest is very much enjoyed, and a number of us visit friends belonging to the Confederate fleet in the James.

13 June. In touching distance of our baggage to-day for the first time since we crossed the State line—over a month since. Such is war.



## INVESTMENT OF PETERSBURG BEGUN.

15 June. Crossing the James on a pontoon bridge at Drewry's Bluff, we marched all night to Petersburg.

16 June. The Fifty-sixth is detached at Pocahontas Bridge, and held in readiness to report to General Gracie, commanding the Alabama Brigade, if called for, at Swift Creek. The rest of the Brigade under Colonel Faison reports to General Beauregard on the line of intrenchments to the east of Petersburg, and south of the Appomattox river. The head of Grant's army is now on the south side of the James and advancing from City Point. Petersburg is evidently the new objective point. Hoke's Division has here met their first assault, and after a very stubborn contest, retired from a section of the outer line near Jordan's house. Beauregard with this reinforcement, makes a counter-charge, and re-establishes the original line. This is on the south of the Appomattox, and out near the Baxter road. Here Captain John C. Pegram, our efficient Adjutant-General, was mortally wounded while placing the Brigade in position.

Late this evening the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, being joined by the Forty-ninth North Carolina returning from the position just named, where the brigade had been hotly engaged, and well handled, under Colonel Faison, moves out to Swift Creek, and uniting with Gracie's Brigade, the column advances under that gallant officer, driving Butler back to Bermuda Hundreds and establishing a junction with Pickett's Division coming down from Richmond. The enemy had torn up the Richmond & Petersburg Railroad at the point of crossing the turnpike.

Having thus put Butler back into his bottle, we turn the cork over to Pickett's Division, the line now confronting him again being the same that was occupied by Beauregard's army immediately after the defeat of Butler at Ware Bottom Church 20 May. The emergency had compelled Beauregard to quietly abandon for the time this position to meet Grant's advance from City Point, posting Gracie at Swift Creek to check Butler in any attempt to enter Petersburg from the north side of the Appomattox.

17 June. Morning finds us crossing the Appomattox



again, with scarcely an hour's rest, and that was spent in waiting for a train. The Forty-ninth and Fifty-sixth immediately go into line of battle, with our brigade, about a mile to the east of Petersburg, and extending at a right angle south from the Jerusalem road. Here we throw up a new line of breastworks. After some very desperate fighting, in which the three other regiments bore their full share, in front of this position, Beauregard found the original line here untenable with such odds against him, and had withdrawn thus far, preserving each organization, but losing several pieces of artillery, especially in Graham's Petersburg Battery. Johnson's Tennessee Brigade is said to have sustained the heaviest losses. In this new position a box of cartridges upon one of our men of the Fifty-sixth was exploded by the concussion of a bullet from the enemy—the only instance recollectec during the war. Here, too, First Lieutenant Jos. B. Coggins, of Company D, a brave and efficient officer, from South Lowell, Orange county, was mortally wounded.

#### VOLUNTARY NIGHT CHARGE OF 17 JUNE.

About dark, word is passed along the line that General Beauregard says that if we will hold our own until 10 o'clock, all will be well. The "King of Spades" did not explain. So the guess lay between whether we would then get a rest, or have the privilege of digging another hole in the ground.

Before the time is up, and without other troops taking our place, Ransom's Brigade was rapidly moved down the rear of the line, by the left flank, and took position in some pine woods near the Baxter road. In a short time the line was advanced and took position on the open ground in front. The men supposed we were supporting a line of battle in our front held by Wise's Brigade; but the fact was that they had been overpowered and compelled to abandon this position.

We were now the only line between the enemy and Petersburg. This was soon made evident by a terrible volley, which killed among others, that fearless and most competent officer, and courteous gentleman, Captain Frank R. Alexander, of Mecklenburg, as he was advancing to make a reconnoissance with his splendid Company (K). From the cap-



tured line the brigade was now exposed to the rapid fire of a double line of battle, the flash of their guns coming both from the ditch and over the embankments above it in its rear, as they now faced us. No organization could wait for orders or live in short range of such a fire. We must make a change of base immediately. With a simultaneous impulse the brigade arose and dashed forward. In a few minutes the line was ours, and the roar of musketry over. The Thirty-fifth met with the fiercest resistance, and in their hand-to-hand struggle in the works, lost their own stand of colors temporarily and took two from the enemy. In this charge was also the Twenty-second South Carolina, of Elliott's Brigade, gallantly moving forward with the first on the left, and sweeping the enemy's line before them. The complete casualties cannot now be given; but the heaviest loss was sustained by the Thirty-fifth North Carolina, which lost 70 killed, among them their superb leader, that Christian gentleman, Colonel Jno. G. Jones, of Person county. The wounding of Wm. T. Gillis, Frank Roberts, James Berry and James McKee, of Company D, Fifty-sixth North Carolina, are recalled as a part of the casualties in this remarkable battle. The prisoners were passed up the line to the right. Soon thereafter, the Captain of the Color Company of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina noticed what seemed (in the night), to be a good portion of the brigade abandoning the works and moving compactly to the rear. Rushing out to them with commands and entreaties, and protesting against immediately giving up what had been gained at such a cost, he discovered that these were the prisoners there consolidated and on the march to the rear. Of course, he did not further interfere with the procession.

Later in the night a Federal officer was found on the captured line, suffering too severely to move, and begging to be sent to the rear; but on being quietly asked if he would not rather take his chances with his own people in the morning, as it was now evident that we were about to be recalled, he with cheerful and very quiet resignation awaited our departure.

Company I secured an equipment of Springfield rifles and



a supply of ammunition. Some of these guns were ornamented on the stocks with carvings of fish, animals, snakes, turtles, etc. They were highly prized and carried by the men to the close of the war. They were carved by the Minnesota Indians, from whom they were here captured.

ALL DAY WITH SPADE AND RIFLE.

18 June. The brigade was withdrawn towards Petersburg by the Baxter road, and after crossing a streamlet, east and in sight of Blanford cemetery, was assigned a position on the crest of the first rising ground, the right resting on the Jerusalem Plank Road. Major John W. Graham covered the movement with a line of skirmishers, composed largely of Company I under its gallant Captain, retiring them in the early dawn, after repulsing an attack by an opposing line of skirmishers. Soon a new line was laid out by the engineer, and with the insufficient tools brought out of the battle of last night, as gathered on the field, the men prepared to receive an assault. The Captain of Company D insisted that his company should be placed further to the front at the brow of the hill so as to command its eastern face.

Assent is about to be given by the engineer in charge, Colonel D. B. Harris, when the enemy are seen constructing a battery out to the left which threatened a partial enfilade of this salient. This objection he met by a proposition to construct traverses against this cross fire, being confident that the enemy could never reach the top of that hill if his men could sight them from the time they began the ascent. The location of a section of artillery (from Pegram's Virginia Battery), already in position immediately to the left of this spot, (to the right of a ravine crossing the line,) doubtless decided the engineer to adhere to his first plan. Momentous consequences and one of the bloodiest battles of the war are to follow this decision. The work proceeded as rapidly as could be with men so long on a constant strain, and now three consecutive nights without sleep, and faring almost as roughly as to rations. Lieutenant-Colonel G. G. Luke, disabled by a severe carbuncle, which is aggravated by this exposure, reluctantly seeks relief at the hands of the sur-



geon in the rear, and Major Graham is left in command, giving his attention specially to the left wing, while the right separated from his by the ravine and the artillery just mentioned, is under Captain Frank N. Roberts, of Company B. This is the third day of the three for which our grand commander, the invincible Lee, has sent us word that we must hold Petersburg for him at all hazards. The question of martial courage would seem to have been already decided; and now comes that of physical endurance. The men work with a will, cracking jokes with their wonted cheerfulness. Meanwhile the legions of Grant are not idle, as we can see them massing in our front, and their artillery has again commenced playing upon us. But for the turn affairs took last night, this new line would have been ready by daylight for the enemy's reception. As it is, we must meet them again while it is barely inhabitable, as nearly every man came off the battle field this morning with an extra gun, while spades and picks are the exception; and considerable time has been consumed in gathering in implements as best we could from the town.

The contour of the ground enables the enemy to form their lines of battle unmolested some 300 yards in our front behind the intervening ridges, while from their redoubts, as fast as completed, they give us a raking fire in different directions. Elliott's South Carolina Brigade is now immediately on our right, with the left resting on a section of Wright's Virginia Battery in the Jerusalem road. They are the first to receive the compliments of the enemy to-day, and get material assistance from the right wing of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina, as our line following the lay of the ground trends from him to the northeast, and thus commands a portion of Elliott's front across the road, as his faces east.

Soon after midday over the ridges just described the enemy to the south of the road is seen advancing in splendid array five columns deep and with perfect alignments. On they come over half the distance, with few shots wasted on them. Now the battle opens in earnest, and they make a dash for Elliott's lines. But in vain. They reel before the well-directed fire of the men who were trying to make every shot tell. The ranks waver, break and rally again, only to



meet a similar reception. A Federal officer, mounted on a beautiful gray, is seen gathering group after group about him upon which to reorganize a line of battle, as he dashed about the field.

The best marksmen in the Fifty-sixth North Carolina successively try to bring him down, and a Captain's shot cuts a small limb just over his head. It was felt that if he went down, the charge was over on that side of the road. But the death of such a man would not only be a loss to his country, but to humanity; and the charge not being renewed, it is a satisfaction even on this side to know that he escaped. Now their artillery seems determined to make our regimental right wing its target in revenge for our deadly cross-fire; but their gunners come in for our best attention, though at such a distance, and their fire materially slackens. But in this cannoneading we lost the commander of our right wing, Captain F. N. Roberts. Faithful to every duty, his genial presence always brought good cheer with it, and no one in the whole brigade was more universally beloved. To every camp-fire he was always a welcome addition.

Company D barely escaped a wholesale slaughter. A shell ricochetting across the field, bounded into the trench; but quick as thought, John Alvis Parker had it upon his spade and hurled it back, with the simple exclamation, "Get out of here." It exploded as it went over. There was no braver deed during the war.

Next the storm shifts to the left of our salient, along the fronts of the left wing of the Fifty-sixth, the Twenty-fifth and the Thirty-fifth. The charge is delivered just as Field's Division, of the Army of Northern Virginia, have come up the line from the left as far as this salient and ravine, and that half of Ransom's Brigade is about to be replaced. They thus find a double line ready for them, though crowded into unfinished works. The commander of the Fifty-sixth, now on the left, says: "At this point the fine array of the troops of Gen. Grant, who had also been sent to the south side of the Appomattox, could be seen; and the old flag floating proudly to the breeze, recalled memories of other days, when covering a united country, and could but extort a feeling of admira-



tion for the men so proudly advancing beneath its folds, as foemen worthy of our steel." But they recoil before the withering fire. The first act in the bloody drama, south of the Jerusalem road, is simply here repeated. This is about 3 p. m., and here this commander, Major John W. Graham, receives a flesh wound through the right arm, retiring him from duty. That portion of Ransom's Brigade is then relieved by Field.

The open ground and ravine necessary to be crossed in passing the artillery at the salient, delay our relief from moving further to the right until darkness shall conceal the movements that there are no sufficient trenches to cover. Meanwhile the enemy is organizing a movement against the other portion of Faison's brigade line held by the Twenty-fourth and the right wing of the Fifty-sixth, from the right on the Jerusalem road back northward to this hill that we were so anxious this morning to render secure against the enemy's investment. Last night they had been routed by a forlorn hope, a single line of battle, that had left its own position vacant and driven them from a captured section. They may now hope to find a weak joint in our harness, if we have practiced a similar strategy to give them the last two bloody repulses to-day. Their troops are rapidly massed now in our immediate front, and rush to cover below us along the run at the foot of the steep hill. Just before sundown they advance up the slope, and it is with difficulty that the ardor of the men to fire at the first view of them is restrained; but they appreciate the order to wait until they can sight the belt-buckle as a target, when one or two well-directed rounds ends the business of the day, and it is thought with greater loss to them than on either our right or left, as this time they have been allowed to come in speaking distance.

Thus the day closes; but at the foot of this salient, the enemy, out of reach of shot and shell, has come to stay, as predicted to the engineer this morning. But more of this hereafter.

In the night Kershaw's Division moved up our lines as we march out under a sharp musketry fire of the enemy,—



doubtless, from the commotion, expecting a counter-charge. We hear this was soon followed by a second charge on our position, only with increased loss. John Clark, of Orange, was credited with having unhorsed a field or general officer in this battle.

In the unique affair of last night, the loss of the gallant Lieutenant, Cornelius Spivey, of Company E, killed on the field, should have been noted. Also that that faithful and intrepid officer, Captain Thomas P. Savilles, of Company A, of Camden, was severely wounded through the arm just as the forward movement began, and immediately reporting to the Captain of Company D that this left his company without an officer, requested that he would lead both companies, as he was knocked out, and must retire. But the present recollection is that upon the suggestion that it would be found pleasanter behind the enemy's guns, than before them, he pushed forward with the first to enter their lines. Any officer might well be proud to command Company A on any occasion. They were mostly young men, laughing in the face of danger, and bearing the fatigues of the campaign with a cheerfulness that was an inspiration to all around them. Captain Savilles was their worthy Captain. Captain Noah H. Hughes, after holding out with a wonderful tenacity, had broken down and died in a Richmond hospital the first of the month. His worth was attested by the affectionate attachment and admiration of such a company.

19 June. The brigade remains in reserve, the Twenty-fourth, Twenty-ninth and Fifty-sixth in bivouac on the Plank road, near the corner of Sycamore street, leading to New Market. We are not beyond the long range of the enemy's rifles, and with little shelter find the sun very oppressive.

A letter of 20 June, 1864, from Sergeant M. Cagle, gave the following additional casualties of Company B in late engagements: "Wounded: Sergeant L. H. Hurst. Corporal Holmes, Henry Usry, Olin Jackson (arm lost), Calvin Culbreth, B. C. Johnson, Joel Hudson (mortally), B. F. Kendrick, E. T. Gardner, Joel Barefoot, and D. Vann. Missing: W. L. Brown, Wm. Bowden, J. D. Blizzard, L. L. Tart and



Furney Wood. Most of the above occurred in the night charge of the 17th instant. The company greatly deplores the loss of Captain F. N. Roberts. He was highly esteemed and greatly beloved by all the regiment."

#### BATTLE OF JONES' HOUSE.

22 June. The Brigade reports to Lieutenant-General A. P. Hill, on the extreme right to the south of the city near the Jones house. He attacks the left flank of the enemy, capturing about 1,600 prisoners, with very small loss on our side, Lane's and Seales' North Carolina Brigades leading the assault, our regiment being in reserve.

23 June. Near the scene of yesterday's action we make a further protest against Grant's perpetual extension by the left flank, and present towards him a line of breastworks running off south from our south front at a right angle and facing east. This completed, Elliott's and Ransom's Brigades return to the east of the city after night.

24 June. At midnight the Brigade moves out again, still under the command of Colonel P. F. Faision, of the Fifty-sixth, and enters the line to the south of the Petersburg & Norfolk Railroad. There is no covered way here, and the movement, liable to draw a fusillade from the enemy at short range, at the least noise, is necessarily executed very slowly over the exposed ground. Thus daylight finds two lines of troops "occupying the same space." There is a gap in the works caused by a stream of water immediately on our left, towards which we are moving. So we remain close neighbors until night shall come again to enable the troops we are relieving to get out quietly. In the progress of the siege, (though the word up to this date may as appropriately be applied to either of the contending armies, each behind strong works and each with its line of supplies still intact), such streams are dammed to form impassable ponds in front of the lines.

25 June. Day is breaking before we are fairly in position. The left of the brigade rests on the Norfolk Railroad. We hear that General Lee, in that spirit of banter with which he would occasionally pay a compliment, says of our suc-



cessful, though unexpected, night charge of the 17th instant, which restored the broken line, and further checked the enemy's advance, that he has had other troops to straggle to the rear, but Ransom's are the first to straggle to the front.

But of more serious import is his declaration, as repeated to us: "I now have General Grant just where I want him." His whole demeanor shows that he is perfectly sincere in this, and the army is inspired by the same buoyant hope. He has seen many of his bravest and best men go down in the last sixty days, but it is well known that the enemy taking the initiative against him in this campaign, have suffered frightfully, and it is thought no exaggeration to estimate the total loss on that side so far as equal to Lee's total effective opposed to him through the long series of bloody engagements from the Wilderness to Petersburg. (Statistics have since fully confirmed this.)

#### PROGRESS OF THE SIEGE.

Lee's line protecting Richmond and Petersburg, facing north, east, south and then east again, now extends considerably over thirty miles. He still has the railways to Weldon, and to Danville intact for supplies, and Virginia and North Carolina have united and completed a connection between Danville and Greensboro, the people of Mecklenburg, North Carolina, contributing the rails of the line but recently laid between Charlotte and Davidson College.

Our first duty now is to make our ditches, that we will in all probability, occupy for some time while awaiting developments, as strong and comfortable as we can. Brush is brought in from the rear to construct booths for shade, and blanket houses are set up and staked by a simple device with horizontal poles on forked posts; the inner facing of the breastworks is strengthened with revetments of timber; the streets and sinks kept thoroughly policed; and safe covered-ways constructed at convenient intervals to avoid the losses incident to a beleaguered line of battle and its communications. We are now becoming familiar with a new engine of destruction, the mortar gun. The name is derived from its



resemblance to the domestic utensil. It is remarkable with what accuracy a shell thrown out at an elevation of from 45 to 75 degrees may be made to come down on a given point. A cannon ball passes so swiftly that it leaves the whistling sound through the air to follow it; but the mortar shell slowly revolving in its descent overhead, aided by the hissing of the fuse, heard first on one side, then on the other, leaves its audience in a state of uncertainty, not to say anxiety, as to which seat the stranger intends to take. To the question addressed to a young Captain by one of his company, "Don't you dread those mortar shells more than anything else?" the reply was made: "No; they are the first things I have yet encountered that a man ought not to be afraid of." "How is that?" "Why, the omnivorous beast is a ventriloquist; you cannot dodge it; and it is a poor philosophy that fears what it cannot avoid."

For days the losses on both sides are considerable from this annoyance. Then bomb proofs are constructed by making perpendicular excavations immediately behind the trenches along covered ways leading to them or beyond; over these square or oblong recesses are laid stout logs; then a bed of leaves; and on that a mound of earth. Gradually sleeping apartments were thus supplied along our whole eastern front, as at any point along this line, battle might be delivered at any time, night or day. The men thus protected began jocosely to treat mortar-shelling as an entertainment; and it was not out of order for veterans to run to cover when the play began. As the siege progressed, unexploded shells and fragments were gathered by our ordnance department, and payment made to the soldiers who brought them in from the field. A whole shell was a prize, and races were made in some instances for them while yet in mid-air, with such exclamations as: "That's mine, I saw it first;" and, "No, you are out of its range; it is coming my way." It might explode in mid-air, or after striking the ground; but that was viewed rather as a matter of disgust than of fear. Mortar guns of proper calibre were specially cast by the Confederates to return some of these shells to the enemy.



## FORT HELL AND MORTAR BED.

Strong forts for heavy ordnance and at points most threatened, especially the salients and on the cavalier lines, are constructed and mounted. Of course this was not the work of a day, nor a week, nor a month, but goes on steadily, one third of the command under arms, the others working by details. Where the distance between the lines will permit, a picket line is established and protected by rifle pits. This is manned each night to prevent a surprise, and the skirmishers withdrawn therefrom at daylight. Near the salient occupied by the portion of Pegram's Virginia Battery, on which the centre of the Fifty-sixth Regiment rested in the battle of 18 June, the enemy have gradually dug in towards our line until they are in speaking distance. Here at the slightest commotion, taken as a demonstration on either side, an incessant musketry fire is begun and continued through the night. The point is called "Fort Hell."

The field where our line crosses the Norfolk Railroad is called "The Mortar Bed," for a similar reason. These missiles are rained upon Colquitt's salient facing Fort Stedman at the crest of the hill, here nearest the railway, and upon the cavalier line immediately behind it. But the daily returns have almost ceased to show casualties from the mortars. There is no difficulty in catching a sight of these shells against a white cloud in the air after the report of the gun, and before they have reached the altitude from which they are to descend; but with a clear sky, the first warning of its vicinity may be the puzzling hiss of the fuse in its descent.

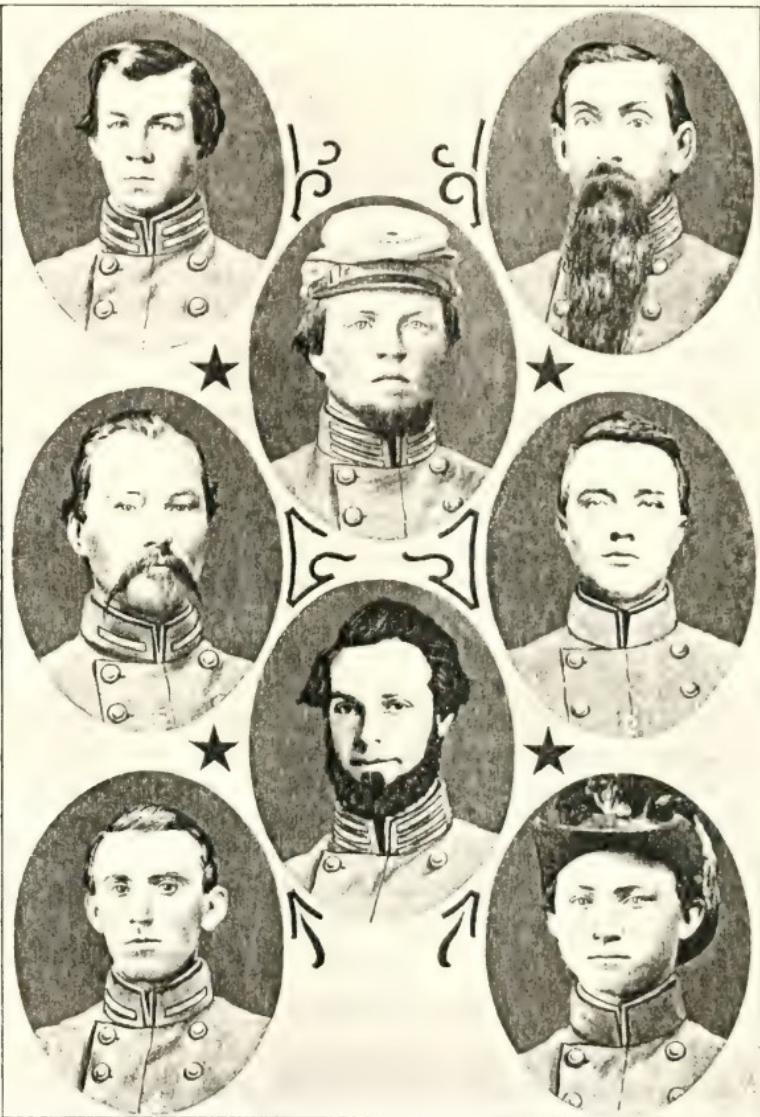
27 June. Wm. Cole died of wounds received in the battle of the 18th instant. He was an exemplary citizen and a good soldier. 4 July, James R. Miller is wounded on the skirmish line guard duty.

22 July. Wm. J. Tinnin is mortally wounded, and dies on the 23d. He had served faithfully as First Sergeant, and in the difficult position of Commissary Sergeant. On this date Thomas C. Scarlett was severely wounded.

## SAPPING AND MINING.

The Army of Northern Virginia, to which Beauregard's





#### FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT.

- |                                      |                                            |
|--------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| 1. T. P. Savilles, Captain, Co. A.   | 5. D. M. McDonald, 2d Lieut., Co. B.       |
| 2. Henry Williams, Private, Co. A.   | 6. Wm. J. McDonald, Private, Co. B.        |
| 3. Frank N. Roberts, Captain, Co. B. | 7. Joseph G. Lockhart, Captain, Co. E.     |
| 4. J. A. King, 2d Lieut., Co. B.     | 8. Jarvis B. Lutterloh, 1st Lieut., Co. E. |
| 9. J. R. B. Walker, Private, Co. B.  | (Picture in Supplementary Group, 4th vol.) |



army has been transferred as the Fourth Corps, under General R. H. Anderson (Longstreet having recovered from his Wilderness wound and returned to his old corps), has now successfully withstood attacks from front, rear, flank, and overhead. Is there any other direction on earth from which the ingenuity of man may hope to approach? No. But there is an untried route under the earth. Early in this month, the enemy began running tunnels from two or three different points to undermine our lines. Our sappers and miners go down into the earth to meet them, and time after time, while Brigade Officer of the Day, has the writer placed his ear to the wall of a tunnel cut beneath Colquitt's salient, sometimes occupied by our brigade, but was unable to distinguish any sound different from the natural roaring experience by closing the ear. All along our line, at points facing practical bases on their side for such underground operations, we were boring for them with our long range augers. These augers were constructed with poles for handles, and on the larger end a fold of sheet iron or steel securely fastened, which with two upright edges lacking, say, two inches of coming together, formed the bit of the chisel. As fast as these filled with the compact earth in digging, they were withdrawn and cleaned out with a bayonet. A depth of twenty-five feet had failed to disclose the modern catacomb. But evidently great expectations are raised over the way, and we must be on the *qui vive*. Three o'clock each morning now finds us in full line of battle, there to remain until the sun is fully up.

#### BATTLE OF THE CRATER.

30 July. Six weeks ago to-day occurred the dispute over the location of the line to defend the first salient at the ravine north of the Jerusalem road, then held by the right centre company of the Fifty-sixth North Carolina State Troops. Meanwhile our brigade has moved one space to the left, replaced by Elliott's. To-day the spot takes its place in history to be remembered long after the disputants shall have been forgotten. At sunrise, as our line of battle was about to break ranks for another day, a dull thud is heard to our right and a



cloud of dust and smoke hides the horizon. This salient has thus become the centre of the Crater at Petersburg. Soon after the lodgment at its foot, to which they had been repulsed, on the 18th ult., the idea of springing a mine here occurred to the enemy (originating with Lieutenant-Colonel Pleasants, a coal miner of Pennsylvania), and now under the complete cover afforded, and with the racket at *Fort Hell*, they have at last effected it. It was to have been exploded while it was yet dark; but the fuse went out and had to be relit. The immediate loss to us is 256 men from the Twenty-second South Carolina Regiment of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade, and the detachment still there from Pegram's Battery. A field piece of ours here carried up by the explosion, falls across the enemy's line, so close are they at this point. The smoke and dust have not cleared away before Colonel L. M. McAfee, in command of Ransom's Brigade, is moving the Twenty-fifth, now on our right under Major W. S. Grady, and the Forty-ninth joining them, under Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, to the first ridge between the Crater and Petersburg, and in a few minutes they are in position to receive any advance in that direction, while the Fifty-sixth, under Captains Lawson Harrill, acting Colonel, and R. D. Graham, acting Lieutenant-Colonel, followed by the Thirty-fifth and Twenty-fourth, deploy in single file, and move up the line to the right to meet any demonstration in their front, contributing by their steady fire materially to hold the enemy in check, while a forlorn hope is being organized for a countercharge. It was sure death for one of them even to start to the rear from this (north) side of the crater. Elliott's fine Brigade, though yielding ground to the avalanche of earth thus thrown against them, are not stampeded, but immediately take position on the south and also facing the crater, similar to McAfee's to the north and west, leaving a gap for the play of our reserve artillery at Blandford Cemetery.

The explosion has made an excavation along our line 170 by 65 feet. The cloud of dust and smoke is seen rolling away against the rising sun; but all is still quiet along Burnside's line. It had been intended that his colored division should lead the assault; but this was countermanded for fear of the



moral effect, if it should prove to them a second Cold Harbor. So Ledlie's Division, the First of Burnside's Corps, led the charge as far as the excavation, into which they all went. They were followed by Potter's Division, piling in on them. Griffin's Brigade of this division climbs to the edge of the Crater, and advances to sweep through the gap in the Confederate line, but are driven back into the hole by our concentrated fire of musketry from right and left, and the eight field guns and mortars facing them from Blandford Cemetery.

Another Brigade of Potter's Division is then brought forward, but does not come over their line. Then Burnside's Third Division, under General Wilcox, rushes out to the Crater, which they now find too full to admit them. A short dash over the intervening space gives them possession of a section of the Confederate line between the Crater and the Jerusalem road. But this emergency had been anticipated, and now from embrasures enfilading this line, Wright's Battery rakes them with grape and canister from left and right, and their only safety is back on the other side of the breastwork.

The three white divisions having effected no permanent lodgment, Burnside now sends in his colored division under General Ferrero. They gain the vacant Confederate line, but not one of Wright's guns, or if so, but for a few minutes. Their punishment is much severer than that received by Wilcox's men; and they are compelled to beat a retreat, leaving many dead, wounded and prisoners in the trenches.

The Eighteenth Corps then comes in, and Turner's Division makes the next advance. Though suffering severely they effect a partial lodgment within our lines behind traverses and in covered ways.

It is now about 2 p. m. While the enemy has made five desperate and distinct ventures to break through the gap, we have only been waiting for General Mahone to bring us a small, but important reinforcement of one brigade to our line of battle from the extreme right at Hatchet's Run, to make a counter-charge. He now arrives, and the forlorn hope, made up for this purpose, consists of the Twenty-fifth and Forty-ninth Regiments of Ransom's North Carolina Brigade, Wright's Georgia Brigade, Gracie's Alabama Brigade, part



of Elliott's South Carolina Brigade, and Wieseger's Virginia Brigade, all under command of Major-General Mahone. The intervening space was raked by the artillery and musketry of the enemy, but a quick dash through the storm of shot and shell restores the line to the right and left of the Crater, from which a white handkerchief is soon hoisted, and the battle is over.

The severest loss to the enemy is in and around the Crater, for into this frightful gap where their troops were massed in great numbers, our mortar guns had been playing for some time, while the surface of the ground was here commanded by the Fifty-sixth and other infantry regiments of the two Carolinas and the artillery. The writer from what he saw during and immediately after the battle, estimated their loss at fully 3,000, and a few days thereafter before making his notes obtained a Northern paper putting the loss at 5,000. Ours, all told, is only about 500, as the distance charged across is very short, and otherwise we have had the advantage of position since their first mad rush was over. Among others we mourn the loss of Major W. S. Grady, our "Rough and Ready," who led the Twenty-fifth, and Lieutenant-Colonel Flemming, who fell at the head of the Forty-ninth. Major Grady's splendid constitution and vitality bore him up for thirty days in spite of his nine severe wounds. The eight field pieces of artillery brought up between this gap and Petersburg, and continuing in this fight to the finish, I was informed, were those of Latham's North Carolina and Ramsay's North Carolina Batteries, while Wright's Battery and the remaining guns of Pegram under those two officers, were served effectively on the disputed line.

Conjointly with this attempt on Petersburg, General Grant has to-day made an equally fierce assault upon Fort Harrison, where he found General Lee in his usual attitude ready to meet him. This had taken every available man from the south side of the James river, so that our only means of checking Burnside's advance, at the Crater, was by reducing the line of battle to a skirmish line on either side of the captured section, and with the surplus thus formed and Malone's addition of one brigade, about one-fifth of the forlorn hope, crush-



ing them before they discovered our weakness. We have been crediting Grant with more courage than generalship. In this instance he has shown both; but at both points he has been met by equal courage and greater skill, and his superior numbers have availed him nothing. The dead lay thicker on this field than any before seen by the writer, and he thinks that the negroes came in with the desperate belief that they were to receive no quarter from their friends in the rear or the foes in their front, and thus continued the struggle after all hope of escape was over. This is inferred from conversation with negroes wounded on the field.

A heavy cavalier line is next constructed in rear of the Crater, despite the continued attentions of the enemy to retard it. Sharpshooting and mortar-shelling go on briskly. Upon our parapets we make loop-holes with sand bags and gabions, and also used blocks of wood with iron facings for the riflemen. Occasionally a man is struck through the little port hole made for his rifle.

#### STATE ELECTION.

The first Thursday in August, 1864, the North Carolina regiments vote in the trenches under fire for Governor. The candidates are the incumbent, Zebulon B. Vance, and William W. Holden, editor of the *North Carolina Standard*. We feel toward Vance that he is one of us, by former comradeship, and his able administration, doing so much for his State troops in the field. So that the vote is overwhelmingly in his favor. The path of public safety lay in keeping our people united to the end, whatever that might be. The credit for this most illustrious part of his whole career he generously divides with his two chief counsellors in his Chapel Hill address on the life of Governor Swain.

#### LIFE IN THE TRENCHES.

Now for days we have incessant rains; great sickness follows, and disease from the exposure is claiming more victims than the missiles of death. The writer finds himself frequently in command of the regiment in the changes thus occasioned, but for a greater portion of the time we are under



Captain Harrill. Captain W. G. Graves was disabled for a time by a shell wound.

Nothing can abate the grim humor of the Confederate soldier. A gentleman appearing on the line in a silk hat was seriously condoled with upon the loss of his cow. Upon replying that he had never owned a cow, he was asked: "Well, then, what are you doing with that churn upon your head in mourning?" A little further on he was requested to contribute that *store pipe* to complete a bomb proof. The healing balm was applied when in sympathetic tones he was told not to mind those fellows; that they were teasing every fool that passed by. But the witticisms of the time, running from grotesque to the pathetic, would make a separate volume. Behind their flashes may be found the *esprit de corps* of the veterans who, in the trenches, faced death almost continuously for ten months.

#### THE TAR HEELS.

The following, familiar to all the Army of Northern Virginia, illustrates the complacent pride with which the North Carolina soldiers adopted the distinctive sobriquet of *Tar Heels*, first banteringly given them. Historians had generally ignored our first steps in the contest with Great Britain and disposed of our later domestic status with the statement that the principal productions of North Carolina are "tar, pitch and turpentine"--which, of excellent quality, are found in about one-fifth the area of the State. Thus after one of the fiercest battles, in which their supporting column was driven from the field and they successfully fought it out alone, in the exchange of the compliments of the occasion the North Carolinians were greeted with the question from the passing derelict regiment: "Any more tar down in the Old North State, boys?" Quick as thought came the answer: "No; not a bit; old Jeff's bought it all up." "Is that so; what is he going to do with it?" was asked. "He is going to put it on you'n's heels to make you stick better in the next fight."

20 August. Ransom's Brigade, under Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, of the Twenty-fourth, Captain R. D. Graham in



command of the Fifty-sixth, marching through Petersburg to the extreme right, reported to Major-General Henry Heth. General Grant, persisting in his left flank movement, is now uncomfortably near the Weldon Railroad.

#### BATTLE AT THE DAVIS HOUSE.

21 August. General Heth moves forward to the assault, with Dearing's Artillery behind us, playing over the woods in our front upon the enemy on the far side. Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, leading the brigade and Captain W. G. Graves, who has just returned after recovering from his wound, acting as Colonel of the Fifty-sixth Regiment, with Captain R. D. Graham acting Lieutenant Colonel. The five regiments move forward in splendid style by company front, with intervals corresponding to regimental strength, across the open field at the Davis house, and just to the east of the Weldon Railroad. At the skirt of the woods each is thrown forward into line on its right company, and the battle opens.

As we drive the enemy's skirmishers before us, their artillery far out in the open field beyond the woods in front and Dearing's from our rear, exchange shots, which pass each other above our heads. Abatis impede our advance; but once through this, the alignment is quickly restored under a galling fire, and the movement is steadily forward again.

And now in face of the foe, who are still doing all the shooting, our line of battle, under the severe punishment it is receiving at short range, staggers and writhes like a monster serpent, mortally wounded, and as if about to snap at every vertebra. A beardless youth shouts: "On with the yell, boys; on with the yell!"

It had been observed that a soldier never turned to the rear with this shout of defiance and victory on his lips, and that its effect was two-fold; subjective, in that it raised to the highest pitch the enthusiasm of the advancing column; and objective, in that it had a correspondingly demoralizing effect upon the line thus assaulted by a foe who assumed victory as already assured to them. It does not fail on this occasion. The old Fifty-sixth, in the centre, responds with a will and volume that the Comanche tribe might have envied;



the deadly aim of the enemy is diverted at random, and the fusillade slackens perceptibly, while the brigade, like a human tornado, rushes over their line.

Lieutenant M. W. Fatherly, commanding Company C, was the first man in from this regiment, and Wm. Bowen, about the same time, the first from Company D. Re-alignment is quickly made, and we rush forward to the next line of the enemy, found dismantled, along the south edge of the woods. It is abandoned before we reach it. Here, while the enemy strongly posted on elevated ground across an open field, are playing on us with shell and canister, we are also now in the deadly range of our own artillery. We send back to ask if the third line is wanted, and are answered: "No; the first line was enough," and are withdrawn to that.

Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, Captain Graves and Lieutenant S. R. Holton, of Company H, Fifty-sixth North Carolina, acting on brigade staff, are among those remembered for conspicuous bravery to-day, but not a man faltered. No casualty list is at hand. The brave Corporal, D. F. A. Sloan, of Mecklenburg, was shot down with the colors, but gallantly supported and rescued by his comrades, P. J. Sossaman and R. J. Stough. Lieutenant H. A. L. Sweezy, always at his post and to-day gallantly leading his company (I), was killed: also Rufus Davis, of the same company, and the ever faithful Lieutenant James A. King, Company B. The brigade, as shown above, is commanded by a Lieutenant-Colonel, and has only two other field officers present for duty. In the night the brigade skirmish line is thrown out under Captain Graham.

22 August. Back to the trenches again, the left of the Brigade resting on the City Point Railroad.

25 August. Major John W. Graham returns to the regiment, having recovered the use of his arm, wounded 18 June near the salient that became the Crater of 30 July. During his absence he had attended the wedding of Colonel John A. Gilmer, of the Twenty-seventh North Carolina, married on crutches with other wounded officers as groomsmen, including Lieutenant-Colonel Jos. C. Webb, also of the Twenty-seventh, and himself.



## SIEGE LIFE CONTINUED.

Quite a contrast to such scenes were the bare trenches, glaring in the summer sun, when dry, and slippery with mud after a rain. Occasionally the sharpshooting, and artillery duels by tacit consent would be off for some days. The renewal of the bloody work would not begin until in perfect good faith the attacking party had given warning by some such cry as, "Rats to your holes." From time to time unofficial interviews in which tobacco, coffee, newspapers, etc., were exchanged, would take place in front of the lines in easy range of the guns of either side. A victory gained by them in any quarter they would announce to us by a fierce salute of half a day or more from shells and mortars, to which courtesy the scarcity of our ammunition did not permit us to reply. Battles to the right, as that at Reams Station, 25 August, 1864, for possession of the railway, or to the left, to find and probe any weak point in our armor, could be distinctly heard.

In September, taking advantage of a very dark night, they rectified their line in our front from the City Point road south to their batteries on Hare's Hill. This change of line was to escape the enfilade from our forts firing across the Appomattox. The writer as Brigade Officer of the Day, pointed this out to Engineer Officer Cohen, and sat by him on the battery at Colquitt's salient until he had drawn a complete diagram of it. Then lifting our hats to a sharpshooter on Hare's Hill, about 300 yards in front, who had complimented us with a half dozen close shots, we retired. That night while still on duty and making his rounds, he was knocked senseless by a bullet on the left of the neck. Fortunately the speed of the ball had been affected materially by striking the ground; and then ricochetting over the breastwork, it was received on the coat collar. Otherwise, instead of a few days suffering, the result would have been immediately fatal. He was at the time the last effective officer left with his company, and as the Fifty-sixth had many others who would have done the same, mention is here made of Company D's next morning report (of 23 September). Under the heading of officers present effective, it read: "1 Captain, if it is a fight; but not



for a march." Such still was the grim determination in Lee's army.

24 September. Beauregard informs us that the enemy are going to open a terrific shelling upon our position, and we must "lie low." This was awaited for some time; but James W. James, going out too soon, was pierced through the chest by a shrapnel shell back at the wagon yard on the west side of Petersburg. He survived this frightful wound until that night. He was a brave and faithful soldier.

About the middle of August, between the Crater and Colquitt's salient, we exploded a mine under a portion of the enemy's line. I think there were no casualties in the Fifty-sixth--again under Captain Harrill. In fact, it amounted to nothing beyond an object lesson.

26 September. B. H. McKee, and 1 October J. F. Brown and Jesse Clark, were wounded in the trenches—all first-class men. It is hoped that some account may yet be had of the casualties of each of the companies of this regiment through the war and a more detailed sketch of their particular experiences. There was a considerable list of casualties among officers and men that I did not note, and cannot now obtain.

1 November. Thus the time wore on, with many incidents, however, that cannot be recalled. At the division inspection now made, the regiment is complimented on its fine military appearance and the general condition of arms and accoutrements. As much could not be said of clothing, for none were indebted to the Quartermaster for an *overdraft*, and no requisition had been honored for some time.

#### INSPECTION BY GENERAL LEE.

But the event of this period is an inspection by General Lee in person. He is neatly attired in regulation gray, but without the general's white buff coat collar and cuffs. A turn-down collar, of the same material as the gray cloth coat, bears three stars; but there is no gold wreath around them, nor a particle of gold lace upon the sleeves, where from cuff to elbow a full dress uniform would have given him four parallel cords through many a twist and turn forming the hiero-



glyptic chevron interpreted to be the initials C. S. A. With the modest suggestion of rank on the collar, he might have been mistaken for a Colonel in his best fatigue suit, if the triplicate arrangement in the two rows of buttons upon the breast were overlooked. His hat is a soft black felt; but in the summer he had been seen along the lines with a white straw. Hair and full beard are both short. Complexion is of a healthy, ruddy hue, indicating a temperate life. He is six feet high and well proportioned. There is a fearless look of self-possession without a trace of arrogance, while the bright, intellectual, sincere, even sympathetic expression of the eye inspires a feeling of confidence and comradeship in which one forgets to note its color. Such is Lee in the zenith of his fame, age 57, in November, 1864. At the outbreak of the war the Confederate Congress had created five officers with the rank of full General. These were appointed in this succession: Samuel Cooper, who continued through the war as Adjutant-General, having just resigned the same position in the United States Army. Albert Sidney Johnston, killed in the battle of Shiloh; Robert E. Lee; Joseph E. Johnston; and P. G. T. Beauregard. Braxton Bragg and Kirby Smith were subsequently given the same rank. Around Lee as around no other, clung the hearts of the soldiers in the field and of the people at home. The Congress voiced the unanimous demand when it raised him to the rank of General-in-Chief. This made the second vacancy in the rank of General, filled as above noted. His General Order No. 1, as Commander-in-Chief, was issued 9 February, 1865.

An incident illustrating General Lee's thoughtfulness of others, occurred just after his passing to the right of the Fifty-sixth. At the exposed point, before noted in Colquitt's salient, he got up and leisurely examined the change in the line that had been reported to him, against the entreating protest of General Gracie, of Alabama, then holding that point, who informed him that more than one man had already been picked off there by sharpshooters. Finally looking around and seeing that he had not been allowed to make this examination alone, he said: "General Gracie, I think you ought









